

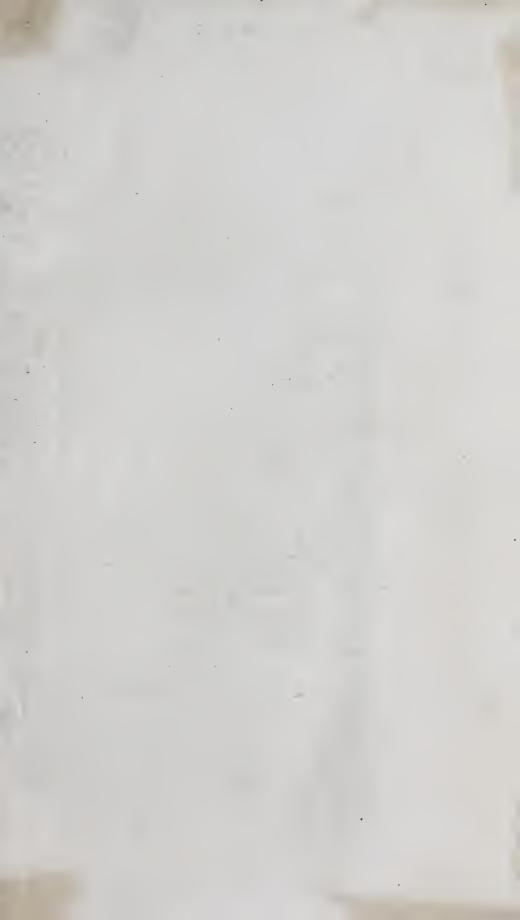
HAR 13 87

> 5R CLASS 942 BOOK Sch 64

VOLUME 1.



PENNSYLVANIA STATE LIBRARY





THEOCRATIC PHILOSOPHY

OF

ENGLISH HISTORY;

BEING AN ATTEMPT TO IMPRESS UPON HISTORY

ITS TRUE GENIUS AND REAL CHARACTER;

AND TO PRESENT IT,

NOT AS A DISJOINTED SERIES OF FACTS,

BUT

AS ONE GRAND WHOLE:

ВY

THE REV. J. D. SCHOMBERG, B. A.,

OF CORPUS CHRISTI COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE.

Late Master of Stoke Grammar School, Leicestershire, & Vicar of Polesworth,
Warwickshire; Author of the Elements of the British Constitution;
Church of England its own Witness, &c.

VOL I.

LONDON:

WHITTAKER AND CO.—R. GROOMBRIDGE.
LEICESTER:—J. G. AND T. C. BROWN, BIBLE AND CROWN,
AND ALL OTHER BOOKSELLERS.

MDCCCXLII.

Displaced by the Limited Authors

10.2023 with funding listin

11. 4 get = 1 side | Signed from the Invitate of Museum and List any Services as administrated by the Pennsylv. Switment of Education (1994) 1.1. It is improved the Listing Services as administrated by the Pennsylv.

CONTENTS.

VOL I.

- Section I., p. 1, 138.—From the Invasion of Julius Cæsar to the end of the reign of Richard II.
- Section II., p. 139.—From the Accession of the House of Lancaster to the death of Richard III.
- Section III., p. 289.—From the union of the Houses of York and Lancaster to the death of Queen Elizabeth.



PREFACE.

THE design of the Author, in the following pages, is so fully opened to the Reader, in the commencement of the work itself, that it would be a repitition to enlarge upon that subject in the Preface. The Author will therefore content himself, with presenting to the Reader, a passage from Blackwood's Magazine, a copy of which was sent to him by a friend, after the first part of the work was ready for the press; and in which, the design of the Author will be found, clearly and remarkably anticipated,

"If the world shall ever become virtuous enough to deserve a development of the actual course of Providence in the affairs of nations, a new light may be thrown on the whole aspect of history.—Events, remote, trivial and obscure, may be found to have been the origin to the greatest

"transactions. A chain of circumstances may be "traceable round the globe, and while the short- "sightedness of the worldly politician deems the "catastrophe complete and closed, its operation "may be but more secretly extending, to envelope "a still larger space, and to explode with a more "dazzling and tremendous ruin*."

This passage might, indeed, have been written for the Preface, and the Author cannot but rejoice to find himself supported, in the view of history which he has adopted, by a Writer, whose powerful and luminous writings, have raised him to the first rank of authors and benefactors to his country.

The title of the work is not so simple as the Author could have wished; but after due consideration, he determined upon its adoption, as the best he could find, briefly, to express the character of his undertaking.

It would be tedious to enumerate the Authors which have been consulted for this work.—Suffice it to say, that the Author is chiefly indebted to

^{*} Blackwood, April 1832, p. 606.

the laborious researches of Archdeacon Echard: and it will only be necessary to observe, that in the following work, will be found every fact essentially connected with the History of England, contained in the voluminous writings of Hall, Grafton, Polydore Virgil, Hollingshead, Speed, Camden, Bacon, &c.

The Author believes he is the first who has attempted this path of moral science, and he has pursued it with satisfaction and delight. The subject has brought him into the more frequent contemplation of the power and goodness of that Blessed Being, who is the source and essence of all moral excellency—the great and "ONLY POTENTATE, THE KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS*."

^{* 1} Epis. Paul to Tim. vi. c. 15 v.



THE THEOCRATIC PHILOSOPHY

OF

ENGLISH HISTORY.

CHAPTER I.

ABORIGINAL BRITONS—CÆSAR—CLAUDIUS—THE EXPULSION OF THE DRUIDS.

IT has always been considered, that nothing is more interesting or instructive to the human mind, I. than the study of those things, which affect the changes of states and empires. But however gratifying to our curiosity the perusal of History may the work. be, yet it never can be attended with any solid advantage, unless we endeavour to connect the events of it in an unbroken series, and to trace them as the results of one great pervading cause. Unless in some measure, we can effect this, we reduce the study of History into a mere registry of facts, and degrade the historian's page

T. CHAP. I.

SECTION to the multifarious chronicle of a newspaper.—We shall perceive nothing in History that connects us with it, but merely recount a number of insulated facts, which are interesting because they are varied. Under such circumstances, History affects us much in the same way as the Drama. The piece opens—the scene changes—new actors appear on the stage—the plot interests us—our feelings are excited, and we leave the representation disturbed and agitated, but not improved. improved, we must think.—We must form some idea of the design of the author; we must dive into the causes of the actions as they pass before us; we must be able to anticipate consequences, as the necessary results of certain causes; and thus, by contemplating the source of action, the mind is improved and the disposition ameliorated. In this view, the Philosophy of History, which searches into the motives and impulses of human actions, is of great importance. This study has been pursued, and by none with greater success, than Robertson, in those paths of History which he has attempted. But without losing sight of this, there is a still higher aim and study in History, namely—to trace the principles of the Divine Government; and to observe how second causes, with all their seeming disorder, unite to carry on the purposes of His BENEVOLENCE.

> The History of our own country will afford ample materials for our research and admiration; and, if

we give ourselves, with attention, to the study of SECTION this portion of the Almighty's works, we shall be more fitted to enter into a review of his universal Chap. I. dominion.

After the lapse of many centuries, during Aboriginal which time, the inhabitants of this island, had Britain. been left to the simple and unbiassed operations of their own nature, happily, a new revolution of circumstances was begun under the auspices of the Roman Empire. When I speak of the simple operations of nature, I mean that there does not appear to have been, during that period, any peculiar interposition of the divine power, to counteract the natural course of events—to correct the deteriorating, or, to give an impulse to the recovering powers of our nature.

The first settlers in Britain, no doubt, arrived under the most unfavorable circumstances. Immediately after the flood, the descendants of Noah began to spread themselves over the earth; and to recede further and further, from the Patriarchal Seat. The Emigrants from every new colony, as they advanced to the Western limit, would be composed of the bold and adventurous; and these, in general, would be the young and inexperienced. The older and wiser would remain stationary. Thus the line of progress would be marked by increasing ignorance; and when they reached the shores of Britain, every trace of primeval knowledge would be lost. We cannot,

SECTION

I.

CHAP. I.

at this point of advance, conceive any thing to exist, save the wildest ignorance and the most ferocious barbarism. Even, the primeval language could no longer remain. Every new emigration would impart a new dialect to the mother-tongue; till at length, degenerating with themselves, it would lose its original character, and take a form, more in unison with their habits and manners.

The knowledge, also, of the true God would long since have been effaced. Aware how little the minds of young persons are impressed with just ideas of God, however diligently inculcated, we shall not consider it matter of surprise, that the younger branches of uncultivated tribes, constantly emigrating to new settlements, should at length, become totally ignorant of the true character of the Supreme Being. Had Noah accompanied them to our shores, it might have been otherwise; or, had an Elder Chief been sent out with each migratory clan, things might have been in a better state; but there were, doubtless, many generations between Noah and the first adventurers, that reached our shores; and these, let it be remembered, were generations of—the thoughtless, the irreligious, and the pro-The only possible conclusion is, that the True God was utterly unknown.

The settlers in Britain must have led, for a series of years, a savage and uncultivated life, till

new stragglers coming over from the Gallic con- SECTION tinent, the country became better peopled; and having no longer power to emigrate, the inhabitants would form themselves into petty governments, which would continue to be better organized as emergences arose. But whilst we are obliged to suppose a probability of improvement in their social state, arising from experience and necessity; yet we can by no train of reasoning, discover a principle of regeneration for the mind. We find, therefore, on opening the page of History, that the rudest and most degrading state of society existed; and, that they were the prey of the deadliest superstition. It is not however my province to detail the facts connected with this assertion. These may be consulted in numerous works. I shall only briefly advert to the source of their religious errors.

Ignorant and debased as we have seen, were the first settlers on the Coast of Britain; yet from the history of our species, it is ascertained that the idea of a superior Being or Beings, is universal. Hence superstition is an easy engrafture on our constitution. The Britons therefore, were ready for any impression of this kind; and it is not impossible that the Phœnicians conveyed to them the germ, if not more, of Druidism; and that the Grecks also, who visited their shores, left behind them some notices of their Gods. was casy enough, to add to what they had thus

I. Снар. І. Спар. І.

SECTION received; and afterwards, to invent Gods of their It is related in some book of travels which I have lately seen, that near the site of the ancient Tyrus, has been discovered a remain resembling Stonehenge; and it would be more probable to suppose, that the rites of that superstition, travelled from thence, where there had been greater opportunities of corrupting religion, than that it should take its rise from Britain; where, it is improbable that there ever was any religion, till it was imported. What makes this still more probable is, that Britain became the head quarters of Druidism, and gave its laws to Europe.—For had it travelled from the Continent, as it has been conjectured, in all probability, its chief seat would have continued there.

> But be this as it may, it does not in the slightest degree affect the argument contained in the following pages: I do not deny the interest of the enquiry, nor its importance—but too long a digression in pursuit of it, would divert me from my principal aim. It is but too obvious, that Druidism with all its inhuman appendages and sanguinary rites, held entire sway over the minds of our devoted ancestors, and rivetted fast upon them, the chains of the most degraded servitude.* such a yoke, it was impossible for the unhappy Britons to rescue themselves. The ministers of this horrid system held unlimited rule: they

^{*} Cæs. Com. de bello Gall.

administered the rites of religion—they instructed SECTION the youth—they directed the affairs of the statethey enacted the laws and punished the offenders. To disclaim their authority was futile: to resist it was death: for they were not only armed with the fullest civil authority; but with the delegated power of the Gods. To be excluded from their sacrifices, was considered the heaviest misfortune: to be exposed to their curse, the deadliest punishment. Under this fatal bondage the Britons had no chance of making advances in civilization and Their cruel oppressors designedly knowledge. kept them in ignorance; and the EVIL POWER glutted himself with human blood and rioted in their destruction. But happily for us their descendants, the day was approaching, when the divine benevolence was to interfere, and to rescue our forefathers from their unhappy thraldom.

Two great events in the history of our Country, are now opening before us—the extirpation of the Druids, and the planting of Christianity-both of which bespeak a Divine hand, and will serve to illustrate the course of his beneficent purposes.— These are the beacons which must now direct our course.

JULIUS CÆSAR, the first Roman that opened First invasion a passage to our shores, and established a footing on our "sea-girt isle," about half a century before the Christian Era, had fallen a victim to the jealousy of his countrymen; and Augustus was now

CHAP. I.

of Britain. B. C. 55.

SECTION
I.
CHAP. I.

saluted Emperor of Rome. Not less magnificent in his projects than his uncle, he left Rome three several times, at the head of his army, with the design of invading Britain; but was as often prevented from putting his design into execution. In our ardent desire for the improvement and happiness of the ancient Britons, we are almost ready to regret the failure of his intention; especially when we call to mind the wisdom, courage and humanity of that great leader. A contempary Poet thus alludes to the circumstance.

.....Præsens divus habebitur Augustus, adjectis Britannis Imperio.* Hor. lib. iii. od. 5.

Notwithstanding, whether we can trace the causes of the divine interference or not, in the detention of Augustus; yet the circumstance itself, seems strongly marked. Probably, the Divine scheme was not yet fully ripe. During the century which elapsed, from the invasion of Julius Cæsar to that of Claudius; there was a constant communication kept up with Rome. The arts of civilization and the knowledge of the sciences, could not fail to reach our shores; and during the latter part of that period, Christianity had become strong in the Roman Empire, and would necessarily, if not by direct mission, yet by varied

^{*} A present Divinity shall Augustus Be reckoned, the Britons being added To the Empire.

intercourse, be imported, together with other SECTION T. improvements.

Снар. І.

The purposes of God often operate slowly, but always beneficially. By the means just alluded to, the fierceness of the British Character would be softened—their attachment to Druidism in some measure, weakened—and an opportunity afforded them of embracing the regenerating scheme of the Gospel.

It is certain that Claudius found the affairs of Emperor Clau-Britain in a very different state from that, in which dius invades Britain. they were left by Cæsar. The nation, for the time, A. D. 45. had made prodigious advances. They were not like the same people. The Druids, however, were in power, and still retained vast hold on the minds of their disciples. Every step was now tending to their overthrow. As long as their rites continued in vigour, it was utterly impossible for the benign influence of Christianity to make its way. This holy religion, had, within a short period, spread itself over the Western Empire; it had even found its way into the palace of the Cæsars, and amongst the soldiers of the Legions; and it was now destined to bless our distant isle; whilst the great bulwark of Satanic influence, was to feel the power of the Roman sword.

In the midst of sublunary changes and moral Suetonius is disorders, the Divine purposes securely advance and exterminato their completion. Claudius is no more; and tes the Druids. the Purple succeeds to the worst of men and of

A. D. 61.

1. CHAP. I.

SECTION princes: but happily, the Province of Britain falls to the lot of a prudent and energetic Governor; who, in order more firmly to secure the Roman Power, resolves upon the extermination of the He foresaw that, as long as these men Druids. maintained their power and influence, there never could be any dependence on the people, or security to the Roman Conquests. He therefore made considerable preparations, and determined on a decisive blow. He attacked the isle of Angesea, which was their chief seat; broke down and destroyed their superstitions; and, in short, utterly exterminated them.

> It was far from the thoughts of Suetonius, that in the execution of this work, he was rendering essential service to TRUTH; and laying the foundation for the future greatness of the British Empire. This was an act of policy in him, suited to the moment. It was intended to meet the present exigency; and nothing could have been more wisely determined. But how fruitful was it in mighty events, of which he had no conception! Christianity, the vital spring of every real and substantial blessing, is to be planted upon the ruins which he occasioned. No doubt, Christianity, which is another name for Truth, would have made its way in opposition to the rites of Druidism, as it did to those of Paganism; but, whoever considers the strong prejudices of the human mind, in support of long favored and reve

renced institutions; and how slowly these preju- SECTION dices are overcome, will perceive how much the course of Christianity would be accelerated by the sudden extinction of the ancient religion. cannot, therefore, at this distance of time, contemplate an event so fraught with blessings to thousands, without the liveliest feelings of gratitude to the Supreme Ruler of events; who, in compassion to the human race, blotted out at once so horrid and detestable a system. We are to remember, that whilst the Divine goodness is seen extending itself, in an undeviating line of beneficence; yet judgements are ever mingled with its advance. A wise law-giver duly apportions his rewards and punishments; and after all the controversies of Theologians on Free will, and Necessity: when we come to facts, we discover this to be the ruling principle, in the economy of the Divine government. With respect to the Druids, whilst their extirpation was desirable for the happiness of mankind, their atrocious deeds rendered them fit subjects of the divine Vengeance. We lament, indeed, the destruction of so many individuals; but we must rejoice in the event, which freed the world from their Superstition; and "justify" the divine conduct in their overthrow.

I. CHAP. I.

CHAPTER II.

AGRICOLA-CHRISTIANITY-PROSPEROUS STATE OF THE CHURCH—HONORED WITH MARTYRDOM—ARIANISM -DISSOLUTENESS OF MANNERS-INVASION OF THE SAXONS.

I. Снар. 11. Roman Conquests.

SECTION GOLDSMITH in his Epitome of English History, has a remark to this effect, that the dominion of the Romans had a tendency to enslave and brutalize the minds of the conquered Provinces. many respects, I am of a very different opinion. The Roman Empire, at that time, was the seat of civilization and the arts; and in spreading their conquests, they scattered with an unsparing hand every good, of which they were in possession. is true, they levied exactions upon the tributary states, but, in return they bestowed more solid Those things, which are called the advantages. gifts of fortune, are utterly contemptible when compared with the gifts of the mind; and, however irksome the tributary states might feel the pecuniary levies of the Romans, yet they were immense gainers in the end: civiliation, agriculture, the arts, and even the sciences, followed in the train of their legions-blessings, even at the

point of the spear. I am not intending to plead SECTION for compulsory methods of instruction, especially, where other means would be effectual. It seems a pity to make a man wise against his will; and yet, who sees not, in how many instances, this is necessary? Barbarous nations, like many children, require coercion. Knowledge with all its concomitants, is disdained by the ignorant. They have no relish for the delights of the understanding, and therefore despise them. Habits of indolence—corrupted morals and a roving spirit, are frightful barriers against improvement, and when to these, is added, the deep-rooted prejudice of a false religion, the difficulty is increased and strengthened. Under such circumstances, to effect any present substantial change, a sudden and decisive blow is necessary. A grand movement must be made, when it is intended to bring about an immediate revolution in manners, in morals, or in prejudices. The more barbarous a nation is, the greater resistance it will make to any inroad on its usages; and, on this very account, the power employed against it, if equal to the task, will become more efficient. It was so with the Britons: they made a long and determined resistance against their invaders; and from that circumstance, received a more signal overthrow. Not that I suppose the Roman usurpation is to be justified from any considerations of utility. In all certainty, the Romans pursued their conquests

Снар. П.

1. Снар. II.

SECTION for their own aggrandisement, without regard to any ulterior benefit; and, that their policy in this respect was selfish and confined, is apparent from the circumstance, that they did not allow the legionary soldier to possess lands; or to settle in the tributary states. Their invasion of Britain, as far as the invaders were concerned, was unjust and oppressive. But there was a Divine Power directing their movements, who had a perfect right to dispose of the Britons as He pleased; and who, through a short chastisement by the Roman power, was preparing for them the most exuberant blessings.

It is an infallible principle in the divine economy, that the wicked are often constituted the sword of the Almighty Governor; and, that whilst left to follow their own unjust and ambitious projects, they work out his sovereign and gracious will. The Roman Invasion, is, in every point of view, a striking instance of this position; and the mighty chain of events which had preceded and has succeeded upon it, manifests in the most indubitable manner, a divine hand. ever, therefore, with an impartial mind, considers the previous state of Britain-the motives which inspired the Romans to invade its shores; and the very peculiar and unpremeditated circumstances, that arose from it, will not fail, with gratitude, to acknowledge the effectual working of the Supreme Being.

After the expulsion of the Druids and a variety SECTION of afflicting incidents, we arrive in the affairs of Britain, at an Epoch, which, though it centres in CHAP. II. an individual, yet is too manifest a link in the series of Providence to be overlooked .- I mean Agricola prethe Lieutenancy of AGRICOLA, a man of con-sides over the summate wisdom, unspotted integrity, and invin-tain. cible courage. He was fitted by the Author of his being, for conducting great and dangerous enterprises; and one of the most critical and difficult was put into his hands. By his courage, he extended the Roman arms to the utmost boundaries of the British Island.—By his integrity, he softened the rigours of victory, and raised the vanguished, with paternal solicitude, from the ground.-By his wisdom, he administered to the wants of the inhabitants: reconciled them to his administration; induced them to forget their ancient habits, and instructed them in the arts of civilization. It is impossible for us to form any proper estimate of the influence he exerted, and of the reforms he established in this Island. Suffice it to say, that the peculiar character of his administration, and the important Era, during which it was exercised, and the almost incredible improvement that attended it, mark incontestibly another step in the Divine procedure. The words of Tacitus, a contemporary historian, will very properly conclude what we have said respecting this great man.

I.
CHAP. II.

"Quicquid ex Agricola amavimus, quidquid "mirati sumus, manet, mansurumque est in animis "hominum in eternitate temporum, famâ rerum.

"Nam multos veterum, velut inglorios et ignobi-

"les, oblivio obruet, Agricola, posteritati narratus

" et traditus, superstes erit." *

Establishment of Christianity.

Whatever may be the fate of insulated facts, with respect to the planting of Christianity in Britain; yet it is undoubted, that soon after the departure of Agricola, that inestimable boon of Heaven, made rapid progress in the island.— Whether or not, Lucius was the first British King that embraced Christianity; or Britain, the first Christian State, it is certain that the Christian religion spread itself wherever the Roman Arms prevailed in Britain. No doubt, Christianity had found its way to us very early. It was impossible, when we consider the constant and uninterrupted communication with the Roman Empire, that the zeal of the Apostolic days would allow the opportunity to pass by, unregarded. No doubt previous to the time of Claudius, and throughout the whole of that troublous period to the time of Agricola, much was attempted and much was accomplished.

^{*} Whatever of Agricola we have loved—whatever we have admired, remains, and by the fame of his deeds, will for ever remain in the minds of men. For dark forgetfulness shall overwhelm many of the ancients, as men undeserving of honor and esteem; but Agricola, spoken of, and handed down to posterity shall still survive.

I. CHAP II.

But the true epocha of Christianity in this country, SECTION must be established in connexion with the latter period; after which time, it seems to have taken deep root—and to have filled the land. The Roman Governors were too much occupied, to interfere with its progress; and for a long term of years it was left unmolested to pursue its benign and heavenly way.

From the time of Agricola to thatof Dioclesian, including a space of about two hundred years, the Emperor of triumphs of Christianity must be considered to have been in progress; and we cannot doubt but that persecutes the many a Briton during that period, through the di-tians. vine consolations of the Gospel, enjoyed "the peace of God which passeth understanding." medium of salvation was proclaimed; and the long benighted hills of Britain, were made vocal with the songs of the redeemed. The Church received enlargement on every side, and like a vigorous and fruitful tree, spread its boughs over the happy land, affording shelter and delight to multitudes. undoubted fact, if there were no others, would be sufficient to substantiate the truth of these enlivening statements. I allude to the circumstance, that during the persecution that raged under the Emperor Dioclesian, and which extended itself to the remotest provinces of the empire, Britain was honored as the scene of MARTYRDOM; and many illustrious British names appear in the records of the Church, who sealed the truth of Chris-

I. CHAP II.

SECTION tianity with their blood.* Brief may be the notices of their lives, and scanty the particulars of their deaths, but the fact is significant. There is sufficient in it to shew, that Christianity had made such progress in Britain, as to excite the jealousy of heathen Rome; and that it possessed so much of the vital spirit of that religion, as to lead its disciples to prefer Martyrdom to Apostacy. Thus, in a short space of time, we behold the idols of superstition banished—the arts of civilization introduced—the doctrines of Christianity promulgated, and Britain evangelized. what shall we attribute this mighty change?

The wide-spread and regenerating influence of the Gospel, was certainly the greatest and most signal advantage that followed the invasion of Cæsar. It is the most prominent event, and the most pregnant with blessing; and, therefore, the steps which preceded it, may be considered as preparatory to its establishment. But did Cæsar contemplate such a result to his enterprise? Claudius, or any of his successors? They were blind instruments in bringing about such a consum-They laboured, for the most part, to gratify their own pride and ambition; but whilst they followed the dictates of their own breasts, their wayward and erring devices were made subservient to the great and comprehensive designs of the Eternal: And what is remarkable, whilst

^{*} Fuller's History.

Снар. II.

we cannot avoid beholding a sovereign hand, con- SECTION straining the general movement, yet there is no apparent constraint, no seeming interruption to the natural order of things. Every event seems to follow in proper order, after that which preceded it. We behold a suitable cause for every effect. Indeed the laws of the moral world appear to be conducted, on the same principle as those of the kingdom of nature. There is no appearance of confusion, none of constraint, none of violence—but every thing operates to its perfection, by slow and imperceptible degrees. Even when an interruption to these general principles is observed, yet the character of their operations is retained.

It is not, indeed, the province of reason to scan too minutely the things of God, or, to speculate on the mode in which the divine influence exerts itself on the affairs of men, but the fact is undoubted. In the case under review, it was not the effect of mere physical action; it was not a series of natural causes that can be supposed to have accomplished it. The planting of Christianity was designed either by God or man:-no simple physical cause could have brought it about.

The determination of Cæsar to invade Britain, was the beginning of the series: -- what connexion had this determination with the establishment of Christianity? None whatever. Cæsar designed nothing of the kind, neither did his successors in

T. CHAP. II.

SECTION that line of circumstances, which followed the first suggestion in the mind of Cæsar; yet, every thing from that moment, prepared the way for it. It would be too absurd to suppose that such an event, involving such important consequences to the sons of men, could have been brought about, without design. The consequence therefore, inevitably follows, that the supreme Father of all, was the designer; and that He conducted every event to its accomplishment. we are bound to adore the power, and to admire the goodness of that "blessed God," who out of the midst of such bitter evils, arising from the corrupt motives—the blind prejudices—the conflicting passions and jarring interests of men, evolved such real and substantial good; and blessed a portion, at least, of mankind, in spite of themselves.—But I must quit this delightful period of our history, to which the sublime prediction of Isaiah is eminently applicable. "The wilderness "and the solitary place shall be glad for them; "and the desert shall rejoice and blossom as the "rose: it shall blossom abundantly and rejoice "with joy and singing: the glory of Lebanon "shall be given unto it; the excellency of Carmel "and Sharon: they shall see the glory of the Lord "and the excellency of our God!"*

Constantine Emperor of

Whether during the reign of Constantine, Christianity received any real accession, is dubious.

^{*} Prophecy of Isaiah ch. xxxv. v. i.

is more probable, that it lost as much in real vi- SECTION tality, as it gained in outward splendour: but before this incorporation with secular power, it had attained to great strength and eminence; and Rome. thirty Bishops are numbered as presiding over the favours Christian Church in Britain. The names of three tianity. who attended the council of Arles, A. D. 314, are still preserved.*

I cannot help in this place remarking, and it can scarcely be considered a digression, that, the important fact, of an Apostolic, independent church, established and perfectly organized, at such an early period, and long before the Bishop of Rome pretended to universal Lordship, is an abundant refutation of the assertion of the Romanists, that the Church of England is schismatic from the Church of Rome. If there were not other sufficient reasons for her separation from that church, yet the undoubted fact which we have just narrated, with others, in the course of history, confirmatory of it, proves that the Church in England existed co-eval with the Church in Rome: and that the Church of England existed prior to the PAPAL Church of Rome. Hence it follows, that when in after ages, the church of Rome took possession of the church in Britain, it was an undue stretch of power; and in every sense, an usurpation. It never can be a crime to break a

^{*} Eborius, Bishop of York, Restitutus, Bishop of London, and Adolphus, Bishop of Colchester.

I. Снар. II.

SECTION tyrannic and oppressive yoke.—At the reformation, this was done, and the Church in this country assumed her ancient independence: and she may be called a Protestant Church, not only because she protests against the innovations of the Romanists in doctrine—but against their usurpation in power. Let this consideration suffice for those, who assert that the church of England is an apostate daughter of the church of Rome. She owns no such alliance: she is older in years than her self-constituted mother; and considers it as a misfortune that she was ever brought under her domination.*

Fatal effects of Arianism.

But to return.—Christianity under Constantine, not only attained security and rest-not only received protection, but enjoyed opulence and ease. Yet these external advantages appear not to have forwarded her real interests. The church became the stepping-stone to power and fame; and the bold and the ambitious pressed into her service; and, in a very short time, the effects of such an unholy combination became apparent. sophy and vain deceit" set themselves to work on the simple and unadulterated materials of Scripture; and quickly perverted its wholesome truths by their idle speculations. Slight at first, and, to all appearance, unimportant errors, were brought in-but error begets error; and at length, that monster was produced, which under the name of Arianism, devoured the vitals of the Church.

^{* &}quot;Church of England its own witness." Rivingtons,

is not my province to enter into the detail of its SECTION devastating progress. It ravaged the whole of 1. CHAP. II. the Western Empire—but its attack on Britain was, perhaps, more fatal and disastrous, than on any other portion of the Church.

The most ancient historians, record, that the Britons were proverbial for their fickleness and inconstancy; a fact which it is to be feared, every succeeding age has aided to verify. Amongst such a varying people, ready to be carried about with "every wind of doctrine"—the deadly heresy made rapid progress; and polluted the land. most shameful profligacy of manners found an entrance with it; and vice, under every form, was tolerated, and even cherished. Our unhappy Countrymen were chastised on the north and west, by the Picts and Scots; who made frequent and cruel incursions amongst them, and the Roman power which had elevated and hitherto defended them, was now struck with the decripitude of age; and being itself attacked by young and vigorous nations, could no longer afford them protection.

Britain was now left to her own resources. But alas! before the last of the legions had quit-relinquish ted her shores, her glory was departed. Christi- Britain. anity had declined under the baneful influence of Arianism. Ichobod was written on her numerous temples. No one arose to check the disorder: no remedy was found to stay the fatal contagion: the clergy and laity together, became degenerate

T. CHAP. II.

SECTION and flagitious; and the whole nation fell into one common ruin. Thus, we have, lately, beheld our country happy in the favour of God; and raised by his providence from the lowest grade of wretchedness, to be exalted with glory; and we shall now be called to contemplate a striking change, to follow the divine judgments, and to enter upon a long and painful period of our history.

under Ella. A. D. 465.

We have seen the end of one invasion, and the purposes of the Divine economy in its permission. Saxon invasion A second invasion is now in preparation, and after a cruel struggle, is at length successful. The Pagan Saxons gain entire possession of the Christian soil of Britain; and whatever remained of Christianity is trodden under foot. Such a calamity as this, cannot be considered as amongst the common vicissitudes of nations. This barbarous people were called in, to aid the Britons against the still more savage tribes of the Picts and Scots. and, from being their auxiliaries, became their conquerors. The Britons were certainly not without experience as it regards the motives and passions of mankind, and yet, we cannot conceive a more infatuated step than their calling in, the aid of the Saxons. Was it to be expected that fierce and warlike nations, possessed of a rough and uncultivated soil, would be willing, after having beheld the fertile plains of Britain, to return to the desolation of their own marshes and forests? Had the Britons been at liberty to reason upon the subject, and to act upon SECTION the result of their deliberations, they would have rejected at once the thought of such an alliance. But strong necessity lay upon them—a necessity, it must be granted, of their own making; and in the midst of conflicting evils, they, undoubtedly, chose that which they considered the least. why not rely upon their own resources and defend themselves against the Picts and Scots, without applying for foreign aid? This was the only sure and effectual measure. But unfortunately, at that juncture their resources were gone. Not however, in the way, which is supposed by the generality of our historians, who consider, that the Britons had become weak and effeminate, by their long subjection to the Romans. It is true that the arts of peace had been cultivated by them to a great extent; but these surely, have not, in themselves, a tendency, essentially to deteriorate the character. The individual who cultivates peaceful and industrious arts may not, at all times, be so prepared for the conflict, as the man who lives by his sword; yet, surely, on an emergency, the powers of the man who lives by the fruits of his skill and industry, are capable of resuscitation equal to the occasion. Besides, Britain was not so studiously engaged in domestic pursuits, as not to have abundance of warriors. For a long period, prior to the retirement of the Romans, Britain had been the most active and turbulent of the Provinces.

CHAP. II.

I.

SECTION It was situated at a considerable distance from the seat of Empire, and was on that account, a suita-CHAP. II. ble arena for the attempts of the aspiring and ambitious; and accordingly, not a few of the governors of Britain usurped the title of Emperor. this means the island was drained of its youth and nobility, and on two occasions, particularly towards the conclusion of the Roman occupation, vast numbers attended the usurping Emperors to the Continent, and perished together with their commanders.* Thus, the country was devoid of its natural defenders; and like a mother deprived of her proper children, she was compelled to seek her protection from the hands of strangers.

> We behold in this resolve of the Britons to apply to the Saxons for relief, a people urged by imperative circumstances to lay the foundation for their own destruction. They certainly did not intend such a catastrophe. The step however to which they had recourse, manifestly had a tendency to lead to it.—But they thought otherwise; and considered it as the only means of their safety. But there was a divine Power, who had important designs to answer in connexion with his universal government; and the perplexities and resolution of the Britons led the way for their accomplishment. They had been elevated in the scale of being, and gifted with the most exalted privileges; and we behold the first of these

^{*} Marcus, Gratian and Constantine.

CHAP. II.

blessings, despised; and the latter, profanely SECTION trifled with.* They are now to be punished: and their own infatuated conduct prepares the way. The Ruler of the world allows them to take their own course, and where they intended escape—He prepares a snare; where they contemplated deliverance He determines captivity.

The punishment of nations, with Him, is as easy as that of individuals; and whilst all his acts are benevolence, he will not permit vice and folly to escape punishment. Nay, the very act of punishment, is part of the plan of his universal beneficence. Vice and misery are inseparable. And where an excess of the former prevails—the sum of unhappiness is so much increased, and the harmony of the divine economy disordered. therefore necessary for the general good, that the vicious should be punished. But in the midst of judgment, the Almighty God remembers mercy; and with the chastisement combines a vivifying principle of good. We shall no doubt find it as we proceed. "Who would not fear thee, O King of Nations! for to thee doth it appertain; forasmuch as, among all the wise men of the nations, and in all their kingdoms there is none like unto Thee."†

^{*} The deadly heresy of Arianism, sprung from Arius a Presbyter of Alexandria, in the fourth century. He taught that the Son of God was the first of created Beings and essentially distinct from the Father; and that the Holy Ghost was created by the Son.

⁺ Prophecy of Jeremiah, ch. x. v: 7.

CHAPTER III.

THE SAXON HEPTARCHY—ITS PERFECTION—ITS CLINE AND OVERTHROW BY THE DANES.

SECTION T. CHAP. III.

For the space of one hundred years, during which time the Saxon Heptarchy was in a state of formation, there is not a single object upon which the eye can rest with satisfaction. We read of nothing but wars, and jealousies, and massacres.— It was only towards the conclusion of this period, when one of the states became predominant, and its king the chief of the nations, that we can perceive the dawn of better things.

revives.

A. D. 570.

Christianity, which, we know from experience, Christianity conveys with itself every other blessing, began to revive, and to shed its healing influence over the barbarous people. A distinguished female was destined to give it introduction to the court. Bertha, the daughter of the king of France, became Queen of Ethelbert king of Kent, and chief monarch of England, on the condition, that she might be allowed the free exercise of the Christian religion.

The pagan king of Saxon England accepted the SECTION conditions; and there can be no doubt, but that she exercised a wholesome controll over his mind; and that Lethard the Bishop who accompanied her, allowed no opportunity to escape, of speaking a word in season to the noblemen who surrounded the king.

There is reason also to conclude, that the remnant of Christianity amongst the enslaved Britons, scattered throughout the Saxon states, together with the labours and preaching of several British divines,* produced, in many instances, vital and lasting effects; and it is certain, that into Scotland, the exiled Britons conveyed the truths of the Gospel, which spread a salutary influence over that land; and we find they became a highly Christian nation, independent of the prominent means, which led to that result in England.

We shall not enter into an examination of the causes, which led that excellent person, Gregory, Romish religiarchdeacon of Rome, to turn his benevolent attention to this country.—He considered Christianity, as it undoubtedly is, the greatest boon on earth, without which, even life itself can scarcely be esteemed a blessing; and he determined himself to be its herald to the barbarous shore of Britain.— In the fulfilment of this design, however, he was prevented—the citizens of Rome would not submit to the loss of their beloved Pastor: a distinguished

on introduced.

^{*} Church of England its own Witness.

I. CHAP. III.

SECTION testimony to the character of Gregory! Every person knows, that at length, this Christian embassy was sent by Gregory under the conduct of Austin, with many fellow labourers, They commenced their expedition under great dejection of mind, and with many painful forebodings. the illustrious Bertha had prepared the way.—Austin and his companions were welcomed by the King, who, soon after, was baptized. This public approval of their errand, and the great reputation of the missionaries themselves, acted with electric power; and vast numbers flocked to the baptism of Christianity. Austin's conferences with the British Bishops who resided in the western parts of the island, are not, in their results, favourable to his memory; and their rejection of his offers respecting a conformity with the church of Rome on certain points, is well known.* Christianity, however, made rapid progress through the country, and the hand of Providence is strongly marked by the circumstance, that the dominant kings of the Island, successively as they arose, became christians; among whom Edwin, and Oswy, and Oswald were pre-eminent

What will serve to shew the extent to which the Christian religion had spread in Scotland, before the arrival of Austin, is the circumstance of a general council+ having been held of English and Scotch Bishops, during the reign of Oswy; in

^{*} Fuller, in loc. + A. D. 664

which, the Scotch held a difference of opinion on SECTION those points, which marked their conformity with the ancient British church, still existing, as we Chap. III. have said, in the West of England.

This period must also be marked as the revival University of of learning, and the founding of the University of founded, Cambridge. The arts and sciences were happily A. D. 640. introduced by Theodore a learned presbyter of Greece, who had been appointed Archbishop of Canterbury by the Pope,

The era of the eighth century was the crisis of Kingdom of the Saxon Heptarchy and the height of its advan-England, Egbert, cement—in the commencement of the ninth, the kingdom was united by Egbert under one sovereign. The accounts of this period are very imperfect; and are rendered still more unsatisfactory by the death of the venerable historian Beda, which happened in the beginning of the eighth century. There was a stern grandeur and noble magnificence about these times, of which, at this moment, we can form no idea. The moral scenery of the age was of a dark and sublime character.-It wore the giant forms of our nature; and the virtues and vices of the human mind were deeply marked and strongly contrasted.

But we search in vain for the true spirit of the Christianity gospel of Christ—that spirit, no doubt, since its fearfully degenerates. first promulgation amongst the Saxons, had existed, and influenced vast numbers; but it was now almost extinct. Indeed the nature of its second

I. CHAP. III.

SECTION establishment had this tendency; it involved the principle of decay. It began in a system of pomp and shew; and these, throughout its progress, generated their unhallowed forms, on the simple principles of the gospel. The Missionaries under Austin, had the appearance of meek and humble men; but, in the discharge of their religious functions, they were all that haughtiness and assumption of sole delegation, which has ever marked the church of Rome. Their pretensions were lofty, their demands exorbitant and their perseverance unvielding. Success attended their exertions. They brought the truth, but not the unadulterated truth. The gold was alloyed with dross. wine, mixed with water. The effects were such as might be expected from an imperfect exhibition of the gospel, deeply tainted with the succeeding corruptions of the Romish Church.

The Romish Religion in great prosperity.

The church at the period of which I am now speaking, was endowed and enriched beyond all example. Churches and monasteries covered the land. Religion had become encumbered with observances.—Its ground-work was lost. Every thing was external. It was a body without a soul. build a church or a monastery was to save the Founder. From this time a rapid declension is observed. And we shall find that the very prosperity of their religion, gradually worked the overthrow of the nation itself. Monks and Nuns, as a necessary consequence, became the

most prevalent class of society. The greatest SECTION honour, and the most acceptable service of Kings and Queens, was to retire into the shades, and submit to the discipline of the monastery. may in some measure, judge of the extent to which this was carried. from the circumstance, that during the period of the Saxon reign, THIRTY TWO crowned heads retired into these desecrated asylums: but these kingly monks left nothing behind them of that world which they professed to abandon, except the name. It was a dreadful system. might not, it did not appear such, to the actors in the scene. It was no doubt suited to the temper of the times.—But to us, who can calmly trace all these events and their remote consequences, the evils of the system appear prodigious. monastic houses became the abodes of rioting and debauchery; and whilst the outward form of religion was sustained, the most degrading appetites of our nature were indulged and fostered. Religion was made the sanction of the most detestable abominations; and the spell of its accumulated services, dissolved, as if by magic, the bulwarks of conscience. To such an extent of evil was the whole religious system of England carried -that tidings of its corruption at length reached the ears of the Roman Pontiff, who addressed a letter to England, for the purpose of staying the torrent of monastic depravity.—But in vain. It was now a mountain cataract; and every barrier

Снар. III.

I. CHAP. III.

The Danes raised up to punish their impiety.

SECTION which obstructed its progress, only tended to increase its violence. It rolled its deadly waters over the whole country, and inundated the land.

> To stay the course of this fatal corruption was now beyond the reach of mortal power; and the patient and long-suffering vengeance of heaven was beginning to awake. The Danish hordes appeared on the coasts of the degenerate island, and ready with a merciless hand to execute the design of their mission The rapacity of the Danes was excited by the well known riches of the Monasteries; and against these their chief attack was directed. This was as might be expected.—The source of their depravity, was the ground of their overthrow, and their very prosperity became their ruin. The destruction of this class of religionists, appears to have been tremendous. Thousands and tens of thousands of them fell a sacrifice to the devastations and fury of the Danes. The alarm of the whole nation was excessive and beyond example; and we are told by the historians of that day, that all orders of the state felt, that the inroads of the Pagans was a divine chastisement for their sins; and we shall here have an opportunity of forming an estimate of the state of their religion.

A synod was held, composed of the King and the chief Nobility, to consult on the best means of averting the judgements of God .--After deliberation, as the likeliest method that could be devised, it was determined, that vast additions should be made to the revenues and privi- SECTION leges of the Church. Infatuate blindness!-The very evil which had brought them to the brink of destruction, is to be armed with additional power! Was this the best expedient of their Christianity? It was the abjection of the most valuable and essential principles of that revelation, and serves to shew, how long and inveterate prejudices blind the understanding. Why did they not think of repenting of their crimes; forsaking their sins, and supplicating for pardon, through the medium of the Christian atonement? Had they been familiar with its doctrines, this is the course they would have pursued.—But they knew them not. doctrines themselves were in existence; but they were so encumbered, so overgrown with vows and alms and penances and absolutions and purgatories, that they were lost to all practical benefit. Nor is it possible to conceive, how they could be discovered amidst such manifold inventions of men. I would not deal in harsh expressions against those who fastened the chains, or those upon whom they were rivetted. The whole system was the work of human nature. From my very soul I pity them; that when the means of safety and happiness was in their hands they could not avail themselves of As might have been foreseen, such an unreasonable mode of procedure, for a propitiatory offering, had no effect in staying the retributory judgments of God. The deluge of massacre and

T. CHAP. III.

SECTION blood-shed advanced, till every thing that opposed its progress was overwhelmed. The religious houses were nearly EXTIRPATED, and the lives that were sacrificed, were countless as the falling leaves in Autumn.

Era of Alfred. A. D. 872.

The infliction was long and lingering, and did not reach its crisis till the reign of the renowned For a time, the whole country was given up to the cruel rapacity of the invaders; and they exercised their domination with the most unheard of barbarity. It is impossible to form an idea of the deep distress into which the unhappy people were plunged. Every circumstance of their case had a tendency to increase their misery. They were tyrannised over by a merciless enemy, who so far from feeling any commiseration for them in their sufferings, rejoiced in their calamities—made them to serve their most licentious passions, and slew them without ceremony whenever they resisted their will.

It now appeared as if the extinction of our Saxon forefathers was at hand; and, as if the measure which they had measured to the ancient Britons, was about to be retributed upon them: but happily, when the condition of the kingdom was reduced to the utmost extremity and its very existence trembled in the balance, it pleased the Almighty disposer of events, by a sudden and unforeseen change of affairs to afford them a longer day; and thus to discover, that his hand was in

I. CHAP. III.

the chastisement. A second Agricola was raised SECTION up for the regeneration of the fallen land, in the person of one of the most extraordinary men that ever lived.—A person endowed by heaven with astonishing powers of mind, and gifted with almost miraculous wisdom. His vigour of mind was unwearied—his moral power pre-eminent, and his devotional spirit unprecedented. When all seemed to be lost and the contest was given up in despair: when the Danes were triumphing over their conquest, and rioting amidst the desolations they had made—it was at that juncture, that Alfred the first anointed King of England, retrieved his country's honour. His arm nerved by an unseen Power, and his counsels directed by a supernatural wisdom, brought back the triumph to his native Saxon England once more, came out from land. the clouds and darkness that surrounded her; and promised again to become a great and mighty nation.

Nothing can be more convincing than the evidence of the Divine interference, in this sudden ted Land rescued by Alfred. and beneficial change of the affairs of the kingdom. Every thing was lost; and there was no human probability of a political renovation. The circumstances of the juncture, on the one hand-the character of the foe-the extent of the devastations: and on the other hand, the completeness of the restoration, and the character of the man raised up to be the restorer-all, all testify the hand of a superior power. At this very day we can

I. CHAP. III.

SECTION retrace the laws and institutions of Alfred. influence had been so great, that we may safely concede to him the character of a divinely-gifted He established amongst us whatever was worthy of transmission, among the Saxon antiquities; and laid the foundation of the institutions of a country, destined to fill an ample sphere in the after economy of Providence. If ever a state or a man deserved the name of EXEMPLAR, that man was Alfred—that state is England. During the period in which the Danes triumphed over England, almost all traces of learning were lost.—Alfred was its restorer, and he himself was the brightest example of a student. From this time, the country took a rapid rise; and although still troubled by the Danes, yet their attempts caused but a healthy excitement throughout the Land.

Era of Edgar A. D. 95. Great prosperity and glory.

In the succeeding reigns, England rose to an unexampled height of prosperity and glory; and in the days of Edgar, Anno Domini 959, was laid the foundation of our maritime superiority.— The accounts of our naval power at this period are almost incredible. Its establishment at first, was intended by Egbert, to form a defence against the future incursions of the Danes; but by Providence (as we can now see) to establish a nation of maritime vigour to promote His purposes on the deep .-So remote is the foundation of our naval glory! -But our Saxon line of progeniture had well nigh completed its course; and notwithstanding, the

splendid reigns of Athelstan and Edgar, a morbid SECTION disease was preying upon the vitals of the country, and hastening its dissolution,

Снар. III.

Traces of

It is melancholy to consider, that its great forerunning cause, must again be shewn to rest with the Ecclesiastics. It might almost seem as if one laid the blame upon them, out of despite and malice: but it is not so .- These things are their own showing; for they were the Chroniclers of the time. They had long since recovered from the ravages of the Danes; and risen to still greater heights of opulence and splendor. Their lust and pride, their arts and avarice devoured the good of the land; and as we shall soon see brought it again to desolation.

It was in the reign of Edwy, Anno Domini 965, to which we must again revert, that a deed was wrought, which was made by the Moral Governor of the world, in a very striking manner, to work its own retribution. Whatever was the fault of the king in his attachment to Elgiva—there was no person in the kingdom, but Archbishop Dunstan, who had the presumption and daring to enter into the king's chamber, and by the force of his single arm, sustained by the power of the Church's anathema, drag the King like a criminal, into the festive hall. Such an act could only be excusable, on the ground of great christian faithfulness, and disinterested patriotism: but even this, could have justified nothing beyond honest

SECTION and humble admonitions on the part of the minister of peace. But it will be answered, that such CHAP. III. a mildness of manner, was not to be expected in the temper of the times, Of that I am well aware. But why was it not? The Christian principles of courteousness and humility, were the same at every period of its benign course; and if these were not exercised, it only discovers that its true influence was unknown. But not to use harsh expressions, or indulge in unnecessary vituperation, it is abundantly evident from this, in conjunction with his other acts, that Dunstan was unacquainted with the true spirit of that holy religion,-elated with pride and inveterately possessed with an overweening idea of his prelatical dignity.

> This moral wrong committed by Dunstan, was followed, as is usually the case in human affairs, by another in the King. Instigated by a sense of his own wounded honour, and that of the other individuals whose privacy had been so openly violated; he conceived a rooted aversion to the whole family of the monks, of whom Saint Dunstan was chief; and commenced a persecution against them, which ended in their expulsion from many of their establishments, into which the secular clergy were immediately introduced: altercations of the most violent nature between the two parties succeeded, in which Dunstan took a leading part in favour of his own order. He was banished; but was recalled in the succeeding reign, by Edgar; whose

1. CHAP. III.

gorgeous reign was but the departing glory of the SECTION Saxons. From him the crown descended to less nobler brows, and the sceptre to weaker hands. I should not have mentioned these facts, but for the purpose of introducing another, upon which turns, in a great measure, the overthrow of that line of monarchy.

On his return, Dunstan laboured for the elevation of his order; and, after many alleged miracles in his favour (amongst which was the voice from the Crucifix) in the reign of Edward the younger he gained his every wish, and the land was again prostrate at the feet of superstition: but a dreadful tempest was gathering over the fated isle; and the Almighty avenger again sent his scourge in the persons of the relentless Danes.

Pusillanimity* had made its way to the throne by murder. Superstition held in chains, the un-invasion of the derstanding and consciences of men. Pride and A.D. avarice, usurped the place of humility and charity. Ignorance, and degradation, and cruelty, and murder, in hideous train, stalked through the land; and the whole country sinking into a moral desolation, offered a fatal opportunity to the inroads of their ancient oppressors.—They came: but the dwindled spirit of the age rose not to the occasion, The weapon they used was gold, and the Danes were bribed to retire. This cowardly

^{*} Ethelred II. who succeeded to the throne on the murder of his half brother, Edward the younger.

I.

SECTION art was used, again and again, till it became inefficient; and then, treachery tried her skill.—The CHAP. III., result of her counsels was a GENERAL MASSACRE OF THE INCORPORATED DANES.* Alas! what could such a degenerated nation expect? From this time, the affairs of the nation were most disastrous.—Sweyn, king of Denmark, determined upon revenge, and a furious revenge he took .--Famine followed his track. Even the sea broke its boundaries and overwhelmed multitudes of the people, whose miseries every hour increased; and the land was completely subjugated under the hand of Sweyn. On his death, an ineffectual struggle was made under Edmund, a brave and valiant Prince, for the recovery of their liberties; the struggle was ineffectual because when every order of the state, was ready to meet the emergency, the overgrown and nourished Monastics refused their quota of assistance; and such was the vast power and the wealth they had accumulated, that their refusal was a decisive blow. Their Country was lost. The sinews of resistance were unequal to the occasion, and after a brave and varied struggle, a foreign King, Canute the Son of Sweyn, was acknowledged by the fallen land. "Verily, there is a GOD that JUDGETH THE EARTH."

^{*} Anno Domini, 1002.

CHAPTER IV.

SOVEREIGNTY OF THE DANES-RESTORATION OF THE SAXON LINE-THE NORMAN LINE IN WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR-WILLIAM II. HENRY I. STEPHEN.

THE reign of Canute brings us to an epoch in SECTION English History: but this era of Danish superiority does not appear to be marked with any striking or important results. Canute, himself, was The Danish a man of splendid abilities; and by the activity short duration. of his body and mind, gave a vast impulse to the A. D. 1017. energies of the nation; and gathered up the strength of the country, which had run to waste under the last of the Saxon kings. He repressed and coerced, in some measure, the looseness of the age; and endeavoured, by every means in his power, to bring back a moral tone to the minds of his people. But notwithstanding all his efforts, bloodshed and rapine and immorality, still continued to harrass the fainting land; and under

I.

T. CHAP. IV.

SECTION his two sons who succeeded him, things returned to their former course, and an entire dissoluteness of manners and government prevailed.

> On reviewing this period, we are somewhat strongly brought to the conclusion, that the contest which had been carried on for two hundred years, between the Danes and the English; and which had been attended with so much misery and bloodshed, was intended by all-ruling heaven as a chastisement, on an immoral and licentious people. We find no striking or beneficial change, introduced by the Danes, which could have any influence on the future destinies of the nation: but we do perceive, that no sooner is the contest concluded and the contending parties united in one body, than the instruments are laid aside and their dominion broken. And further, the Danes were more barbarous than the English; and even more dissolute and licentious in their morals.— Their amalgamation therefore with the body of the people, if moral perfection be essential to the Divine character, and the measure of his acts, could only tend to increase the evil, for which they had been so long under the chastening rod of the Supreme Governor.

Restoration of the Saxon line.

The Danish reign therefore, was short, and a few years, not more than twenty-six, saw a reversion in favour of the ancient Saxon line, in the person of Edward* the Confessor. We shall find

^{*} Son of Ethelred the grandson of EDGAR.

this to be a remarkable event, in every respect. SECTION Edward was a prince of consummate ability; and laid his plans with such prudence and wisdom, that they gradually and silently worked the most salutary changes. His reign was a season of beneficial repose and internal organization, after the toils and disorders of centuries; and was preparing material, on a grand scale, for future operations. Edward was educated in that school,* from whence the English nation was afterward to be regenerated; and every thing in his reign, tended to facilitate its advance.—He was the forerunner of that regeneration; and every act he did, serves to point out his DESIGNATION. He employed himself, with unremitting diligence, in reviewing all the ancient institutions and laws; and with indescribable patience, gave a form and character to all that was worth preserving from our Saxon forefathers. In him, as it were, their departed spirits were embodied, and himself the last of their race, he prepared with all solemnity, to collect and hand down to posterity, the memorial of their departed greatness. His position at this time, was truly singular; and he cannot but be considered as specially raised up, to be the connecting link between the periods of our ancient and modern history. He stands prominently forward as a commanding figure in the interval; and as the solemn apotheosis of his Saxon ancestry.

* In the Court of Normandy.

CHAP. IV.

SECTION T. CHAP. IV.

During this precursory interval, the Author of Society, was, by a long train of circumstances, laying the foundation of a change of system, which was to give a lasting stamp to the character of the English Nation, and an impulse, which should raise it to an EXEMPLAR STATE amongst the nations of the world.

Rise and character of Wilqueror.

The instrument that was destined to conduct liam the con- this revolution, was receiving his preparation amongst a people, and amidst scenes wonderfully calculated to promote his fitness for the task. This individual was no other than William, Duke of Normandy; left an orphan at the early age of nine years; and in the government of a people, the most brave and best instituted, but from particular circumstances, ever living amidst storms and contentions. For thirty-four years he held the reins of government in his own patrimony, with a firm hand; and supported his authority in the most successful manner, against the encroachments of his haughty nobles, on the one side, and the unceasing efforts of neighbouring states, on the other.

> He was of a high and elevated understanding, with a mind well formed and passions well regulated.—He was patient of toil and fatigue.—Prudent in council.—Brave in the field.—Generous, persevering, and unbending. Whilst he pursued his enemies with the most unrelenting vigour, he never turned a deaf ear to the supplications of an

adversary. He collected in himself all the mighty SECTION passions of man, I mean those which are most nearly allied to his spiritual part-pride, ambi-In the pursuit of tion, daring, and revenge. these his mind was entirely absorbed, and he was in a great measure a stranger to the more brutish appetites. With these passions, in a singular manner he united the humane virtues of prudence, generosity, and forgiveness of injuries; and all were further chastised, by a strict attention to the duties of religion, and apparently, with a high regard for the dictates of the Supreme being.

This was the man destined in Providence to hold the English sceptre; and to lay the foundation of its greatness. His accession to this eminence of power, is one of those striking events in the history of things which carries its own testimony along with it. Who, at the accession of Canute, to whom there were three Sons, could have presumed upon the probability of such an event? Who, at the accession even of Edward, when the duke of Normandy was only a few years old, could have suggested the thought? It is true that, Edward favoured Norman customs and institutions; but why, should he therefore favor, and be the means eventually of placing the crown on the head of William duke of Normandy? In fact he did not contemplate it. It did not enter into his serious thoughts, till the death of Edward,

I. CHAP. IV. CHAP. IV.

SECTION the son of Edmund Ironside,* upon whom it was his intention to devolve the Crown. And, when this person died there was his son, Edgar Atheling remaining: and why was he not chosen?-He was of the ancient line; and the legal heir to the throne: and rule by inheritance was the great law of the succession. It is alleged by historians that he was considered by Edward, incapable of conducting the great affairs of government. He was therefore rejected.—And there is every reason, from the well known character of Edward, to believe that this decision was arrived at, in strict accordance with the wisest dictates of reason, and from an inflexible regard to justice in the disposal of the Crown.+ But there was still another person of English extraction, of vast influence and of great qualities both of body and mind.— This was Harold, son of the once all-powerful Godwin, and, what might have turned the balance in his favour, he was in the highest favour with the whole nation; and with the consent of that nation he aspired to the throne.—And why was he rejected? If in the former instance, we

* Third son of Ethelred.

[†] Edward was living in Hungary at the accession of Edward the Confessor and was recalled by him, but died soon after his return to England. The necessity of the times justified the King and the nation in afterwards rejecting his Son Edgar Atheling. This is only an instance of the power which has always been vested in the King and Parliament, on justifiable grounds, to alter the descent of the crown.

give Edward credit for sincerity, we must on this SECTION occasion, blame him for giving way to a retaliating spirit. Edward could not deny the fitness, CHAP IV. of Harold, but he entertained an unconquerable dislike to the son, from the memory of his father's ambitious acts. This was the sole turning point in Harold's rejection; and thus we see, that against every appearance of propriety, the Duke of Normandy was preferred. But it was a happy decision for England. Harold was not the proper man.-He would have been too much to the mind of the English-too much of their own stamp.-He would have indulged and flattered the prevailing vices of the times. He would have gone with the stream; and infused no moral vigour into the system. The church unchecked, would have continued to pursue its arbitrary and licentious course—the nobles flattered, would have indulged their rapacity and cruelty; and the common people unrestrained, would have retained their ignorance and licentiousness.—So that as far as we can perceive, things would have proceeded in the same loose and unsatisfactory manner, which they had done, gradually verging to an entire decay. But it seemed good to the All-beneficent disposer of human events, to overrule every obstacle; and through his instrument William of Normandy, to expurgate the evils of the land; and to resuscitate its dying powers.-Not only did Edward decide in favour of William; but singularly

I.

Continent, was driven, devious of his intended course, and became an inmate, very much against his will, of the court of William. William acquainted him with the will of Edward in his favor; and obliged Harold solemnly to swear, that he would by every means in his power, expedite his accession to the English throne.

His oath, however, as we know, was afterwards disregarded; and he made every preparation for securing that throne to himself. And on the death of Edward he succeeded to it with the concurrence of the people.—But the breast of William was undaunted. The way to the throne had been opened to him; and although another occupied it, he considered it his right, and determined to claim it. All the vigour of his soul was put into the execution of his design; and he set out from Normandy, filled with the enthusiasm of his object, and with the fullest reliance, as he avowed, on the DIVINE ASSISTANCE. He viewed himself under the immediate protection of Heaven.—Yet it was no fanatic enthusiasm.—It was what all great souls under similar circumstances had experienced. There was no rashness connected with this impression—His preparations were on the most extensive scale; and nothing was wanting that wisdom and prudence could suggest to secure success. Harold his competitor was equally brave, and greatly superior in num-

I. CHAP. IV.

bers; but his men were more careless and undis- SECTION ciplined; they had moreover been thrown off their guard, by a recent victory which they had obtained over the Swedes under Sweyn, who had made a diversion in favour of William on the Eastern Coast.

Never was an earthly crown more bravely contested. From sun-rise to sun-set, everything that valour and conduct could do, Harold accomplished. More than once, the scales of victory seemed to declare for him, but were as often turned; till, at length, while he was bravely leading on his men, an arrow penetrated his brain; and life and hope expired together. One is apt to regret that an Englishman so brave, endued with so many virtues, and so beloved by his subjects, should be overthrown by a foreign hand, and his country once more subjugated to a foreign sway.-But the true love of one's country, and the manifest interposition of the ever watchful and benevolent power of Heaven still every murmur, overcome every regret, and lead us to rejoice in the happy accomplishment of those benign purposes, which against a nation's will, were pregnant with blessings.

Never did a loftier mind enter on a more diffi- William the cult task than William I. in attempting the re-Conqueror reformation of England. The laws were prostrate A.D. 1066. under the feet of crime. Religion was defaced by the pride, and rapacity, and flagitiousness of its

CHAP. IV.

SECTION professors. Learning expired amidst the feuds and contentions of the powerful, and the vassalage of the poor. Vice triumphed, and virtue languished. Under such appalling circumstances, who would not have hesitated to enter upon the work of reformation? Most men would have thought it a hazardous, if not an impossible task. But William undertook it as a matter of duty, as the very cause for which he had been sent; and every thing soon began to feel the power with which his arm was nerved.—All ranks in the state felt its restraining influence. Himself a man of moral habits, he was enabled, without hypocrisy, to admonish the mightiest; and by strict and unrelenting vigour in the execution of the laws, he punished and restrained the corrupted body of the people. He was eminently the MIN-ISTER OF GOD, executing vengeance on the lawless and disobedient .- But long accustomed to rebel, it was not probable, that they would quietly submit to such rigorous measures as this great moral reformer thought necessary to impose.-The nobles conspired, and were subdued and pardoned, again and again. Ever blind to their true interest; and preferring a lawless independence to the good and prosperity of their country, they broke down every restraint of oath and allegiance, and infatuated to their ruin, endeavoured to rid themselves of one, whom they regarded as a tyrannical MASTER.—But in vain.—In spite of the

greatest moderation on the part of the conqueror, SECTION in spite of the greatest readiness on his side to conciliate and serve them; by their continued folly and perverseness, they brought on themselves " swift destruction." After many ineffectual struggles, the ranks of the English nobles were so thinned, that scarcely a distinguished family of the ancient order remained. One cannot but lament such an effusion of human blood; but when we recollect that they were their own destroyers--proud, turbulent, vicious, and too stubborn to be reformed, we cannot but perceive that their destruction was ultimately for the benefit of their country.

The celebrated curfew bell, which has been stigmatized by some writers, as the record of our servitude, is, in truth, the memorial of our RES-The necessity for such a measure TORATION. must convey to the mind that allows itself to think, the fact of a nation on the brink of a moral dissolution. What a disorderly, turbulent and vexatious population must that have been, which could not be trusted out of their houses, after that early hour, nor even in their houses, with light sufficient to do mischief! Indeed the historic page confirms it .- But to be brief :- William conquered every obstacle. His persevering and undeviating policy triumphed.—For whilst at the beginning of his reign, dishonesty and fraud; rapine and murder; rapes and adulteries were so

CHAP. IV.

CHAP. IV.

SECTION common, as to have become the almost necessary cementives of the social existence—in a few years , such a change was effected, that it is said by a writer of that day, that a virgin, with a purse of gold, might have travelled from one end of the land to the other without danger to her purse or her person.*

> The writers who have viewed William the Conqueror as a tyrant, have certainly mistaken his character. His achievements were not like the acts of a tyrant. He considered England as his own; and would have nourished it like a father, had the refractory children allowed him. all, he was the greatest benefactor Eng-LAND EVER HAD; and was signally advanced to his high station to be the founder of its glories.— Every part of the state gained his attention. church, which was as corrupt as the nobility, did not escape his severest censures and punishment. The ecclesiastics were ignorant, and vicious, and presumptuous, and rapacious. general synod in which he openly complained of their enormities, was followed, under its authority, by the ejection of many of the bishops; a course which he pursued till he had sufficiently purified that order. It has been alleged, that he acted in this manner from rapacious motives;—for the purpose of rewarding his friends with the vacant bishoprics. This never could have been his

^{*} Ech. Hist. p. 65.

I. CHAP. IV.

motive: it would have been inconsistent with the SECTION whole train of his conduct and policy: but however this may be, we may be thankful he did so. His Norman friends were BETTER MEN. They were men of superior morals, and learning, and piety; they adorned their high station and improved the state. The higher orders both in church and state, were almost entirely renewed. old material was unfit to build up an EXEMPLAR STATE; and was therefore rejected by the great Architect of Society. These were prodigious efforts, and productive of incalculable benefit to the rising State.

But the unwearied mind of William, rested not

at arranging and perfecting every institution necessary for the well-being of the body politic. The laws of the Saxons which had been compiled by Alfred, and translated by Edward into Latin, he published in the Norman tongue. He greatly improved, and in some measure new-modelled the courts of law; and introduced the Norman method of process and pleading. He established the great courts at Westminster; and armed them with irresistible authority. He introduced the courts of Equity, as the seats of experimental Judicature, and enacted laws for the regulation of agreements

the most solid and splendid form of Judicature in the world. It has out-lived every change of

In short, he gave to this Country

and writings.

Reformation in what he had already accomplished; but aimed of the Laws.

I. personal liberty, the fruits of our industry, and the fullest enjoyment of our social rights.

This period has been called the conquest; but with much greater propriety it might be called the RENOVATION of England. When I began to read our history more extensively, with a view to the present work, I was surprised to find the common error under which I had been labouring, with respect to the character of William and the acts of his Government. He certainly seemed to think of nothing, but the improvement of the Country he was called to govern. This was his earnest aim, from the very first moment in which he landed on its shores. It was then, that he commanded his soldiers to spare their own; and whatever power and influence he derived from his accession to the throne, he used for the advantage of the people. His native patrimony was forgotten amidst his desires for the welfare of his adopted country.-And though the English exclaimed against his partiality for the Normans, in disposing of places of trust-yet it is evident that such favours, were morally just and necessary, for the great purpose of ameliorating the condition of the country, With what indefatigable exertion he pursued this end! He did not seek his own ease or personal gratification. His very magnificence was to do honor to the land he loved.

CHAP. IV.

When we consider the difficulties and almost SECTION impossibilities, which seemed to oppose his advancement to the supreme authority of Englandwhen we contemplate the disposition with which he entered upon that government—when we reflect upon the extraordinary and lasting reformations which he introduced; and withal, the striking manner in which every difficulty was removed, and his triumphant progress to the completion of his labours, secured; we are compelled to acknowledge the hand of the Most High, who ruleth in the affairs of men. Every thing in this mighty Revolution, was conducted against the will of the nation. The means of the Duke of Normandy were limitted, and in no measure equal in themselves, to resist its united will. Power of EVIL would not effect it, for every change was for a beneficent end. It was the work of God, and is "marvellous in our eyes." William, no doubt, was inspired with ambition and the love of martial glory; and in all he did, he indulged his predominant passion.—But amidst all this, we see a power pervading and controlling this natural bias, and conducting it to beneficent results, fraught with momentous consequences to the human race.

We need not dwell long, on the reigns of his Successors of two sons. They were links in the same chain.-William who succeeded him, inherited the undaunted courage of his father; but was destitute

T. CHAP. IV.

SECTION of his virtues: and whilst he held the reins of government and of the laws, with a firm hand, his destitution of moral character, gave an unfortunate impulse to the immorality of the people.— So inevitably is the conduct of princes followed by their subjects; and so easily are the worst passions of our nature encouraged by the fostering influence of bad example.

> But William lived not to do much mischief. His younger brother Henry, who succeeded him. inherited all his father; and in the manifestation of the most splendid abilities, carried on the state in the line marked out by his great progenitor.— He held the sceptre with a vigorous hand, and with wisdom and prudence, administered the laws, restrained the pride of the barons, and kept in check, the usurpations of the church.—We cannot help observing, during this splendid period of our monarchy, the events which led to the exclusion of Robert, the eldest son of the Conqueror, from the throne. His title was without dispute-his ambition of a crown, quite as strong as either of his brothers: and what is more, he had the advantage of popular favor on his side. But every thing was overruled, beyond precedent, to exclude him from the seat of authority: and with the history of the times before us, there is no difficulty in unravelling the cause or the Author. Robert's bad management of his own patrimony—his romantic valour-his profuse habits, and his excessive

indolence in the affairs of Government, all testify SECTION what a disastrous thing it would have been for J. CHAP IV. England, had he succeeded to the sovereign power.

Without attributing to the Conqueror the gifts of prophecy; when on his dying bed he declared that the youngest son, would far exceed his brethren in power and dignity; his penetrating mind no doubt, perceived the pre-eminent genius, that animated the bosom of Henry. Every thing pointed him out as the future King. There was in him a peculiar adaptation of mind to the office; and his elevation to the dignity was facilitated by means, throughout, that marked the will of Heaven. Robert was laid aside as a "despised broken vessel," and Henry was raised up as the honored instrument, in carrying on the designs of God, with respect to the empire of Britain.

The next, is a calamitous page in our history, Signal punbrought on by the perjuries and inordinate selfish-ishment of the Nation. ness of the people. Stephen who now appears upon the stage, was not much more of a usurper, than the demised Henry. He was a younger branch of the family. But Henry foreseeing the evils of a contested succession; had during his life, taken precautions for securing the peace of the realm by demanding and obtaining from his subjects the oaths of fealty in favour of his daughter Matilda. Let it also be remembered that she was the heiress to his throne; and as such, was solemnly recognized by all the leading men, in

Ĭ. CHAP. IV.

SECTION church and state. The course of duty therefore was clear. But she was a woman; and the proud spirit of the Norman barons, pretended that they could not submit to a woman's rule. But they had other motives. The nobles and clergy hoped to obtain from a prince, whose title was not clear, some indulgence from the rigorous restraints of his predecessors. Indeed they knew they might stipulate for what they pleased, inasmuch as without them, Stephen stood no chance of securing his claim. They were not modest; and Stephen was compliant; and the innumerable evils, which during a short period, this selfish, and perjured, and vaccillating conduct brought upon the nation, were unprecedented. The church and nobility assumed an entire independence; in consequence, a thousand petty kings started up in Britain and turned their power against their compliant Sovereign.

> The King of Scotland was in arms in order to oppose his claim. The Welsh were inflamed Normandy refused submission. against him. Matilda preferred her claim. Stephen who inherited all the vigour and valour of the family, He was like a wild boar surwas resolute. rounded by the multitude of the hunters. ed from all sides, he neither feared, nor gave up the contest; and after a variety of reverses and successes in which a profusion of blood was spilt, he held the crown to the last, and would fain

CHAP. IV.

have secured it to his son. But his hopes were SECTION vain; the son of Matilda was at hand, with all the impetuosity of his grandfather, determined to assert his claim; and, happily, as far as we can discover, Eustace the son of Stephen is excluded. Stephen himself appears to have inherited almost every princely virtue; and might have made England happy. But the just Ruler of affairs, would not suffer the proud and selfish conduct of the nation, to pass unchastised; and they were severely punished in the civil dissensions and bloodshed of the reign. It was evident that the contest was neither for the glory of Matilda, nor Stephen. Matilda was unfit to govern, and Stephen was only reserving the throne for the Son of his rival; and to which, an unseen hand was steadily conducting him, amidst the just punishments of the nation.

CHAPTER V.

UNION OF THE SAXON AND NORMAN LINE IN HENRY
II. THE FIRST OF THE PLANTAGENETS—RICHARD I.
—JOHN—AND HENRY III.

I.
CHAP. V.
Henry II.
A. D. 1155.

On opening the history of this reign, we are not disappointed in the expectations which had been formed respecting the character and abilities of the great Prince who succeeded to the throne. Some of our historians have observed, that the English people had been so dispirited and broken down, by their intestine troubles during the preceding reign, that they had neither power nor courage to resist the pretensions of Henry. But this was far from being the case. There was no disposition to resist. He was expected and hailed by the people as their future Sovereign; and it must not be overlooked, that he united in himself,

CHAP. V.

the Saxon and Norman lines of our regal ancestry.* SECTION The country felt that he was their destined king, and as soon as he planted his foot on the English shore, as if by magic, all its discordant elements were hushed; and order and justice resumed their legitimate functions in the state. Such, indeed was the effect, that many of the unquiet and vicious amongst the citizens, when they found they could no longer work their evil deeds with impunity, retired from the country, and sought a more congenial clime.

But notwithstanding the transcendent abilities Henry impeof Henry one is not a little surprised, in finding so ded in his measures by the little accomplished by him in furthering the ad-Church. vance of England, in her great career. We shall probably meet with the cause; and I wish it were any other than that, to which we have so often before called the reader's attention. It is manifest, that no prince ever set out with better intentions, or more vigorous acts; and it is reasonable to suppose, that had he met with no check, he would have conferred signal benefits on his country. But unfortunately, he was grievously discouraged

^{*} He was lineally descended from Edmund Ironside; whose son Edward, was in Hungary on the accession of Edward the Confessor, and left beside Edgar Atheling, who died without issue, a daughter Margaret, who afterwards married Malcolm King of Scotland, by whom she had a daughter Maude, who became Queen of England by her marriage with Henry I. son of the Conqueror. Their daughter Matilda or Maude was married to the Emperor of Germany-Henry II. was their son.

Снар. V.

SECTION in the very outset, by a power which had been strengthening itself, during the confusion of the two preceding reigns, and had now increased its power to an enormous extent. One circumstance will tend to discover, by what rapid strides the Papal authority was at this period advancing to the height of its aggrandisement. Henry had taken up arms against Lewis king of France; and they were on the point of engaging in a bloody contest; when Pope Alexander offered himself as umpire in the dispute. The offer was accepted by the contending powers; and on their reconciliation, these two mighty Potentates conducted the mightier Pontiff to his abode; walking on each side of his horse, and performing the office of yeomen of the stirrup.

> The gradual and formidable rise of the Pontifical power, would be an interesting enquiry; but it is not within our present purpose, further than as it affects the History of England. It was this power, stretching its mighty arms over the western limits of Europe, that impeded the wishes, and frustrated the designs of Henry the second for the good of his Country. He strove like a wise Ruler to regulate the civil affairs of his kingdom, and above all things, to secure for all his subjects the impartial administration of Justice; but in every attempt, he was opposed and baffled by this all-dominant power. It would lead me too far from my design, to enter into the detail of the

CHAP. V.

dispute between the King and the celebrated SECTION Becket, Archbishop of Canterbury. It must however be alluded to.—It is related that after the accession of Henry, and within a brief space of time, not fewer than ONE HUNDRED MURDERS had been committed by Ecclesiastics; and when it is remembered, that the trial of such delinquents and the award of their punishment, were entirely in the hands of their own order, it is reasonable to suppose that such crimes were perpetrated with almost perfect impunity.—And so the fact was. The King, on the other hand, was determined that all crimes whatever whether committed by Ecclesiastics or not, should be tried in his courts and take the due course of law. This was the subject in dispute. The church resisted any alteration of this nature as an encroachment on its rights. There were other articles, which the King insisted upon in the Constitutions of Clarendon,* all which were resisted by Becket. to the death.

The circumstances of this long tragedy are well known.—It is with the result that we have to do. The struggle was intense with interest; and in its issue momentous. It was a struggle on the part

^{*} The points in those ordinances were particularly these:
1. That none should appeal to the See of Rome, in any cause whatever, without the King's consent.
2. That it should not be lawful for any Archbishop or Bishop to attend the Pope on his Summons, without the King's licence. 3. That all criminal clerks, should be tried before secular Judges, &c.

I. CHAP. V.

SECTION of Henry for political liberty; nay, for political existence. And we cannot but perceive, when such great matters were at stake, how immense that power must have been, against which one of the wisest and most valiant of Monarchs contended in vain-In vain: for, before the death of Becket, the King was wearied out with the strength and pertinacity of the resistance; and after his death, although he attained in some degree, the accomplishment of his wishes; yet, in real authority he gained nothing. The humiliations imposed upon him by the Pope, for being the cause of Becket's death, were excessive; and to the whole, Henry was obliged to submit. What can we then conclude respecting this affair, but that the King lost, and the church gained in power by the event? When we see the Sovereign content to endure the most degrading penance—giving his back to the unsparing lashes of the Monks, and walking barefoot to the consecrated tomb of Becket, what must be our judgement on the issue of the contest?— The day was lost; and under the mightiest Monarch, the Papal power laid the deep foundation of its despotism in our devoted country; which in a subsequent and not very distant reign, raised its mitred head, far above the fabric of the But this was the hour of the Romish State! church.

It will be quite unnecessary for me to dwell on Civil Wars; their cause. the unnatural wars of this reign, excited by the King's own family, especially as I can trace no SECTION great national events in connexion with them .-They appear to me to have been a personal chastisement on the monarch himself, for his conjugal infidelity and licentious amours. If the righteous Governor of the earth awards his punishments to offending nations, let it not be vainly imagined, that he overlooks the offences of individuals. we search for them, we shall find the one as well as the other, pervading His universal Government. Such transactions however must have had a baneful influence on the nation; and have been productive of much moral mischief to the community. Another thing which had a tendency to nourish the slumbering elements of moral evil, was the very frequent absence of the King from his dominions: a circumstance which rendered his reign short, though, nominally, long; and prevented much that might have been done for the advance of the country. Yet we have to notice, that at the beginning of his reign, he instituted a council to assist in the affairs of government, in which also there was the distinction of a more private or Cabinet Council; no doubt, the substratum of our present executive arrangement. A grand movement, when considered in all its bearings, on our Constitutional Polity.

He instituted also and appointed the circuits for the periodical administration of justice nearly as they now exist: and in his judicial proceedings, SECTION

1.
CHAP. V.

brought into exercise the trial by Jury. But if it should still excite surprise, that the State of England made but slight advances, under such a magnificent leader; let it be remembered, that we are now confining ourselves to a review of the history of England; and that if we were to extend our remarks to other countries, we should doubtless find that Henry II. as he was raised up under particular circumstances, was destined to accomplish peculiar ends. We shall add a few words to shew nearly the certainty of this fact.

In the commencement of his reign he reduced Wales under his authority—cut down its woods opened its hitherto impassable ways, and made it easily accessible from the western limit of England. This, no doubt, was the commencement of a NEW ERA for that Country. But he accomplished a still greater work in the subjugation of Ireland. That Country was in a state somewhat resembling England at the worst period of the Saxon Heptarchy. The Country was wild-the manners of the inhabitants barbarous—their Kings many, martial, and tyrannical. Henry subdued it—gave it a vigorous organization—placed the people under equal and impartial laws; and made an opening for all the improvements in arts and learning which were known in England. In short he was the Agricola of Ireland, and their true Saint Patrick.

In general he was a great man; and a signal instrument in the hand of the Supreme Governor,

I. Снар. V.

for coercing and restraining the bad, and encour- SECTION aging the good.—But he was not a good man.— He curbed the licentiousness of others; but he was licentious himself—he exercised a firm sway over his subjects-but he was not the master of his own passions. He was victorious over every thing but himself; and this self-degradation, tarnished all his glory. It is not our province to enter into the detail of his vices; suffice it to say, that he was severely punished in the rebellion of his two children, and felt the chastening hand of the high and lofty One who had raised him up.

In his old age the King was utterly rejected and cast off; dying far from home under the most painful circumstances of grief and vexation. How apposite is that declaration of Holy Writ-" Thus saith JEHOVAH: Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might: let not the rich man glory in his riches. But let him that glorieth, glory in this -that he understandeth and knoweth ME."

The next period that opens is one of uncommon brilliancy; and full of the most splendid scenery; succeeds to the Throne. —a kind of interlude in the great historical A. D. 1190. Drama. Were we pursuing our enquiry into the moral character of the Crusades, we should no doubt find that Richard the Lion-hearted, who performed such prodigies of valour in Palestine, was eminently fitted for carrying into effect some of the designs of the Almighty in that part of the

Снар. V.

SECTION world. In this romantic enterprise the King was swallowed up. All his capacities of body and mind, were expended upon it, and for his own country he did nothing. So far from it, that his prodigal expenditure, his rigorous exactions, his unjust indulgences; and his venal sales of office, laid the foundation for innumerable evils. long absence from home, and by placing the whole authority of Government in the hands of the dignified Clergy, he nourished and increased that power, which had been so strongly resisted by his father, to an intolerable extent: and by excessive indulgence to the common people, he brought upon the nation, the most grievous trou-All order was relaxed; and whilst murders and robberies were of daily occurrence, London itself was the scene of unheard-of disorders. was strangely overrun with banditti, who robbed and murdered the passengers in open day!

I consider this one of the most disastrous reigns that England had ever yet seen. Whatever effect the crusade accomplished elsewhere, its influence was most deleterious at home. We know not the worst of the state of things at that time, but it may justly be inferred from what we do know, that London must have been in a state of almost universal disorder and exposed to the most What can we deduce otherwise wanton pillage. from the fact, that when one of the ringleaders a ruffian of most audacious character, was brought

CHAP. V.

before the chief Justiciary of the Realm, on the SECTION most heinous charges—that public officer dared not to follow the course of the law against the audacious offender because of the number and violence of his attendants? But do we not in this behold a moral retribution on the inhabitants of the Jews. the Metropolis, for the daring outrage they had committed in the beginning of this reign on the unoffending people of the Jews? In the most cruel and unrelenting manner, they began and carried on, an undistinguished massacre against that unhappy race; and glutted themselves with blood and plunder. In this disgraceful act, they wilfully outraged and violated the voice of humanity and the law of. God: and they were themselves made to feel the direful effects of such unrighteous violations. I close this page of history and open another of vast import; on the contents of which we have been in the habit, generally, of entertaining very prejudiced views.

There is no book that has had a greater ascendancy in the work of education, than Goldsmith's succeeds his History of England. From that source, the wri- brother. ter of these pages drew his earliest knowledge of that subject—a knowledge, which he has since found to be as erroneous as defective. It is time that something equally brief, but more full and accurate, should be put into the hands of the rising generation. The record of John's reign contained in that book, is truly hideous, and pre-

I. CHAP. V.

SECTION sents us throughout, with the idea of a mean and pusillanimous being, reduced by his own weakness to the lowest grade of human kind. But nothing can be further from the truth. John was as high spirited, as brave, and as resolute, as the best of his family. Not that I am intending to be the panegyrist of King John. I have a nobler object in view—to trace the progress of the social system of England to its present state of eminence.—But in doing this, the King becomes necessarily, a very prominent personage; and the instrument, one way or other, of giving an impulse to its destinies. We shall, therefore, endeavour to do him Justice; and it is of consequence in setting out, to free our minds from prejudice; and to consider him neither as a coward nor a fool.

> The doctrine of representation in regal inheritance, was not, at this time, so thoroughly understood as at present; and was even less regarded in England, than on the Continent. Arthur duke of Bretagne, the Son of John's elder brother, was on this, which is the true constitutional principle, the true heir to the Crown; and had he lived in this age, would undoubtedly have succeeded to it. But the people of England, at that day, seem never to have thought about him; and John was always recognized as their future King.*

^{*} In the time of his Father Henry II. it was a point undetermined whether even in common inheritances the child of an elder brother should succeed to the land, in right of representation, or the younger surviving brother in right of proximity of blood.

ever the passing by of Arthur was a pretext for SECTION the ambitious Philip of France; and enabled him to distract the affairs of England by setting up the rival claim of Arthur. Not that he was sincere in attaching himself to the interest of Arthur: but was intending by a deep-laid scheme of policy, at the expense of both parties, to secure his own aggrandisement. We must not however follow him. John, as was always the case when vigorously supported by his subjects, was superior in the contest; and in the issue, Arthur was taken prisoner. He might have been happy had he been less ambitious. His death soon followed upon his captivity; and John has been accused of his murder. There is not sufficient moral rectitude manifest in the practical conduct of the King to warrant us in saying, that he could not commit such an action; and the evidence is by far too vague and conflicting, to justify us in pronouncing him guilty The tribunal of the Eternal will pronounce a just award. By the death of Arthur he was delivered from a rival to his crown, but it still sat uneasy on his brow; and he was made to suffer as the unnatural opposer of his father, and the ungrateful impugner of his brother the most bitter and cruel griefs.

One circumstance which will tend to shew the temper of the times, with respect to the Church, descrycs to be narrated and remembered, because great things are about to be transacted, which are

I.

CHAP. V.

SECTION laid to the charge of the King's pusillanimity; whereas, in truth, they were the almost necessary consequences of the existing state of things.

Power and splendour of the Church.

In the midst of the splendid solemnities of a treaty of alliance, between John and the King of Scotland, it is related, that the King in order to mingle religious things with temporal, resolved on making an offering on the altar of the Cathedral From this he was dissuaded, on the of Lincoln. ground of certain superstitious opinions. But the King disregarding these vain objections, undauntedly entered the Cathedral; and presented a golden chalice on Saint John's altar: which thing we are told, no King before him dared to do. Whilst this was transacting, the arrival of the corpse of the Bishop of Lincoln at the gates of the City, was announced, and the regal train went forth to meet it; and to shew their respect and humility, the two Kings and their allies, bore the coffin on their shoulders, and by them it was delivered to the great Peers, who conveyed it to the doors of the Cathedral. Little did John know the bitter cup which the head of that church was preparing for him! It was on the occasion of filling up the vacancy occasioned by the death of this very prelate, that the Pope began his opposition to the King, and insisted on the exemption of the Church from regal authority. Nor was this an empty boast, as the King of England was soon to experience!

The great object which is now before us, is the SECTION MAGNA CHARTA. I see nothing in the second war with France, but a petty contention; and can find no great political event connected with it: Establishment of Magna except it may be, that the discontent raised by the Charta. necessary exactions for carrying it on, led in some measure, to the great event of the reign. Neither do I see much to hang upon the whole affair of John's quarrel with the Pope, except indeed the open and ostentatious display of that authority, which was already in itself pre-eminently dominant. The result discovered the presumption and insolence, the "cunning craft" and pride of that power-but did not discover the pusillanimity of John. He resisted, as we shall see, the aggression as resolutely and forcibly as his father Henry had done, and appeared to possess even a more persevering moral courage: but he would have been more than mortal, had he continued longer to resist all the horrors of so long an interdict .-Let us briefly review the facts of the case. Monks of Canterbury, without the King's consent, had chosen a vain and ignorant person as Archbishop, and sent him to Rome for consecration. They are afterwards prevailed upon by the King, to elect another, more to the royal mind. A contention now arises between the rival candidates; and the matter is debated at great length, before the Pope. After a tedious negociation, the decision of the Pope is to recognize neither; and with-

SECTION

I.

CHAP. V.

out consulting the wishes of any party, he appoints and consecrates one of his own Cardinals, and an Englishman. This was Stephen Langton.

The appointment, though it came attended with the most flattering letters and valuable presents, was scornfully rejected by the King, as an infringement on his dearest rights. The King stormed and raged and expostulated, but in vain. The Lion was too deeply entangled in the toils of the Pontiff. His artful policy on this occasion, lays open the deep abysses of human duplicity.— But our object does not oblige us to follow them. Suffice it to say—the Plot increases—the kingdom is laid under an Interdict.*—The King is excommunicated.—His subjects are absolved from their allegiance. The King on the other hand, is equally resolute. He fines, he confiscates, he removes from under the protection of the Law—he banishes the adherents of the Pope. Years of complicated misery roll on; and John is still refractory. The Pope is reduced to his last resort; and calls upon Philip of France, with all his power, to reduce his "refractory child" to obedience.— All France and her allies are armed for the pur-

^{*} This interdict was issued on the 22nd day of March, 1208, upon which there was a cessation of all divine services, except confession, baptism of infants, and administration of the Eucharist to dying persons; so that the dead were carried out of the Cities and Towns and without ceremony, like beasts, thrown into pits or ditches.

Echard, Lib. II.**

pose. John was still undaunted; and determined SECTION to resist to the last, for the honor and interests of his kingdom.

l. Снар. V.

Policy of the

Whilst the two armies crowded the opposite shores, intent upon the approaching contest, the Pope, weighing with the profoundest sagacity, the dubious nature of all such enterprises; and knowing, that the defeat of Philip would be fearfully injurious to the power of the Church, determines, if possible, to avoid the encounter; and to bring Shall I repeat his John to submission without it. arts? "Eloquar an sileam?" John is reminded of the "paternal" solicitude of the Pope, and of his own sacred duty to the Church. He is directed to consider the formidable array advancing against He is led to contemplate the direful effects of such a contest, even should he prove victorious. He is reminded of the ETERNAL HORRORS to which he will be consigned, should he fall in the conflict. And lastly, he is shewn the happy consequences of submission; and, that by a mere formally giving up his kingdom, into the hands of the Pope, he would be shielded by his power from every evil.

A variety of circumstances conspired to enforce the proposals, and the King in the midst of conflicting evils, chose that which he thought the least. He solemnly delivered up his Crown and Kingdom to the protection of the Pope; and a sum of money as part of the tributary payment was

SECTION paid down, which the Pope's legate, to shew the I. supreme majesty of his master, trampled under his feet.

But the potent Philip was equally imposed They were both alike the dupes of the upon. Pope, who only intended from the first, to make an open shew of his power; and when we consider, that for the gratifying of this passion, he had led Philip to incur vast expences in his military preparations, we can scarcely avoid the conclusion, that Philip was the greater dupe of the two. King John indeed, made a solemn offering of his Crown to the Pope—but it was empty shew. acquired nothing in real power. He gained, it is true, his object in the pending quarrel; but herein it is, that we shall be called upon to behold the superintending Providence of the MOST HIGH. It was not for the Pontiff's glory. England ALONE WAS TO BE BENEFITTED! The whole of the Pontiff's pride and policy was overruled, to bind another link in the unbroken series of England's greatness. It was the golden hinge on which we shall see, the liberty and safety of England is made to turn. But we must proceed. Great had been, and still were the sufferings of the nation; and the general discontent was much aggravated by the King's mode of administering the Government; and by his own personal con-He exercised his prerogative with rigour: he indulged his licentious passions with freedom,

and without the sanction of law, he levied burden- SECTION some taxes on the community. The fact is, that ever since the times of the Roman conquest the Government had been degenerating; and had become too personal and arbitrary: whilst the true principles of the constitution were left to expire, amidst Wars and Crusades and domestic dissensions. These evils may also be considered as the natural result of the feudal Institutions. But the time was arrived, when the true principles of the Constitution were to be re-asserted; and a combination of adjuvant circumstances eminently point out the hand that was guiding every movement. Stephen Langton is to be the instrument for conducting the matter to a successful issue.

In all probability, the King himself was ignorant of the true grounds of the constitution. he had received the sceptre he wielded it. He was resolute and capable of sustaining it, as it came into his hands. He was not a wise Prince; and was not, therefore, the man to think of giving useful and valuable institutions to a country. He was not the man to cement the social system by wise usages, or to ameliorate the condition of his people by judicious laws. But Stephen Langton had a well informed understanding, and made himself acquainted with the laws of Edward and the charters of Henry I. He produced them to the Barons, reminded them of their lost RIGHTS, exhorted them to assert their liberties, and pro-

I. CHAP. V.

As ment of Magna

Снар. V.

SECTION mised them his utmost assistance in the contest. The eonfederaey was formed—the Charters in due time produced to the King; and their demands enforced by a shew of resistance. The King seems to have been astonished at the existence of such documents; and at once refused to yield to which he considered so exorbitant. demands. However, a just sense of the magnitude and importanee of their cause, animated the Barons to a steady and determined resistance. A train of eireumstanees led the King to coneede all their demands, and RUNNYMEDE, the place where the Commissioners assembled, is justly eelebrated for the RECOVERY of the principles which lie deep in the foundation of British glory. But unfortunately for his own memory, John repented of his aet; and so "foolish and ignorant" was he, that he believed the suggestions of the enemies of his eountry, who whispered in his ear that he was now no longer King. He appealed to the Pope, who vigorously united with him in this unrighteous quarrel:-beeause he had put himself so reeently and peculiarly, under his protection,—a eireumstance upon which we shall afterwards see, in all probability, turned the salvation of the Country. Arehbishop Langton nobly sustained the indignation of the Pope and eneouraged the wavering Barons.

> The King like a roused lion pursued his Barons, and reduced them to the borders of despair; and

I. CHAP. V.

in their extremity they were induced to take a step, SECTION which might have proved fatal to the liberties of their Country. They entered into a compact with the Dauphin of France: and invited him over to their assistance—a contract, into which with the most treacherous intentions, he eagerly entered. But John, all this time, discovered the courage and resolution of his family; and would have proved too powerful for them all, had it not pleased the Arbiter of events, whilst eagerly engaged in the pursuit of his enemies, to cut him off from the land of the living.

The circumstances of his death were truly deplorable; and his career ended amidst clouds and thick darkness, affording a monitory warning to posterity, that the evil conduct of Princes, as it is more pernicious in its consequences, than that of others, is always attended with more signal punishment.

Thus ended the acts of John; but not the influence of those acts.—That still remains; and to this day, the provisions of Magna Charta are matter of gratulation to Englishmen. And who can help admiring the manner in which that important Charter was established? The circumstances which led to its accomplishment, were all beyond the reach of human controul; it is wonderful to see, how the erring schemes of men were overruled, for the most beneficial purposes. How little did the Pope, in the elevation of Stephen Langton, intend the resuscitation of England's best hopes!

I. CHAP. V.

SECTION The Pope considered him a clever and fitting instrument, for furthering his own ambitious views How little did the King in opposing in England. the election of Langton, imagine that such a result would flow from it ?-He resisted, because he considered the interference of the Pope an encroachment upon his rights. The grant of Magna Charta was one of those great events, which discovers the progress of society; and distinctly marks the interference of the GREAT AUTHOR and CE-MENTER of the social League. The desirable consummation was brought about, through the instrumentality of a person, raised up to gratify the ambition of another; and against every human probability, sent from a foreign clime to fill a vacant see, for which already there were two competitors !—As I have said, the Pope did not intend the GOOD. Langton himself could not have entertained an idea of it. John, of course did not.— The Barons were discontented, but they were entirely ignorant of the grounds, both of their wrongs and of the existence of their privileges. were all the parties concerned in the affair.— Chance could not design it. For if we grant, which we do not, the existence of such an agency, it must necessarily be blind. Because if not blind—it must be intelligent—and if intelligent, it must, in this case, be God. But Archbishop Langton was eminently fitted for carrying the great work into effect, blind chance would indeed have

made a wonderful choice! but it is absurd. It was SECTION the work of a beneficent and superintending Providence. "who frustrateth the tokens of the liars. and maketh diviners mad.—Who turneth wise men backward and maketh their knowledge foolish."*

CHAP. V.

But there is one other event, which must be noticed, and which will also tend to shew, that John was not the dastardly being which he has been represented; but was, in many respects, worthy of his august family. And if I might judge, it appears to me, that both Richard and John were endowed with great powers of mind, but ruined in education. Henry, with all his great qualities, was too indulgent a father; and omitted that just discipline, without which the youthful mind runs wild; and the greater the abilities, the greater the devastation.

John discovered what was latent in him, in the re-conquest and re-organization of Ireland; and such was his conduct in that affair, that he did more for that country, than his father Henry. And had we the history of Ireland before us, we should find, that he was the instrument of confering signal benefits upon it.

The oak which is the noblest and most valuable tree of the forest, is the slowest in its growth; and does not arrive at its perfection till after the lapse of many years. So in all extensive moral

Henry III. A. D. 1216.

^{*} Prophecy of Isaiah, chap. xliv. 25.

I.

SECTION changes, and in the formation of great civil institutions, which are destined to bless millions of CHAP V. the human race, we must expect to find their progress to completion, slow.

Rise and character of Feudalism.

The feudal system contained in itself the elements of a free and good government; and was brought into this country at a very early date, as the bold institution of a war-like people, free as the mountain breeze. Its first rudiments are by no means complicated. A social band under some valiant chief, issue from their woods and marshes, like the Helvctii of old, to seek some new and more extensive territory. They enter upon the scene of warfare. They conquer. The ancient inhabitants are expelled; and their land divided amongst the conquerors. The Chief is rewarded with the greatest sharc. The next in command, receive a proportionate allotment, subject to certain duties which they owe to the Chief; and under similar regulations, each individual receives his portion. All considered themselves equally free, except that they owed ALLEGIANCE to their individual Chief; and were obliged to pay him MILI-TARY service when called upon. The chiefs were equally dependent upon the Chief Paramount. Now, it is evident that such a basis for a form of Government, might become good or bad, as circumstances should act upon it. The Chiefs were liable to great oppression from the sovereign Lord; inasmuch as his power was necessarily great; and

if by his vigour and wisdom, he could prevent the SECTION Chiefs from combining against him, there was no limit to his exactions. The inferior vassals under their respective chiefs, inasmuch as there was no possibility of uniting for self-defence, were liable to still greater oppression. On the other hand, if some certain limit could be placed around the authority of the Lord Paramount, beyond which he should not be allowed to pass-(a principle which of course would extend to the inferior chiefs)—it is easy to see, that from such an arrangement, there might evolve a happy disposition of parts, which would adapt themselves to each other, and strengthen and consolidate the structure of the Commonwealth. And what is the matter of fact? Whilst the institutions of Feudalism continued in their simplest form; and the land was sufficient to sustain its allotted tenantry, nothing could work better. There was an entire sympathy throughout the whole community, which was marked by a reciprocity of feeling and benefit. The superior ever displayed generosity and kindness—the inferior, gratitude and willingness to serve; and whilst this happy state of things continued, the confederacy was invincible. But the progress of time which increases states, increases their wants; and renders their machinery more complicated; and the artificial wants of men giving strength to their passions, destroys the more generous feelings, and renders them rapa-

CHAP. V.

CHAP. V.

SECTION cious and cruel. Thus the Feudal Institution became, at length, the most odious and oppressive system that ever burdened the earth. The Chief degenerated from a father to a mercenary tyrant; and the vassals from children to slaves. vigour and union were lost. Remedies were applied. Fiefs were rendered hereditary. Knight service instituted. And at length, taxes in lieu of service. Hence arose standing armies, and the absolute power of the Sovereign Lord, in whom was vested the power of levying taxes.

This was the case in Europe generally. But it was happily otherwise in England. The first barrier against the encroachment of the Feudal Power in the person of the Supreme Chief, was undoubtedly, the MAGNA CHARTA; and it is worthy of remark, that this bulwark of true liberty, did not (and I question whether it ever could) arise out of Feudalism. The reader will recollect that it was the revival of a Saxon Charter, restored and fostered by that ever memorable feudal Chief The establishment of this Charter. HENRY. which laid the foundation of the principle—that no man ought to be taxed without his own consent—is still before us. John died in a vain attempt to revoke this document, which contained in it the substance of political freedom; and his successor Henry III. followed in the same track. He was but ten years of age when he was crowned King; and the country was, altogether, in a

frightful condition. The French, who had been SECTION invited over by the Barons, to sustain their falling cause, were overrunning and devastating the land; and when there was no further occasion for their service, they were unwilling to retire. Their leader the Dauphin, entertained the most pernicious designs; and, had he succeeded, no person can tell what might have been the consequence. Happily, his treachery and baseness were confessed by the Count Melun on his dying bed; which opened the eyes of the confederate Barons, and convinced them of their mistake. But perhaps it would have been too late, had it not been for the Earl of Pembroke, guardian to the King, and the powerful influence of the Pope, which had been all along exerted against the French and the Barons. This, let it be remembered, was one of the good things which arose from John's submission to the See of Rome! The French were expelled; and the wise Earl of Pembroke made the most judicious regulations, for restoring the peace and prosperity of the country. He caused prompt and impartial justice to be administered through the land, and the provisions of the Magna Charta to be strictly observed. But his untimely death, put an end to all his beneficial arrangements. The long and unsettled state of the country—the uncertain aspect of the government; and the bad example of incessant resistance to the Executive, opened the way for the most grievous and accu-

CHAP. V.

T. Снар. V.

SECTION mulated evils. How rife these evils were in the Church, will be seen from one circumstance, amongst many others. A person was doomed by the Archbishop, to be immured within four walls for personating Jesus Christ. This pitiable man had imprinted upon his hands and feet and side, such scars as nails and a spear might have been supposed to produce, and in ignorant impiety, published himself to be the Christ. At the same time, a female following the example, proclaimed herself as the Virgin Mary. Popular commotions in the state were frequent and daring; and every day, the people exhibited symptoms of a low, unbridled, ignorant and licentious PROS-PERITY.

The King's Ministers pacious.

Whatever were the military power or natural ra-courage of Henry III. his first intentions were frustrated by the Pope, who peremptorily forbad any attempt upon Philip of France; at that time, engaged in the PIOUS enterprize of extirpating the Albigenses. But afterwards, in all his martial acts, he was generally unsuccessful. The great defect in the King's mind, (the presence of which, is the governing principle in all great minds) was a want of judgment. He had no self power. He had no confidence in his own decisions. defect obliged him to submit to the judgment of others; whence it inevitably followed, that such persons made use of the opportunity with which they were favoured, to their own advantage.

selfishness acting on all their counsels made them SECTION bad men. They became rapacious and insolent. CHAP. V. And their conduct caused one advance towards, the crisis of this Reign.

The first minister of the King, Hubert De Burgh appears to have been a man of great en-take up arms. dowments, both of body and mind; and, under a more firm master, might have proved a great blessing to the country. His after impeachment by the Barons, was uncalled for, and vexatious. His successors were not such men: Robert Seagrave, Peter De Rupibus, and Peter De Revaulx, -names, mentioned only to be execrated. By their impolitic advice and rapacious conduct, they gave the most just reason for the resentment of the Barons. A struggle ensued, in which the brave Earl of Pembroke fell a sacrifice to the bribery and artifices of these abominable men. The King is afterwards convinced of the evil conduct of his Ministers, and they are dismissed with infamy. The end of this quarrel with his nobles, tends to shew the kind and forgiving disposition of the King; and makes one wish that he had fallen into better hands. The discontent excited by the flagrant conduct of the King's ministers, was frightfully aggravated by the enormous and merciless exactions of the Pope.

We are compelled to notice this subject, because after all, it was the main engine whose evil-dispo-exactions of sed power, was made to work the general good.

SECTION At one time, the successor of St. Peter, sends a Nuncio, courteously to petition for a gratuity, to CHAP. V. meet the expenses of the Universal Church: at another, he sends a Cardinal with full authority to demand one-tenth of all effects; and, as the demand of the Pope was urgent, the Prelates were to pay it down, and afterwards to collect it. order to meet this demand, we are told the Clergy had to part with their vestments, and the very furniture of the Churches; and, that no possible impediment might be in the way, the Cardinal brought usurers with him, for the purpose of advancing money; but on such extravagant terms, as to be followed with unavoidable ruin! demand actually extended to the whole produce of the fruits of the earth, whilst they were growing -an exaction which no person attempted to resist except the Earl of Chester! The country, moreover, was filled with the Pope's emissaries; and multitudes of ignorant and needy ecclesiastics were sent over, armed with the Pope's bulls; by which means they obtained vast spiritual revenues, whilst the Roman proctors and farmers, by every method of extortion and subtlety, collected unknown sums, which they sent to their rapacious MASTER, To such an extent were these exactions carried, that the whole nation groaned under the burden; and the King himself made a shew of resistance. An embassy and an epistle from the King and his Parliament, produced no

effect upon the "Servant of Servants;" and at SECTION length the enraged Barons drove his chaplain and CHAP. V. factors out of the Kingdom. But Gregory sensible of his power, grasped his iron rod, and threatened the audacious recusants, with the effects of his resentment.

At a Parliament convened at London, a formal The King and Protest was drawn up respecting the intolerable his Parliament abuses of the Church. The protest complained protest -that the Pope had exacted exorbitant contributions from the Clergy, without the King's consent —that he had filled up vacant benefices, with Italians who could neither read nor speak a word of English—that he had drawn away to a ruinous extent, the coin of the realm, that Englishmen were compelled to plead their causes in a foreign land—that the Pope's provisions and pensions were insupportable; and that by his authority, he could dispense with customs, charters, grants, statutes, rights, and privileges. This enumeration of grievances will serve to shew, the galling and maddening bondage under which the country suf-But the protest and remonstrances of the King and his Parliament, produced no other effect, than to draw from the Pope, a more masked kind of levy. He directed a bull to the Archbishop, to empower him to collect 10,000 marks, in seven years; as was pretended for the service of the Archipiscopate. And various levies were made on the Clergy, which they were bound by oath to

SECTION CONCEAL. I. CHAP. V.

But in spite of every regulation, the Papal corrasions increased; and to meet beforehand the rising discontent and to work upon the superstitious mind of the King, an expedient is resorted to, too impious almost to be written

..... Quid non mortalia pectora cogis Auri sacra fames!

Blasphemy and treachery of the Pope.

The Pope conveyed to the King, from Jerusalem, with all mysterious solemnity, and as the most valuable gift of Heaven, a portion of the blood of the Saviour. The credulous Monarch received it with the deepest reverence—summoned a Parliament to convey to them the joyful tidings; and conveyed it, on foot, with the most profound humility, to Westminster Abbey, where it was deposited.*

As a chef-d'ouvre, a last stroke of policy, the Pope makes a treacherous offer of the Crown of Sicily to the King's Son, Edmund—an offer which he never intended to complete; but to conduct the transfer, he pretended great sums of money were necessary. Other necessities of the state required supplies; and the king in his turn, convoked a Parliament for the purpose of obtaining them. demands are refused; so that he was actually reduced to poverty. He was obliged to curtail the ordinary expenses of his household—to stop the wages of his servants; and to give up his alms. Every thing became venal, and offices of trust

^{*} Westminster Abbey was built by this Prince.

I. CHAP. V.

were bartered in the face of day. These were SECTION evils sufficient to rouse the desponding energies of a nation, and to bring them courage from despair. But when we add to this, the ill-advised measures of the king in surrounding himself with foreigners, and bestowing upon them the most important trusts; and especially, the high authority to which he raised Robert de Valentia the Queen's unclewe need not wonder at the indignation of the barons: and what further served to goad them to the highest pitch of desperation, the ARCH-EXACTOR threatened an interdict, if money was not raised.

The combination of the nobles was powerfully conducted, under the direction of Montfert Earl ment becomes of Leicester. The king is unable to resist, and submits to their terms. The nobles become predominant, and the administration of affairs is placed in the hands of twenty-four of their order. The government was now reduced to an Oligarchy, but happily in the face of their declarations they were obliged to be consistent, and the more striking evils of the state were remedied; and for the time, such a form of government was beneficial.— The Charters were enforced. Impartial justice was administered. Foreigners were banished; and the annual meeting of Parliament established. Every rank in the state received a new impulse; and an epoch in the civil Constitution was advancing. None of the parties engaged in this struggle, foresaw or contemplated the important change they

I. Снар V.

SECTION were introducing. The nobles were interested and ambitious; and in all their resistance sought the aggrandisement of their own order. But they found from experience, that they were not able alone to resist the power of the Monarch. sought therefore, the concurrence of the people at large—of the rich, by flattery; of the poor, by promises. This circumstance induced the people to measure their power and feel their consequence in the state; and was a fatal blow to the remaining power of Feudalism.

The King

In the mean time, the King awakened to a gain his power, sense of his degraded condition; and used the most strenuous efforts to rid himself from the thraldom of the nobles. And to sanctify the attempt, first endeavoured to get rid of his oaths and promises. In order to effect this he applies to that MONSTROUS POWER, which had usurped the place of God; and was at once absolved by his indulgent benefactor from all his obligations. The contest begins anew. The King follows the same pernicious course as before; which served the more to widen the breach. An anecdote of a circumstance which occurred at this time, is worth recording, inasmuch as it discovers the state of feeling which existed. The King one day indulging in an excursion on the river, was overtaken by a violent storm of thunder and lightning; being somewhat alarmed, he desired to be set on shore at the nearest stairs. These happened to

be those of Durham house, where the Earl of SECTION Leicester then resided. The Earl, on hearing CHAP. V. that the King was there, ran down, with all, courtesy to receive him: and perceiving that he was agitated, he said. "Your Majesty need not be under any alarm, for the storm is already passed." "No," answered the King with a stern look: "I fear not the thunder, so much as I fear thee," at which words, the Earl somewhat confused replied, "Sir, I am sorry that you should fear your true friend and servant, more than the enemies and devourers of your kingdom."

The contest now began in real earnest; and for Extraordinafive years, civil war divided the land. At length, ry result of the Civil War. the crisis approached; and an adverse battle, in which the King was assisted by his brother the King of the Romans, and his Son; and in which, his own son Edward, performed prodigies of valour, put every thing into the power of the Earl of Leicester. The two Kings and their two Sons were taken prisoners; and led in triumph by the conquering Earl; who managed everything at his discretion. His ambition, however became so outrageous; and his conduct so tyrannical, that he excited the jealousy of the other confederates, and especially, of the Earl of Gloucester; and a Parliament was called, to rectify these abuses and to set Prince Edward at liberty. In this Parliament was laid the basis of the HOUSE OF COMMONS: and from the second of Jan-

T. CHAP. V.

SECTION uary, 1265, we must date the era of this branch of the LEGISLATIVE POWER. Two Knights for every shire; and two Burgesses for every city and borough sat in this Parliament.*

> This was the great work to be achieved in this. reign: it was now done; and brought to a happy issue amidst every species of exaction, misrule, inquietude, and bloodshed. It was from a sea of commingling and conflicting elements, that the vessel of the state was conducted to a safe anchorage, without any visible pilot. But there was an invisible and beneficent agent, correcting and subduing the contending evils; and constraining them to subserve his wise and transcendent purposes. The scene now rapidly changes. Prince Edward escapes from prison, flies to the rescue of his Father, resolutely attacks the Earl of Leicester and defeats him in a well contested battle, in which the Earl The kingdom is restored to his father, who from that moment, appeared like another man. He caused the strictest justice to be enforced, called a Parliament at Marlborough to renew and establish the body of the laws of England; at which time also, those laws were enacted which are now extant, under the title of the Statutes of Marlborough; in which the Magna Charta is solemnly confirmed. The four last years of the King's life were spent in dignified tranquillity; and his sun went down in peace!

^{*} Echard ex Doc. Stuart.

CHAPTER VI.

EDWARD I.—ADVANCE OF THE KINGDOM—ESTABLISH-MENT OF PARLIAMENT AND THE CONVOCATION.

Most historians have concurred in remarking that SECTION during the two preceding reigns, the English Monarchy was greatly diminished and debased; but a little reflection will convince us, that, on the Illustrious contrary, it was more firmly established and con-Reign of Edward I. solidated. It was unavoidable from the very A.D. 1272. nature of the feudal institutions, but that a crisis should arise, the result of which, must determine the future course of Government. But crises are always dangerous! inasmuch as they are the offspring of necessity, produced by the selfishness and passions of mankind; and seldom under the control of reason and justice. Happily, however, under the controlling influence of Heaven, the result of the contest in England, was every thing that could be wished. The Monarchy was estabCHAP. VI.

SECTION lished—the liberty of the subject secured, and the master principle of legislation, introduced. There was less of splendid achievement in the last two reigns; but there was more of practical benefit.-There was less ostentation in the movements of the state; but there was more of real aequisition: and instead of heaping reproaches on the heads of unfortunate Princes, we owe them a great debt of sympathy, as the suffering instruments, through whom so much good has devolved to us. whatever the English Monarehy had lost in territory and splendour, was soon to be recovered by the illustrious Edward. He had already, during the life of his father, exhibited those qualities of mind, which bear the stamp of greatness of soul. During the crisis of which we have been speaking, it was necessary for the completion of the intended good, that there should be a relaxation of the Kingly Power, and we have fully noticed all the eireumstances that conspired to assail and subdue it. But the authority of the executive must again be vindicated and the tone of the eoereive power, restored. For this purpose, Edward is raised up, in whose breast, as Selden observes -"God seemed to have pitched his tent"-He was in the Holy Land at the death of his father. In his way home he ealled at Sicily, and was honorably entertained by King Robert. It was here he received intelligence of the death of his son and heir; and soon after, of the death of his

Father, at which latter announcement, he shed SECTION more tears and discovered still greater sorrow.

The Sicilian King astonished at this conduct, expressed his surprise to the Prince; whose noble answer deserves to be recorded: 'nature may supply to us the loss of a son; but that of a father is irreparable.'

As soon as he returned, the nation was made to feel the vigour of his hand. He redresses its grievances, binds up the breaches that had been made during the late contests; and purges its corruptions. There are on record the names of twelve Judges, found guilty of bribery and extortion, dismissed by him from their high offices, and severely punished. In order to controul the exorbitant power of the ecclesiastics; the statutes of Mortmain were enacted in the very commencement of his reign; and many other wise regulations respecting the church. From this time also we may date the origin of the CONVOCATION of the English Church, as it now exists.

Such was the activity of his mind—the vigour of his judgment and the power of his arm, that he was successful in all his enterprises. He entered Wales—subdued it—slew Llewellin the last Prince and annexed the principality to the crown of England. The disputed succession to the throne of Scotland occupied a great share of his attention; and he claimed as Lord Paramount of Scotland, the right of settling the succession to that throne.

1. CHAP. VI.

SECTION His right was not disputed; and after a tedious hearing, he decided in favour of John Baliol.

> Edward in entire consistency with his acknowledged right, on some punctilio of feudal observance, commanded the King of Scotland to appear This led to a quarrel; and Edward before him. entered Scotland with his army, in order to enforce It is unnecessary for me to enter into obedience. a detail of his wars with Scotland.—Suffice it to say, that he five times conquered that country and conducted his victorious army through the length and breadth of it. It is not my design, at present, to pursue the history of Scotland, otherwise I have no doubt, it would be seen, that he was eminently the instrument of God, in executing very important purposes in that part of the Island. I can see nothing of reason nor justice in the resistance of the Scots.

Persecution of the Jews.

During this reign a most violent persecution was raised against the Jews.-It is stated that two hundred suffered capital punishment; and shortly after, by the advice of Parliament, the whole race were banished from the kingdom. seen no convincing evidence as to the real grounds of those violent proceedings.—It is a mysterious matter: and I leave it in silence.

We now find a Parliament convened at London, in which the Citizens and Burgesses regularly sit to vote their share, towards defraying the expenses of the state; and from the twenty-first year of

this reign, there is a regular and unbroken series SECTION of Parliaments to our own time. In the Parliament of which I am now speaking, the citizens and burgesses voted one fifth of their goods for the service of the King-the Peers one twelfth; but the Clergy refused to grant their aid, on account of a constitution made and published that year, by Pope Boniface, that no clergyman under the severest penalties, should concur in granting temporal aids without the Pope's consent. It requires some knowledge of our own weakness, to be enabled to restrain our indignation, at such a daring invasion of all right and reason and justice! outrage was keenly felt by the King, and he took his measures accordingly. He immediately placed the Clergy out of the pale of the law-seized on their temporal fees, and allowed them no redress in his own courts. This intolerable mode of punishment, soon brought them to their senses; and they consented to deposit one fifth of their goods, in the churches, to be conveyed from thence by the King's collectors.

But the wisdom of Edward and the true mag- Edward connanimity of his character shone forth most con-firms Magna Charta. spicuous, in the readiness with which he confirmed the Magna Charta; when to shew his entire concurrence in its provisions, and more fully to satisfy the Parliament, he dispensed with the dubious clause.

"Salvo jure coronæ nostræ."

SECTION
I.
CHAP. VI.

Such was his observance of JUSTICE and the strict impartiality with which he enforced its enactments, that he committed his own Son to the public prison, for riotously breaking the park of Walter Langton, Bishop of Chester.

He was preparing a sixth time to chastise the ever rebelling Scots; and like a chafed Lion roused all his energies for the occasion. But enough was done; and the Arbiter of events averted the impending danger. The career of Edward was run; and he expired in the camp at Burg on the sands, in the sixty eighth year of his age, and the thirty-fifth of his reign. He was a mighty Prince, but he forgot his origin. membered not that he was dust. His resentment against his enemies survived the grave; and with his dying breath he charged his son Edward II, not to relinquish the entire conquest of Scotland; and ordered him to carry his bones along with him as a terror to the enemy. Alas! a melancholy rcflection attends the recording of his dying requests. —They were inconsistent with reason and repugnant to Christianity. "Verily every man at his best estate is altogether vanity!"*

^{*} Psalm xxxix. v. 5.

CHAPTER VII.

EDWARD II.—CIVIL DISSENSIONS—CONTROLLING OF THE SOVEREIGN POWER.

WE are again about to open a calamitous and SECTION blood-stained page of our history; but the evils which it records, will be found not to have impe- CHAP VII. ded but rather accelerated the progress of the A. D. 1307. nation in its mighty course. For whilst the preceding reign by its vigour and ability, tended greatly to aggrandise the realm, and to promote its essential interests, both at home and abroad the present reign will be found, by its weakness, to have afforded an opportunity to the people, of attempting to raise another barrier, against the undefined power of the Feudal Sovereign. The King possessed the undisputed right of appointing his own ministers; and whatever was their character or conduct, there was no power to controul the exercise of his authority. It was the abuse

CHAP. VII.

SECTION of this right that excited the contention, between the Sovereign and the people at this period if the struggle did not terminate in providing an immediate remedy, it established a counter principle which in the end was triumphant.

The King's incapacity.

The young King disregarding the dying injunctions of his parent, immediately relinquished the conquest of Scotland and returned home. first acts discovered his unfitness for Government, and how unworthy he was, to succeed to such a father. He indulged his personal resentment by committing Bishop Langton to prison; and discovered his obstinate passion for favoritism, by recalling Gaveston who had been banished by his father, as alike odious to himself and the nation at large. In the company of this, justly obnoxious, favorite, the King abandoned himself to the most unbecoming indulgences. His young Queen felt herself slighted; and the nobles were disgusted by his extravagant attentions to the favorite; and thus early, was the foundation laid, for a strenuous opposition to his will, an opposition which his own indolence and fatuity of mind, were only calculated to strengthen.

Evils of Favoritism.

The Barons soon conspired against him, and obliged him to promise to send Gaveston out of the Kingdom. He fulfilled his promise; but in a way, which gave occasion for greater discontent. He sent him as his Lieutenant into Ireland, and lavished upon him every species of favour, in

greater profusion. Indignant at being thus de- SECTION ceived, the Barons demand a full and unequivocal fulfilment of his promise; and took up arms, with intention of inforcing it. In the contest which ensued, Gaveston is taken prisoner by the confederated nobles; and without even the forms of justice, ignominiously put to death,—a mode of procedure, which, at once, exposes the unworthy motives by which their conduct was actuated. At this unhappy juncture, many grievous evils impended over the land. The King was defeated in an expedition he made into Scotland-a dysentery and pestilence committed dreadful ravages among the people; whilst a very grievous famine followed in their train. It will give us some idea of the extent, to which this latter evil prevailedwhen it is stated that malefactors committed to prison were assailed and actually devoured by the famished inmates of those horrid abodes. But to proceed.

A seeming reconciliation had scarcely taken place, between the King and his Nobles, when fresh cause was given for mutual jealousies and animosities. The changeful King transferred his affections to the family of the Spensers, and on the father and son alike, bestowed his unwearied favours. Of necessity, it laid the foundation for a new conflict; and the Spensers were banished. But the King was wounded to the quick, and his resentment great. Hitherto the Queen who was

CHAP. VII.

CHAP. VII.

SECTION in the interest of the Barons, had acted as a mediatrix, and by her arts and influence, prevented an hostile collision between the contending parties. But unfortunately, at the time, when the King's mind was inflamed to the highest degree, she herself, felt aggrieved by being refused admission on some particular occasion, at the castle of one of the confederate nobles, and instantly determined upon revenge. She found no difficulty in exciting the King's mind, and fanning his smothered wrath into a flame. All the courage of his breast was roused; and he determined to bring the Barons to subjection, or to die in the attempt. A civil war ensues; and in a fatal contest at Boroughbridge, the two leaders of the confederacy were sacrificed. The Earl of Hertford fell in the conflict, and the Earl of Lancaster was taken prisoner. Soon after, he was beheaded at Pontefract, under circumstances very similar to those which had attended the execution of Gaveston; and, in which he had been principal actor. But these were not the only victims. Great numbers of the first nobility of the land, fell together with their leaders; and it is stated that there never was at one time, so much noble blood spilt as on this occasion, since the conquest. The King was elated with his success; and turned his victorious arms on Scotland. He entered that country with a numerous, but badly provisioned army, and his expedition ended in disgrace.

In the mean time, the great catastrophe of the SECTION reign was advancing. The Queen had taken deep umbrage at the Spensers, because as it is alleged, they endeavoured to curtail her expensive and The Queen licentious mode of living; and to place some takes part in the political restraint upon her conduct. From that moment, tragedy. she conceived a mortal dislike to the men whom she considered her rivals and oppressors; and in the deep machinations of her heart, determined upon their ruin. This was rendered a difficult task from the late success of the King, and the total defeat of the Barons. But to such a woman, nothing was impossible. She was another Medea, and only waited for the opportunity, in order to discover the number and variety of her stratagems. That opportunity was granted to her, through the advice of the Spensers themselves. Fearful lest the King should leave the kingdom, whose presence alone, restrained the violence of their enemies-they advised him to send the Queen with the young Prince to France, to negociate respecting the affairs of Gascony. Nothing could have happened more to her mind. Her residence at the French Court, became the refuge of all the discontented from England. Amongst these, was Roger Mortimer, a young nobleman who had been taken in the late encounter and committed to the tower. He escaped from his confinement, and made his way into France, where he was warmly

CHAP. VII.

SECTION received by the Queen, and became the object of I. her sinful passion.

Deep laid Plot of the Queen.

A deep-laid plot was now concerted, in which not only the Spensers, but the unfortunate King himself, was included; and nothing was wanting, but the means of carrying it into execution. order to raise the necessary funds, she actually contracted her Son (Edward III.) to one of the daughters of the Duke of Hainault, and with the dowry, prepared a fleet and armament, under the command of the Duke's brother. She disembarked her troops at Harwich, and as her plan was fully matured, she was immediately joined by many of the nobility, and all the Bishops; and with her army, greatly increased, went in pursuit of the King. To strengthen her party, she spread the false report that the King of France was aiding her cause, with so many Dukes and Earls that England could scarce contain them—that all who opposed her were already excommunicated, and to show that she came as a liberator, she ordered all the Prisons to be thrown open.

The deserted King, totally unprepared for such a sudden invasion, after making the best arrangements within his power, fled with his favorite Spensers into the West. But this was a sinking cause—the hour of their ascendant was past; and at every step, they were doomed to meet with disappointment.

A scene, which was acted in the Queen's Camp SECTION on her arrival at Oxford, deserves to be recorded -not for its intrinsic worth-but to manifest in the midst of much external shew, the barbarous Barbarous mental ignorance of the times; and to illustrate ignorance of the times the important and acknowledged truth—that Religion. where there is no public opinion to overawe the selfish principle,—public virtue cannot exist. was Sunday, and on such a pious expedition, and with all the Bishops in her train, it would have been out of character, not to give the most scrupulous attention to her religious duties. On the occasion, the Bishop of Hereford was chosen to preach before the assembled troops. The selection of his text.-"My head; my head acheth," which he dislocated from its place, in one of the simplest of narratives, * sufficiently shewed the malady of his understanding. From this text he argued, in a manner somewhat opposed to our present notions of medical treatment; and directly at variance with our ideas of politics and divinity, -that there was no other cure for the sick and distempered head of a Kingdom, except AMPU-TATION!

In the mean time, the unhappy King had got out to sea, but the very elements fought against executed. him; and he was obliged to put on shore, from stress of weather, and took shelter amongst the Welsh, in the Abbey of Neath, where he lay con-

CHAP. VII.

^{* 2} Kings, 4. 18.

CHAP. VII.

SECTION cealed. The relentless Queen pursued her march, and quickly appeared before Bristol, which was defended by the Earl of Arundel and the elder Spenser. The place soon fell into her hands, and Spenser was executed on the common gallows. Her revenge was thus accomplishing. A proclamation was now issued, stating, that if the King would come forward and promise conformity to the laws of the realm, he should be restored. dared not to trust himself in their hands. was however discovered by the brother of the Duke of Laneaster, and together with his unfortunate eounsellors, seized and earried off from his sanctuary. The younger Spenser was led in a moek triumph; and, after being exposed to universal seorn and derision, was hung on a gallows, fifty feet in height-Roger de Reding, ten feet lower; and the Chaneellor Baldoek, was thrust into Newgate, where he died miserably.

The King deposed.

In a Parliament convened at London, articles of deposition were made out against the imprisoned Monarch; and he was deelared to be no longer King; whilst it was further enacted, that his son Edward should be erowned in his stead. To give to these enactments, the sanctions of religion, the Arehbishop of Canterbury preached a sermon on the oeeasion, from "the Voice of the People is the Voice of God," in which he argued, as wisely and legitimately as his Brother of Hereford had done, on the malady of the head-ache.

The conclusion of this solemn farce, seemed to SECTION inspire the Queen with symptoms of grief, and she even shed tears at the degradation of her CHAP. VII. husband. But whatever was the nature of those tears, they were soon dried up by the warmth of another passion. The innocent Prince her son, moved by this appearance of sorrow, solemnly declared, that he would never wear the crown without his father's consent. Commissioners were accordingly sent to the King to Worcester Castle, where he was confined; and by threats and promises, prevailed upon the afflicted and humbled monarch, to yield up a sceptre, already forced out of his hands.

Thus ended the reign of Edward the II. through Edward III. the intrigues and furious passion of an evil woman, succeeds his dewhom God and nature designed to be his joy in prosperity, and his solace in adversity. And it would have been happy, had her machinations ended here. But guilt; like the monster that devoured its own offspring, is ever the destroyer of its own acquisitions. The guilty Queen and her paramour, felt themselves insecure, whilst the abjected Monarch was alive; and fancied if he were removed, there would be no drawback upon their happiness, Alas! how blind are the faculties of our mind, when obscured by vicious indulgences! as if the existence of a King without power, and under their own controul, could have had any REAL influence, in restraining their wishes.

I. CHAP. VII.

SECTION But such is guilt.—By entertaining imaginary evils, it goads itself to the commission of still greater crimes, which never fail to induce greater calamities than those it dreaded, and to hasten a more fearful retribution.

The deposed King put to death.

After a series of the most cruel usage, the deposed King is barbarously murdered. I stain my pages with the names of the inhuman murderers; nor assist in giving them, even the immortality of crime. They soon followed their unhappy victim into eternity, and have received the due reward of their sin; and as they have been blotted out of the book of the living, let them be so, from the records of History. For their superiors in guilt, an unseen hand was preparing a just and speedy retribution; and from a quarter perhaps, whence they least expected it. The young King, in whose breast were reposited the spirit and ability of his grandfather, soon discovered the root of bitterness, whence numerous evils sprung up to disturb and harrass the land, and he determined to root it out. Accordingly with a rapidity which marks the avenging arm of Heaven, he surprised the guilty pair in Nottingham Castle, delivered Mortimer into the hands of Justice, to which he shortly after paid the penalty of his life; and committed the Queen to a Prison, where she spent the twenty-eight remaining years of her life.

Surely there never was a quicker succession of crime and punishment, than that which has been

recorded, all tending to shew the principles upon which the moral Government of the World is conducted; and at the same time, commanding our admiration of the incomprehensible power of HIM, "whose way is in the Sea, and whose path is in the great waters," and who in the midst of such moral perplexities, conducts his own purposes to their accomplishment.

SECTION

I.

CHAP. VIII.

CHAPTER VIII.

EDWARD III .- INVASION OF SCOTLAND -- FRANCE --SPLENDOR OF THE PERIOD-JURIDICAL IMPROVE-MENT-MANUFACTURES-ORDER OF THE GARTER INSTITUTED.

T. CHAP. VIII. A. D. 1327.

SECTION THE reign of Edward III. has been considered one of the most splendid periods of our history; and in martial glory, it well deserves the fame it Edward III. has acquired. Edward was one of those great men who have, at various periods, adorned the world. In vigour of body and mind, he has perhaps never been surpassed. His foresight was great, his judgement quick and penetrating, and the execution of his counsels rapid and enthusiastic. There was more of spirit than matter in all his movements. The thunder and lightning of his character declare his origin. He was in a peculiar manner, "ordained of God."

Soon after he had received the sword of state, SECTION and whilst he was yet CHAP. VIII.

" Imberbis Juvenis."

and under the controul of guardians, he marched Invades Scotto repulse the Scots, who had made an attack land, upon the English borders: and by his prudent and courageous conduct, gave the Scots a taste of what they were to expect, under his administra-Much to the dissatisfaction of the young King, through the interest of the Douglas party in Scotland, aided by the authority, of Mortimer and the Queen, he was induced, on the marriage of his sister with the king of Scotland to surrender all right to the sovereignty of that kingdom, and to give up various deeds of homage and fealty by which its kings had been bound. With these was delivered up that famous evidence called "Ragman Rowle" an instrument signed by the king, nobility, and prelates of Scotland; and which contained a record of all the services due to the Kings of England. But this treasonable conduct on the part of Mortimer and the Queen, for which, no doubt, they received an equivalent, became afterwards the exciting cause in the breast of the king, for an attack upon Scotland. Hence, when Baliol advanced his claim to the Scottish crown, Edward was easily induced to assist him. He contented himself, at first, with taking Berwick and establishing Baliol: but afterward, on a defeat experienced by his new ally, he entered

T. CHAP. VIII.

SECTION Scotland at two different times, in the true spirit of Edward I. with the most complete success; and would, in all human probability, have made a more complete conquest of that country, than his grandfather, had he not been diverted from his purpose, by a nobler prey.

First invasion of France.

He had always considered the crown of France as his own, in right of his mother, the only child of the late king, but who had herself been excluded by the salic law. He did not consider her exclusion as an impugnment of his own title; and therefore, considered his claim as preferable to that of the reigning king, who was only nephew of the late monarch.—So prone are the wisest of men, to make the understanding subservient to the will; and to suit their arguments to their wishes. But it may be doubtful whether Edward believed his own statement. It was plausible and suited his purpose. He made very extensive preparations, and formed a powerful league with the Emperor: and soon, with an army of forty thousand men, entered France and committed the most dreadful ravages. It was in this campaign that he assumed the arms and title of France, and affixed on his shield, the motto, "Dieu et mon droit "

The next campaign was frustrated by the mediation of Joan de Valois, sister to the king of France and mother to the queen of England. third was put an end to by the Pope. But disappointments and difficulties seemed only to inspire SECTION him with greater ardour, and he roused all his energies to prepare for a decisive blow. In the beginning of the year he held his feast of the ROUND TABLE in imitation of the renowned Arthur, and issued his letters of safe conduct to all foreign knights and their attendants, whose pleasure it should be, to attend a solemn tournament, to be given at Windsor for fourteen days.

CHAP. VIII.

After his plans were fully matured, he departed Second invafor France, attended by his son the Prince of sion. The Battle Wales—the most valiant of men, who combined of Cressy. in his character, all the excellences of humanity. His valour was only excelled by his modesty, and his modesty, surpassed only by his filial piety -His generosity like his courage, knew no bounds; and when he was the conqueror of kings, it seemed only to inspire him with greater humility. With this son, then only sixteen years of age, he entered France at the head of eighty thousand men; and with incredible rapidity and unheard of destruction appeared before the gates of Paris. In conformity with the chivalrous valour of the age, having offered battle to king Philip, on being refused, he advanced through every difficulty to the plains of Cressy, destined to give name to one of the most signal victories that ever ennobled a conqueror.-It was in this conflict that his young son performed such prodigies of valour, and turned the event of battle; whilst his father at the head of

SECTION the reserve, was the spectator of his actions. At the conclusion of the fight, when the King was CHAP. VIII. hastening to congratulate him on his victory, the young Prince eluding his embrace, fell on his knees and implored a father's blessing. Perhaps the annals of the world do not supply us with a nobler instance of filial piety.

> It was in this battle that the aged king of Bohemia disdaining to yield, fell under the irresistible attack of the Prince.—I mention this circumstance, because the three ostrich feathers worn by the Bohemian monarch, were assumed by the Prince of Wales, and by him, bequeathed to all his successors.

To this memorable battle succeeded the equally

memorable seige and capture of Calais; from

Capture of Calais.

which he embarked in triumph for England. he was not long to remain inactive. Another for-Third invasion midable expedition is embarked for France, under the sole command of the Prince; which, after a variety of splendid successes, ended in one of the most decisive victories ever achieved. The king of France and his son Philip, were both taken prisoners, together with a great number of the French nobility; and it was on this occasion, that the modesty of the Prince shone forth more illustrious, than even his valour.—For whilst the king of France and his son, with the nobles, were entertained in his own tent, he refused to sit at the table as a guest, but waited at the King's table as

one that served. As the towering cedar searches SECTION deep in the earth for the foundation of its majestic form, so the height of superior excellence is sup-CHAP. VIII. ported on the basis of deep-laid humility; and the annals of the world may again be challenged, to produce a more striking example than the case before us.

His entry into London, which was considered as a triumph by the whole nation, was conducted by him in the same characteristic manner. He laid aside every appearance of the conqueror, and whilst the king of France attired in royal magnificence, was mounted on a stately charger, the Prince in the most unassuming manner, rode at his side on a black palfrey.—But I feel I am digressing; these splendid transactions have little to do with the line of my argument.

Edward was yet in the power of his might, and he resolved to make another effort for France: and such was his extraordinary vigour, that the whole of France must have fallen under his allconquering arms, had it not pleased the Arbiter of human events suddenly to arrest his career.

The King on this occasion, had been roused to a more ample vengeance, on account of the intel-progress in France remark ligence he had received, of very extensive ravages ably checked. made by the French on the coast of Sussex. his wonted impetuosity he appeared before Paris, and offered battle to the Regent of France. The offer was rejected; and after refreshing his army

CHAP. VIII.

SECTION for a short time, he penetrated with the most unrelenting severity, into the very bowels of France —as far as Chartres and Orleans. But here his devastating course was staved. For whilst he was in the midst of his desolating triumphs, and every barrier which attempted to oppose his progress, was overthrown and dashed to the ground,—an event occurred which brought down his pride and humbled his imperious soul.—This was an unusually terrific storm of thunder, and rain, and hail; the effects of which, filled the whole army with consternation. The King himself, was not exempt from the general dismay—he considered it the voice of God. Nor was it the result of a mere superstitious dread. The fury of the tempest destroved more than six thousand of his horses and more than one thousand of his men. It was not irrational in the King to consider it as a Divine visitation: nor is it inconsistent with our refined notions of philosophy, to acknowledge the decency and propriety of his conduct. He fell prostrate to the earth—humbled himself under the "mighty hand of God"-adored his universal Providence, and vowed to grant to France, that peace which she had so humbly and earnestly solicited.

The King returns home.

The Divine purposes, through the instrumentality of the King of England, were now accomplished with respect to France; and its terrible scourge returned to his own land: whilst to that long distracted country, a wise and understanding Prince* was raised up to mollify and heal its SECTION wounds.

of the country.

But Edward was one of those gifted persons, no CHAP. VIII. less wise and prudent in peace, than valiant and Internal state successful in war. During his splendid achievements on the continent, he did not sustain with a feeble hand the sceptre of government in his own country; but restrained the vicious and punished the wicked. "He held not the sword in vain." The peaceful and industrious had the most ample protection; and thus, whilst the public tranquillity was preserved—the arts and manufactures, trade and commerce, flourished to a very great extent. One circumstance, recorded in history, will serve to shew the great wealth imported into the kingdom at this time.—Sir Henry Pickard a merchant of London is stated to have given an entertainment at his own table, to the four kings of England, Scotland, France and Cyprus, attended by their sons and the chief Nobility.—An honour, not often coveted by, or conferred upon a subject. No doubt these were, prosperous times for England, consolidating the basis of her future wealth. But pride and luxury came in the train of prosperity and conquest. Foreign modes of dress and furniture, and especially those of the French, found their way into the establishments of the rich. Perhaps, in these respects it was a season of improvement.—But the historian's page informs

^{*} Charles the wise.

CHAP. VIII.

SECTION us, that it was not without injury to the morals of the people. Indeed it is impossible for the human mind, to withstand the temptations which arise, from the influx of wealth and luxury. This deteriorating principle in human nature, was long recognised and acted upon by the rude forefathers of Europe. The Suevi were not the only nation who prohibited the temptation.—" Vinum ad se omnino importari non sinunt, quod ea re ad laborem ferendum remollescere homines, atque effæminari arbitrantur.* "

The nation chastised

The English nation full of prosperity and riches, and giving way to its accompanying evils, broke loose from the restraints of virtue and propriety for the people knew little of those of religion—and prepared for themselves a speedy and righteous chastisement.† The plague which had begun in Turkey and in its course, visited Italy and France, broke out with great fury in England; and filled the whole country from one end to the other, with mourning and lamentation.

* Cæs. be bell. Gall. lib. 4. Cap. 2.

† If this statement—that the Plague was a punishment for the moral turpitude of its people—be considered an unfounded assertion; the writer has only to observe, that as he believes the Bible to be a revelation from God, and finds from that source, that the pestilence is one of those peculiar methods by which the Almighty Governor punishes the world; he is bound to consider such a chastisement as proceeding immediately from his hand. But apart from scripture what shall we make of such direful calamities? Can they be generated in certain fixed principles and by a certain process of nature? That is, must they inevitably arise, and without interference, in the

We have to refer to this period that beneficial SECTION change in our judicial proceedings, by which it I.

CHAP. VIII.

direct working of the material system of the universe? Even \ then, the principle must have been inserted in the primæval plan, by the Supreme Architect. But it would impeach his wisdom could it be supposed, that he had put this principle into the construction of the universal system, without some grand design. The question is: What is that design? answer PUNISHMENT. All the irregular but necessary actions of nature are beneficial. The tempest and the earthquake have their advantage in the material world. But this action of the pestilence is on the rational being. Must it not bear a moral aspect? It is true; it acts on his material part, and may be asked, may it not be to purge and thin the dense ranks of men? We might allow this, without touching the argument: for, where men are the densest, in general they are the most wicked and ripest for punishment. But then the pestilence must, under those circumstances, destroy the most, where there are the most. But this we do not see to be the case. England has just been visited with the pestilence; * and so has France. London has a million more inhabitants than Parisbut the disparity in fatal cases on the side of Paris, has been prodigious. It is not therefore intended to act as a material, but as a moral purge. Never was the nature of a pestilential disease, so accurately and scientifically examined, as in the present visitation; and the most learned of the inquisitors have agreed, that the disease is not propagated by contagion or infection—but that the impregnating miasma only takes effect in certain cases; in which they affirm there is a predisposing cause.—But what is that predisposition? To this no certain answer can be returned, except that in general it is found to exist in the poor, the vicious, and the dissolute. What do we want more? The argument need not be pursued. But it must be borne in mind that when we speak of the pestilence as a Divine visitation and punishment, we speak of it as a national, not as an individual punishment. It is not meant to imply, that those who are cut off by the pestilence were more wicked, than those who remain. By no means. times the most virtuous individuals are sacrificed. But this is a still greater national calamity. The state is deprived of its best citizens. Families are bereaved of their supporters. Neighbourhoods of their benefactors. Mourning and lamentation, and woc, are propagated throughout the land.

^{*} Asiatic Cholera, A. D. 1832.

SECTION was enacted that the PLEADINGS, which before had been carried on in French, should for the CHAP. VIII. future be conducted in English.

Manufactures

It was also through the politic regulations of founded by the King, that a firm foundation was laid for the unrivalled wool-manufacture of England. protected the trade, by prohibitory statutes, and encouraged it, by fostering laws. He sent for foreign artists, and granted them various immunities. Removed the staple of wool from the Flemings, and appointed several places in his own country, for that purpose; and enacted various laws for their regulation. Edward may be said to be the FOUNDER OF THE WOOLLEN MANU-FACTURE OF ENGLAND. And from this circumstance alone, he might be considered one of the greatest benefactors of his country. By his extraordinary abilities, he raised his country to the highest reputation in martial glory; and established his affairs at home, in such a manner, that honor and riches flowed in upon his people, from every side. The annual tribute which had been imposed upon the nation by the Pope, in the reign of John, he caused by Parliamentary enactments, to be finally abolished. So great was his reputation abroad, that he was, at length, raised to the highest dignity in Europe, and was unanimously elected Emperor, by the Germanic body - an honor, however, which he prudently resolved to decline. It may be remarked that his son Edward the Black Prince, was the first individual SECTION that ever bore the title of Duke, in England. So CHAP. VIII. that Cornwall is the most ancient Dukedom in this country.

But great and illustrious as was this mighty The King Prince; and accomplishing in his day, the mo-himself visited with affliction. mentous purposes of the Great Author of society, -possessing too, those great qualities, which we invariably find in the breast of the peculiar instruments of heaven—an undaunted courage and well ordered mind; yet, it relieved him not from the common infirmities, nor even the more malignant evils, attached to mortality. A variety of events occurred in his latter end, to disturb and harrass his mind; and to bring down his grey hairs with sorrow to the grave. Charles the Wise of France, was more than a match for him in the arts of negotiation; and could stoop to stratagems of diplomacy, to which the straight-forward mind of the old King was a stranger. The English affairs declined in France; and he had the mortification of beholding all his conquests in that country, wasting away, and

" Like the baseless fabric of a vision Leave not a wreck behind."

In the midst of this, he had the anguish of witnessing his beloved son, the Prince of Wales, daily languishing before his eyes, and preparing for an early grave. Nor was this all. His excellent and beloved Queen Phillippa, yields to the

long after, her mighty son, the bravest of the

SECTION last enemy and is consigned to the tomb. Nor CHAP. VIII.

brave, follows, an easy prey to that impartial and relentless foe. The Black Prince died in the forty-sixth year of his age, to the inexpressible grief of the whole kingdom; and indeed, his very enemies, could not forbear displaying that respect to his memory, which shewed the universal estimation in which he was held. His funeral obsequies were solemnized at Paris, in the presence of the King, and the greatest part of the prelates and clergy of France. So sure is real worth of obtaining its due meed of respect and admiration. These events made sensible inroads upon the constitution of the King, which was already giving way under accumulated pressure. After the death of his son he seemed no longer to live: and though the noise of Wicliff and his doctrines made no little stir, yet he does not appear to have taken any active part in the proceedings. In the midst of the persecutions raised by the Papal church against this learned and excellent man, whilst the wieliff, and King was indifferent, Wicliff was protected by the King's son, the Duke of Lancaster, but more, from the spirit of party, than from a sense of the justness of his cause. But let this be as it may, this period must be regarded as the origin of the REFORMATION, the dawn of a brighter day, after a long and tedious night,—a night of error, of falsehood and death. The true light of christianity,

the reformation.

after being veiled for centuries, was allowed to SECTION dart a bright gleam over the land, by which many Chap. VIII. were roused from their deathful slumbers, to taste the reviving influence and life-giving power of the gospel.

The last act of the King was the celebration of Order of the the feast of St. George at Windsor, where he Garter. founded the ORDER OF THE GARTER, at which he bestowed on his Grandson (Richard II.) the honour of Knighthood, the only thing which could not descend to him, in the patrimony of honor.

King's death.

Soon after, gradually sinking, he expired, in the sixty fifth year of his age, under circumstances the most forlorn and even dishonourable. When the last, sad hour approached, rebbed and pillaged by his concubine, even to the rings upon his fingers, he was deserted. His other domestics followed her detestable example. His very councillors forsook him in his dying agony; and a poor priest of the household, happening to pass the chamber door, came to his assistance and administered the last consolations of religion to his expiring Sovereign. What a striking lesson for Princes! for all men!

What is man "whose breath is in his nostrils? for wherein is he to be accounted of ?*"

^{*} Isaiah, chap. ii. verse 22.

CHAPTER IX.

RICHARD II.—CIVIL DISSENSIONS—GROWTH OF PROTESTANTISM.

I.
CHAP. IX.
Richard II.
A, D. 1377.

NEVER was a Prince left in possession of a Kingdom, under more discouraging circumstances than Richard II. Under the last reign, the mind and feeling of the nation, had assumed a very marked character; and become impatient of controul, unless under a very firm and resolute hand. wealth had been amassed to a very great degree. Pride and ostentation engrossed the minds of many, and the spirit of enterprize existed to a romantic extent. The lower orders were ignorant, oppressed, The King was a child; and his and brutal. uncles, men of high character, great ability, and of entensive power. The Dukes of Lancaster and Gloucester are the most prominent in History. The former, was munificent, imperious, ambitious. The latter, was the most splendid man of his day

Снар. ІХ.

—He was wise, disinterested and patriotic, in the SECTION The former, was the inbest sense of the word. strument of bringing the reign to a disastrous issue. The latter, would have saved it, had his counsels been attended to. But unfortunately, the education of the young King was placed in a great measure, in the hands of the Duke of Lancaster; who, it is to be feared, intentionally, violated this important duty, and gave up his royal pupil, at a very early age, to licentious indulgences; and left him, to be surrounded by those, who instilled into his mind false ideas of honor, and of the kingly character in general.

In the mean time, the government was conducted in an arbitrary manner, but without vigour; and it appears to me, that from the first, the Duke of Lancaster used his endeavours, to throw the King's government into discredit. Supplies were required-taxes levied, but nothing was achieved. Those demands, without any adequate return, became irksome to the nation, and a general feeling of discontent prevailed. It is unnecessary for me to recapitulate the facts connected with the insurrection of Wat Tyler; nor, need I dwell on that more extensive and organized Plot which followed Jack Straw's in its train, and in which the views of the mal-Rebellions. contents were truly desperate; aiming at the overthrow of all the institutions of the country—the destruction of the King and the Nobility, and the division of the lands. The spirited conduct of the

Government

Wat Tyler's and

I. Снар. ІХ.

SECTION King upon the former occasion is well known, and discovered the indigenous courage of his fam-But it was almost the only brilliant action of , ilv. his life; for the vicious indulgences, and pernicious maxims of his companions which had not yet quenched the innate vigour of his mind, soon overpowered every better feeling, plunged him into the most perplexing difficulties, and sunk him at length, into irretrievable ruin!

Duke of Lancaster's exploits.

During Wat Tyler's insurrection, the Duke of Lancaster, who was a chief object of popular resentment, contrived to keep himself out of sight; and escaped the fury of that cruel storm, which levelled many a noble head.—During a great part of this reign, we find the Parliament occupied in granting supplies to maintain the Duke of Lancaster in his negotiations with France and Scotland, in which he displayed great ostentation, without effecting the least particle of good for the community.—A still greater expenditure was lavished in supporting his claim to the throne of Castile. Vast sums were spent in Spain and Portugal; many brilliant actions were performed by the Duke, but of no advantage to the state; and so far injurious, by laying deep the foundation for popular discontent.

The King's prodigality.

From the King, nothing could be expected to retrieve the disorders of the state. He was engaged in one continued round of pleasure and dissipation; and in this manner, the supply-money which was not squandered by the Duke of Lancaster in frivolous negotiations and unproductive expedi- SECTION tions, was dissipated by the King. The genius of the court was taxed, to invent new schemes of Chap. IX. amusement for its luxurious master. The royal mind, totally unfitted for the cares of government, was abandoned to the mercy of his passions and of his parasites. The sad effects of such a system soon became apparent. These evil advisers of the king, by their insolent and pernicious conduct, made themselves obnoxious to the people, and became the objects of general detestation. De la Pole the chancellor, was arraigned before Parliament, and found guilty of high crimes and misdemeanors; but through the favor of the Monarch, he was merely ejected from office. Robert de Vere, was another of these favourites against whom the indignation of Parliament was directed. -But all to no purpose. There was no stability Devoted to in the King; he recalled his chancellor, and his favorites. shewed still greater kindness to De Vere, whom he created Duke of Ireland. Had this devotion been the union of friendship-such conduct might have called forth our sympathy; but it was the combination of wickedness. Every future act that resulted from their counsels, was a proof of the corrupt source from whence it originated. But all this was over-ruled; and we shall find every event leading to a further developement of that EXEMPLAR CONSTITUTION, which it was pleasing the Almighty Arbiter to raise up in Britain.

So little was the true spirit of the monarchy SECTION I. understood, that the Parliament asserted the power Снар. ІХ. of deposition as their right; and so little was the

Patriotism of supremacy of the legislature established, that the the Duke of King, by his sole authority, abrogated the acts of Parliament.* But every step that the King and his advisers took, seemed to hasten the crisis for the speedy settlement of these great principles in government. The Duke of Gloucester the King's uncle, was foremost in maintaining the rights and liberties of the nation, against the machinations of the King and his ministers; and on this account, he became the object both of their dread and their hatred. Crime, once originated in the human breast, has no limit to its turpitude.—In appalling verification of this fact, it is recorded, that with the King's consent, these ministers formed the design of inviting the Duke of Gloucester and other obnoxious noblemen, to an entertainment, which was to be given at the house of a certain citizen of London, and of murdering them in cold blood.— Happily, however, the impious deed was frustrated, through a timely notice received by the illustrious duke.—The effect of this discovery on the public mind, may easily be conceived.

The conduct of these wicked men was every day, Fatal results. laying deeper the foundation of their master's over-

^{*} It appears scarcely credible that the limits of the executive and legislative powers were so undefined, that all the Judges of the land, gave it as their opinion, that the King might LEGALLY disannul the decrees of Parliament.

throw, and of their own ruin: upon which, how- SECTION ever, was destined to rise, in greater enlargement and stability, the structure of the state. The Duke of Ireland, under the fostering indulgence of the sovereign, grew so insolent and audacious, that he proceeded to the divorce of his wife Phillippa, grand-daughter of Edward III. a lady of most accomplished beauty, and elevated virtue; and to outrage the country to the utmost, he raised to her place, a Bohemian woman of mean descent, who was attached to the Queen's train. The King was too much the slave of his own passions, to be moved by this infamy: but the Duke of Gloucester took high umbrage at it, and regarded it as a daring insult upon the royal family. Matters therefore soon came to a crisis. The King and his ministers endeavoured to circumvent and destroy the opposition Lords, a line of conduct which united them more firmly; and led them at last to stand upon their guard, at the head of a formidable army.

In the contest which followed, the Duke of The nobles Ireland was defeated, and saved himself by an ig-take up arms. nominious flight; but shortly after, as a solitary exile, died at Louvain in Flanders. The King was obliged, for the present, to submit to the terms of the confederate lords; which were truly mild, insisting only upon the immediate dismission of his unworthy favourites. But the Parliament was

1. CHAP. IX.

afterwards more severe, and made dreadful havoc SECTION amongst their lives and property. I. Снар. ІХ.

All these things were transacted before the king was declared to be of age. After he assumed the reins of government in a more formal manner, and appointed exclusively his own ministers, the same infatuated course was pursued; and the utmost prodigality prevailed in every department of the Every thing was now tending to a rapid issue, and the course of events every day taking a more decisive turn. Evil counsels prevailed—disorders were multiplied—and discontent increased.

Lollards or crease.

This era, fruitful as it was in civil strife, must Protestants in- be remarked as the date of the increase of the Lollards, who had been gradually springing up, from the doctrines and teaching of the celebrated Wicliff. These were the first fruits of the REFOR-MATION, and if we are to judge from the persecutions instituted against them, their number even at this time, must have given considerable alarm to the Papal Church. We are willing to grant to many of their persecutors the fullest claim to sincerity, and to allow that in so doing, they thought they were doing God, service: but it only shews us the fearful apostacy of the human heart; that in a church of Apostolic origin, and professedly built upon their doctrines, its members should so far have departed from the truth, as not to possess so much of the SPIRIT of Christianity as to restrain them from acts that would have disgraced a synod of infernal spirits. I do not use this ex- SECTION pression for the sake of making a degrading com-Снар. ІХ. parison; it is degrading—but, in sincerity, I could not find another so suitable.—And who, that considers the barbarous methods resorted to, for the extermination of those ingenuous and free born men, and in many cases, eminent examples of christian excellence, can for a moment doubt of the fitness of the comparison? I would not visit the whole crime of the tortures and murders of this time, to the then living agents of the church of Rome, but to the false and corrupted system of ages-to the blindness and wickedness of human nature. We cannot help commiserating the persecutors, more than the persecuted: for with respect to the former, their triumph such as it was, was brief, and they are now suffering the reward of their evil deeds - whilst the latter, by their constancy to the death, in many instances, served to discover the title thay had received to the fruition of the life eternal.

Whilst religious persecution was raging with unrelenting severity, civil disorders were on the the Duke of increase; and in the progress of the political tragedy, the noble minded Duke of Gloucester was trepanned, in the stratagem of which, the KING was the principal actor. Their unhappy victim was sent to the castle of Calais, where he was shortly after secretly murdered. After this work of death, the King and his ministers, by bribery

Снар. ІХ.

SECTION and threats gained an ascendancy in the ensuing Parliament. Many of the confederate nobles fell into their merciless hands. All things became venal; and crime enjoyed an uncontrolled sway. The King by the murder of one of his uncles and the death of the other, which happened about the same time, finding himself free from all controul, gave himself up to every species of extravagant indulgence. The nobility followed his example, and riot and luxury prevailed. The national character declined. The energies of the country were enfeebled; its commerce fettered, and its power weakened. Extortion and arbitrary exaction increased on the part of the government; and the nation seemed to have reverted back, both in its liberties and constitution. But the King was fast approaching the end of his imprudent career. He had determined upon an expedition to Ireland. Before his departure, he exacted heavy fines from seventeen whole counties, which ten years before had joined with the Duke of Gloucester, although a general pardon had been granted. He also declared the Duke of Northumberland guilty of high treason, because he was not present to attend him; although his presence was absolutely necessary on the borders of Scotland.

Retribution awaits the King.

But these were his last inconsiderate acts: During his absence the exiled Hereford, now, on his father's death Duke of Laucaster, arrived by invitation in England, with a very slender

armament, but which in a short time, amounted to SECTION an irresistible force. His progress towards London, was marked with demonstrations of joy by all ranks of people, and he was universally hailed as a DELIVERER. When the King heard the tidings, the native courage of his family seemed to revive in him, and he determined, immediately, to embark his troops for England. But he was detained in Ireland, by the advice of his friends, till it was too late, and the authority of Henry was paramount. On his arrival, therefore, he was obliged to submit to his once banished subject, but now, triumphant rival; and the sad sequel of his story is too well known to need recapitulation here.

The whole of this reign is pregnant with instruction, both of a private and public nature. In Richard II. we behold a youth of the finest natural parts, ruined in education, and blasted in his moral powers by early indulgence and flattery. In a political point of view, turbulent as things were, and tragic as the whole reign was, yet we cannot help observing that the social system progres-An attempt was made by the executive to sed. become absolute, and the attempt appeared to be successful. But when it seemed to be predominant-it was suddenly arrested in its career, and the guilty contriver, at once received the punishment of his crimes, and the overthrow of his purposes.

Снар. ІХ.

I.
CHAP. IX.

The emphatic language of the ancient patriarch is strikingly applicable to this unfortunate and guilty monarch. "The light shall be dark in his tabernacle; and his candle shall be put out with him: The steps of his strength shall be straightened, and his own counsel shall cast him down. He shall be driven from light into darkness and chased out of the world. He shall neither have son nor nephew among his people; and none remaining in his habitation.*

^{*} Book of Job. xviii. chap.

THEOCRATIC PHILOSOPHY, &c.

SECTION II.—CHAPTER I.

ACCESSION OF THE HOUSE OF LANCASTER, HENRY IV. -INVASION OF THE FEUDAL SYSTEM-AND THE DAWN OF RELIGIOUS PROTESTANTISM.

WE are now approaching the period of the first civil wars-a period full of calamity to our forefathers, and pregnant with instruction to ourselves. The appearances in the moral world, are as much the effects of certain causes as those we find in the material system.—The sultry calm prepares House of Lanthe way for the raging storm.—The fierce tempest is exhausted by its own violence. The intense sun-beams whilst they dry up the parched glebe, exhale the showers which are intended to fructify it. -The law which rules the moral world is as striking and permanent. Vice invariably produces misery. Passion is punished by its own excesses; and a course of depravity is followed by a train of

SECTION II. Снар. І.

Accession of

Henry IV. A. D. 1399.

11. Снар. І.

SECTION evils, and long remedial inflictions. Nor are these effects less observable in whole communities than in individual persons. The mighty Being who has impressed the general law upon the nature of things, has given it an efficiency which no policy can avert, no power resist. Indeed, it derives its authority from His own attributes; and is, by consequence, as certain in its operations, as it is irresistible in its power.

Duke of Lancaster and Archbishop Arundel ban. ard II.

The title of Henry IV. Duke of Lancaster, to the crown, was not constitutionally good, but he seemed inevitably seated on the English throne; ished by Rich- and, whoever considers the depraved and hopeless character of Richard II.—the events which immediately succeeded, and those which followed in the train of Henry, will be struck with the circumstances which led to his elevation. Henry, whilst Duke of Hereford, had been banished by Richard for a certain term of years: but on the death of his father, his banishment was rendered perpetual, and his estates were confiscated—an act represented by historians as founded in jealousy, and, dictated by rapacity.—At all events, it was arbitrary and unjust. Arundel archbishop of Canterbury, had also suffered exile under the same monarch: and became the chief instrument in bringing about the present change in the affairs of England. Their injuries brought them into public view, and at the same time, put into their breasts the desire of revenge.

II. CHAP. 1.

To these distinguished individuals, the discon- SECTION tented in England turned their eyes; and the Archbishop was made the negociator between them and the duke of Lancaster. But the duke was difficult to move. He was the most cautious and prudent of men; and, if left to himself, would never have attempted glory which was to be won by hazard.

At length, however, excited by the representations of the archbishop, and emboldened by the invitations of some of the English nobility, at the very juncture, when Richard's exactions and tyrranny were become odious, and he himself in Ireland, he set sail from France; and with a train of not more than eighty persons, hovered about the coasts of England. His little fleet was not more the sport of the wind and the waves, than his own mind was, of doubt and indecision—yet as the pilot keeps the helm steady to its point, so Henry's mind did not lose sight of the object he had in view, and, at length, he ventured to land, under the sole pretension of laying claim to his patrimony.

'The stratagem took. The king's ministers prepared to resist his advance, but the people refused encouraged to to act, and alledged their unwillingness to fight land, with very against a person, the descendant of one of their inadequate kings, and who had been so unjustly treated .-From the manifestation of this feeling, which arose spontaneous from untutored breasts, followed the success of Henry IV. His party was strength-

invade

II. Снар. І.

SECTION ened and the prospect of a throne opened before him, whilst the friends of Richard were disheartened and fled. But the king himself was not intimidated, and would have hastened as we have seen. with vigour to support his falling throne, had he not been deterred by the infatuated advice of his Everything facilitated the advance counsellors. of his rival.—He was received at London amidst the deafening shouts of the multitude, and from thence hastened with such rapidity to meet the king at Bristol, that he might have used the concise and elegant language of Cæsar, with even greater truth than that conqueror: "veni-vidi-vici. ""

> The meeting between Henry and Richard is so illustrative of human character, in the overbearing insolence of prosperity on the one hand, and the forced submission of humbled pride on the other, that I must venture to insert it as given by historians.

> The interview was at Flint Castle, where Henry introduced himself to the King, who on seeing him enter, said: "Cousin of Lancaster you are welcome." To which the Duke replied. "I am come rather sooner than you appointed me, because the fame of your people is, that for these twenty-one years you have governed ill and with rigour, on which account they are much dissatisfied; but if Heaven please, I will help to govern

^{*} I came—I saw—I conquered.

better for the future." To which the king an- SECTION swered.—"Cousin, if it pleases you, it pleaseth 115. "

II. CHAP. I.

The rightful

Never was an enterprise, attended with such important results, undertaken with so little prepa-heir is set aside ration and design. The originators of it, appear to have left the scheme to its own workings .- It seemed to gather the material it fed upon, as it advanced.—It succeeded, and Henry IV. ascended the throne of England. The change was so sudden that the majority of the people were taken by surprise; and many were hurried by their enthusiasm into measures, which they had not power to controul. If Richard was a bad man and a bad king, Henry was a usurper whilst Edmund Mortimer, Earl of Marche, descended from an elder son * of Edward III. was alive. The people in the hour of intoxication did not think of this: but the circumstance of Henry offering himself as the avenger of their wrongs, was eagerly hailed; and they hurried without reflection, to support him.

Our passions are our worst counsellors, and when we act upon their suggestions, we are mor- pation, ally sure to suffer. It was remarkably verified in the present instance. All the parties engaged in these transactions were highly culpable. The duke of Lancaster was possessed with the most abject revenge and the most flagrant ambition,

* Lionel, the third son of the duke of Lancaster was from John the fourth son.

II.

SECTION which overthrew in his breast all the principles of justice and religion. The archbishop Arundel, CHAP. I., the more enterprising of the two, was actuated by a highly vindictive spirit, and urged by motives as base as the principal actor. The people were impelled by an unreasonable and reckless desire for change; and acted with their proverbial incon-It was a general phrensy. Its influence pervaded all ranks of society; and the bishop of Carlisle was the only solitary individual who lifted up his voice in Parliament, against the violent and precipitate measures of the day. But nothing could stop the current in its course,—Richard is deposed and Henry becomes king, as Hume says, "nobody knew how, or wherefore!" All was triumph and rejoicing with the prevailing party, and the ambition of Henry was gratified in the possession of a throne. But an unseen hand, whilst it was conducting these conflicting elements to a benevolent issue, as it respected the social system, was preparing a long series of punishments for the individual actors in these disgraceful scenes, as well as for the nation at large.

The lawful

The murder of Richard began the fatal tragedy. King murdered In it, he expiated to society, the murder of his uncle, the illustrious and patriotic Duke of Gloucester, affording another infallible proof, that the declaration of the King of kings cannot be evaded, -" Whoso sheddeth man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed * "

^{*} Gen. chap. ix. 6.

II. Снар. І.

The throne of Henry established as it was on SECTION such restless elements, could not long repose These hidden fires soon began to disin quiet. cover themselves, and Henry had scarcely gained the seat of pre-eminence, when a formidable conspiracy was organized by some of the first nobles of the land. It was conducted with the utmost secresy, cemented by the most deadly hatred, and strengthened by the most inviolable oaths. dark and deadly as it was, it was not to prevail. Purposes not theirs', were to be answered. plan of the conspirators was, to propose that a tournament between the Earls of Huntingdon and Salisbury, should be holden at Oxford, to which the King was to be invited as judge; and it was resolved that during the sitting, whilst all were intent on the games, he should be assailed and murdered, together with his train.

The parties were even now assembled, and the King and his court were expected on the succeed-against the King frustrated None of the conspirators were wanting except the Earl of Rutland, and conjecture was busy at work as to the cause of his absence. Earl on his way to the place of rendezvous, could not allow himself to pass the house of his father, the Duke of York. Whilst they were at dinner, the duke espied the label of the document, drawn up by the conspirators, hanging out of his son's pocket, and judging it to be something extraordinary, forced it from him. Having reviewed the

II. CHAP. I.

SECTION contents, and finding his son's name with the names and seals of the conspirators, he was filled with surprise, alarm and resentment. He rose from table and without a moment's delay, rode off to Windsor, determined to lay the matter before the King. The Earl of Rutland, finding it impossible to stay his father from his purpose, resolved to make a desperate effort for his life. He rode to Windsor another way; and, outriding his father, arrived first at the Castle, threw himself at the King's feet, confessed the whole conspiracy, and implored pardon for his offence. The king passed his word, provided, what he had related should be found true. By this time the Duke of York had arrived, who immediately put the traitorous document into the King's hand.

> On the other side, the conspirators assured by the absence of Rutland, and the non-appearance of the King, that their plot was discovered, were hurried into the most desperate measures. variety of stratagems and falsehoods, they contrived to raise an army of thirty thousand men: but they were preparing for themselves a righteous and swift destruction, the due reward of their many enormities. The manner in which it was accomplished was extraordinary.--The leaders fell before they encountered the enemy—their army was routed without a conflict.

Their treason was signally punished.

The Conspirators were encamped near Reading. The Lords took up their lodging in the neighbouring village, whilst the army lay encamped in SECTION the fields. The people of the village in which the Earls of Kent and Salisbury, chiefs of the faction, had taken up their quarters, exasperated by the false reports of the conspirators, surrounded the house where they lodged, and made a desperate attack upon it. Their assault was resisted, with effect, for several hours by the brave inmates. But by an act, which was undertaken to save them, their fate was sealed. A certain Priest with the intention of diverting the attack, set fire to another part of the village, which proved a double calamity. For the army of the conspirators perceiving the flame, and supposing it to be the sign of the King's approach, fled with precipitation; whilst, the town people enfuriated to the utmost degree of madness, resolved to quench it with the blood of their oppressors. Thus perished the Earls of Salisbury and Kent.* The Duke of Gloucestor died on the scaffold. The Earl of Huntingdon escaped to the sea, but was driven back, again and again; and, when taken, was conveyed, as it were, by accident, to the late Duke of Gloucester's house, where his head was struck off, the vengeance of Heaven meeting him in the very precincts of that nobleman's house, to whose murder he had been instrumental! The civil blood shed in this conspiracy was immense. it was only the first of that blood, that was to flow

* Half brother to Richard.

Снар. І.

II. Спар. І.

SECTION for sixty years, in the quarrel between the houses of York and Lancaster.—So easy is it, for men to take a wrong and hasty step, so difficult is it to return.

> The minds of the people were diverted from this fearful tragedy, by a military expedition into Scot-The king of that country, had denounced war against Henry, unless he would deliver up lord Dunbar earl of Marche, who had fled to the English court, for protection. Henry waited not for the attack, but at the head of a well ordered army, penetrated into the heart of the country and committed extensive ravages.

Rise of Owen Glendour.

In the mean time Owen Glendour, the Welsh chieftain began his career of martial exploits, by which he has gained for himself the character of a bold and perilous adventurer in a hopeless cause; and, whilst we are tempted to admire the impetuous courage and romantic valour of the man, we cannot, but lament the blind and reckless fury, which only tended, as far as he was concerned, to plunge his country into greater evil and calamity.— Glendour had made a successful inroad into Herefordshire, and in a battle with the retainers of Earl of Marche, took that nobleman prisoner.

Takes the prisoner.

> Henry was secretly pleased at the event; and the indulgence of this ungenerous feeling, well nigh proved fatal to his throne. But before this had time to ripen into its fruits, he was assaulted

from many other quarters, by which his life was SECTION greatly endangered. By his caution and vigorous Снар. І. policy, every attempt against his authority was defeated.

A still more

Meanwhile, the earl of Northumberland, his brother, the earl of Worcester, a man of a violent and formidable conmalicious temper, and Hotspur his son, were daily spiracy. fanning the flames of ambition and revenge in each other's breasts. These fiery spirits, at length, determining to overthrow that throne, which they had been so instrumental in raising,—entered into a firm confederacy, in which Owen Glendour was One cause which they alleged, was included. the lukewarmness of Henry with respect to the captivity of the earl of Marche, and another, was the murder of king Richard. But how little these motives swayed their minds, and how much they were urged on, by the most flagrant ambition and ungovernable pride, was manifest, from the circumstance, that their ultimate design was the establishment of their own power and the partition of the kingdom!

A tripartite agreement was drawn up, signed and sealed by the conspirators, in which all south England, was secured to the earl of Marche, north England, beyond the Trent, to Northumberland, and Wales was to be the portion of Glendour. But England happily, was not to be parcelled out; and firm as was the compact, and warlike as were its framers, it was not only destined to fail, but

SECTION by bringing destruction on their own heads, to carry on the principle which was now at work, for 11. CHAP. I. the aggrandisement of England.

Which fails

Their armies were already in motion, when the of its intention. Earl of Northumberland was seized with a sudden fit of sickness, which entirely disqualified him from taking the field. This circumstance, no doubt, was one grand cause of their subsequent failure. The impetuous Hotspur and the malignant Worcester, pushed forward and encamped before Shrewsbury, expecting the junction of Glendour with his forces: but before this could be accomplished, the vigilant Henry came upon them. A desperate and sanguinary battle ensued.—Prodigies of valour were performed, and Douglas, who was with the conspirators and whose portion was to be Berwick, was seen everywhere like a wild beast, roaming the bloody field in search of Henry. But the king escaped through the precaution of having other individuals clothed with the royal garb—an honour which that day, proved fatal to many a valiant knight. The Prince of Wales, fifteen years of age, fought in this battle; and gave signal proofs of that courage which was afterwards to be so signalized. The king, as he was everywhere foremost in danger, so was he pre-eminent in valour. It is said, that thirty-six of the noblest and bravest in the field, fell by his hand alone. But Hotspur in bold defiance of death, and in search of the same prey as Douglas, rode every

II. Снар. 1.

where in the field; and, whilst he lived, the battle SECTION raged; but, at length, an arrow from an unknown hand, pierced his heart and put an end, at once, to his hopes, and the resistance of his troops. did he fall alone: with him, lay stretched on the field, two hundred of the bravest knights of Cheshire and five thousand men.

Douglas—the Earl of Worcester—the baron of Kinderton, and Sir Richard Vernon were taken prisoners.—The first, agreeably to the chivalry of the day, because he was no subject, and had the honor of unhorsing the King, was set at liberty; but the others were executed. The Earl of Northumberland was deprived of his estates, the Conspirawhich were, however, through the clemency of the king, soon after restored to him. But nothing could soften the implacability of this nobleman or avert his ruin.

Scarcely was this rebellion dispersed, when it Serlo's plot was succeeded by a plot which was contrived by of counterfeiting King Rich-Serlo, who had formerly been a gentleman of Ri- ard. chard's bed-chamber. He employed an impostor to personate Richard; and by framing a seal similar to that of the deceased King, he wrote letters in his name, and ensnared many persons of eminence, to unite in a scheme for his restoration.— But the whole was frustrated; and Serlo when brought to execution, confessed that he was one of the persons who had murdered the Duke of Gloucester in the dungeons of Calais!!

SECTION II.

Снар. І.

of York's conspiracy.

Another conspiracy soon after followed, which we should be tempted to pass over in silence, were it not for the purpose of bringing, another of the Archbishop murderers of the Duke of Gloucester, before the reader.—This was no other than the Archbishop of York, who confederated with Mowbray the Earl Marshal and the unfortunate Earl of Northumberland, in another attempt against the throne of Henry. But like every other, it came to nothing and brought ruin upon its promoters. The Archbishop of York was executed—affording the first instance on record, of an ecclesiastic suffering capital punishment.—Northumberland fled into Wales, where Owen Glendour aided by the French, still maintained his ground against Prince Henry, to whom the conduct of this war had been committed. He was however, soon afterwards reduced to the greatest difficulties; and so closely pursued and harrassed day and night, that it was said he died by famine !—His death gave peace to Wales.

Northamberland dies.

The ever restless Northumberland intent upon his own ruin, left his retreat once more, to try his fortune in arms, against his Sovereign; and soon after, with the Lord Bardolph perished in conflict with the sheriff of Yorkshire; in his death bringing to a period, one of the most illustrious feudal families in England.

Grievous pestilence.

The unhappy country torn asunder by these intestine strifes, was yet allowed no respite from punishment. It was visited by a pestilence which destroyed prodigious numbers of people; the extent SECTION of which may in some measure be judged of, from the circumstance that in London alone, there died more than thirty thousand persons.

Religious

And to add to these horrors, the Roman Hierarchy alarmed at the spread of the doctrines of Wicliff, Persecutions. and the rapid increase of his followers, armed itself with the most formidable power for their extirpation. Arundel was a consummate persecutor. He possessed the most deadly hatred and the most determined opposition to the new doctrines, under the attractive garb of mildness and candour. He was high in the favour and counsels of Henry; and by his influence, every power was obtained for the coercion of their unhappy victims. Every thing seemed to threaten a dreadful storm. It was indeed a portentous moment; and a dreadful struggle was about to ensue between the powers of light and darkness. The latter for the moment, prevailed: but amidst the horrors of this long night, the distant dawn appeared.

The rage of this persecution first fell upon William Sawtrey, a London clergyman, who expired of Sawtrey. in the flames of martyrdom, affording another instance of the hateful intolerance of human nature. His name stands first in the record of PRO-TESTANT Martyrs. Though so far removed from our own times, his blood nourished the sacred tree of our religious liberties; and we are called upon, to admire his moral courage and Christian

Martyrdom A. D. 1400.

SECTION boldness; and to trace that Divine hand, who by such an extraordinary exhibition of evil, was in-II. CHAP. I. , tending to effect our deliverance.

And of John Badby.

He was soon followed in his triumphant course, by an uneducated artificer, of the name of Badby, whose name must also be recorded as one of the primitive Martyrs of Protestantism. His protestation against Transubstantiation is sufficient to be recorded here.--"After the consecration, it remaineth the same material bread, which it was before, nevertheless, it is a sign or sacrament of the living God. I believe the Omnipotent God in trinity to be one. But if every consecrated host be the Lord's body, then are there twenty thousand Gods in England." The Prince of Wales, who was present, earnestly exhorted him to recant, which he endeavoured to strengthen by promises of favour and riches: but the martyr was unmoved, and gloriously finished his course in the flames, as a witness not for Truth only, but also for common sense.*

The evils of

The unsophisticated mind, young in the history blind prejudice of the human race, will be astonished at such proceedings; and may well be tempted to consider such records, as the fabrications of history: but alas! they are stubborn facts; and tend to shew to what pernicious lengths, men will proceed, when blinded by prejudice and self interest.-Prejudice is the most formidable power that usurps autho-

^{*} Comp. Fox Martyrs, page 594, and Wilkin's Convoc. page 326.

H. CHAP I.

rity over the human mind.—When fostered by SECTION education, trained by habit, and strengthened by interest, it too frequently coerces reason, repels, truth, outrages justice, and, even, tramples on humanity. Whilst it retains its hold, it is an insurmountable barrier to all improvement. fects have been, and are, most disastrous to the peace and happiness of mankind. Christianity is the wisest and most beneficial scheme of God for the restoration of his lost family.—It is calculated to raise man to the supreme excellency of his nature, and to recover for him, even more than he has lost. But if in our early years, we are taught to discern its truths through a perverted medium; if, instead of being directed to its own simple statements for the best information, we are led to believe that a standard of interpretation exists to which we MUST SUBMIT, but that the standard itself, must not be examined or disputed.-If in addition to this, we are assured, that our eternal happiness is at stake, if we presume to refuse submission—what is likely to be the result? the influence of such a cause, we need not wonder that even in the present day, the doctrine of transubstantiation should have its zealous supporters. The proposition of John Badby was the language of common sense; and unvitiated reason is immediately convinced of its truth and propriety. under the circumstances we have suggested above,

SECTION the case is prejudged, and reason, the mistress of II. the understanding, is silent. CHAP. I.

be examined.

It is fortunate when the prejudices we have im-Prejudices to bibed, are in unison with virtue, religion, and truth; and it is demonstrative, that this can only be effected by a constant reference of all instruction, to the Holy Scriptures. But under all circumstances, when our understanding is sufficiently advanced, it behoves us strictly to examine the collected stores of our minds, maturely to weigh their several claims, and diligently to separate the precious from the vile.—But who sees not that in such a scrutiny the greatest caution is necessary? To reject a sentiment or, feeling, because it is a prejudice, may be rash—not to examine it, is brutish—and to retain it, may be equally unreasonable. We are surrounded with difficulties—prudence and judgment must direct us.

Standard of Church.

Happily, however, since the Reformation of the Judgment af English branch of the Catholic Church, we are forded by the neither consigned to the ignominious slavery of blind prejudice on the one hand, nor, on the other, left to the precarious and uncertain decisions of private judgment. In theological matters, the fountains of truth have been traced up to their origin, and the doctrine and discipline, delivered by the Apostles to the living Church, have been diligently compared with the written infallible standard of all truth, and duly authenticated. So that, whilst as Protestants, we hold the Bible alone, to be absolutely AUTHORITATIVE in matters of faith—yet SECTION in the formularies and articles of the Church a sufficient guide, and of high authority is provided, to enable us to study the Scriptures with advantage, and to form a sound judgment in matters connected with our religious belief.

The unequal distribution of good and evil in the

world, where the wicked are often most prospe-secution. rous, whilst the righteous are frequently exposed to extreme suffering, has always been considered a mysterious arrangement in the Divine government. Whatever mystery there is in the system of Providence, arises, no doubt, from a defect in the power of our comprehension. If we could take in all the range, and survey all the parts of the universal system, we should every where find beauty and harmony. But not to digress further, who does not see in the case of these martyrs, the great end that was to be answered by their sufferings? A careful observer * of men and things has remarked.—" Such I believe is the nature of man, that the knowledge and practice of religion could not be maintained without opposition and struggle,

Amidst the darkness and prejudice, which at the time we are speaking of, divided the empire of

of mankind to religion."

and therefore Providence has wisely permitted such instruments, as means to secure the attention Use of Per-

^{*} Dr. Watson, Popular Evidences, &c. page 1.

II. Снар. І.

SECTION the religious world, it required a mighty impulse to shake their usurpation. Nothing could have been better devised for this purpose, than the flames of martyrdom. It was the master-piece of human cruelty; and its abetters thought, it was the ne plus ultra of policy, and the most effectual prohibition. But in following their blind counsels, they were laying the sure ground for their own overthrow: and a firm foundation for the establishment of truth! What could speak more powerfully to the breasts of men, than such inhuman exhibitions? What could be better calculated to awaken the most benighted—arouse the most indolent, and rivet the attention of the most careless? such were the effects. As to the martyrs themselves we need not speak. Their sufferings were great—but their happiness and reward, are eternal; and, during the short time of their persecution, they enjoyed more solid satisfaction, than their persecutors did, in their whole lives. But to return.

Progress of

In reviewing the multiplied disorders of this the social sys-reign we shall find that the frame work of Society was established. The Country underwent a purgation, similar to that it experienced, under William I. The proud, restless and barbarous spirits of the age were humbled or extirpated. The feudal barrier was invaded. The middle and independent class of society grew more vigorous and powerful. Through the flattering indulgence of the King, the house of Commons, on which he

so much relied for the validity of his title, rose to SECTION an authority to which it had never before attained. He even allowed them to appoint officers to watch, over the expenditure of their subsidies. Thev proposed and carried into effect, the most wholesome measures, and even went so far, at this early period, as to suggest the propricty of curtailing the revenues of the Church. But the Clergy had gained the ear of the Monarch; and his former promises, urged on by their arts and his own superstitious feelings, led him to endeavour by a variety of acts, in favour of the Church, to remove from his conscience, its awakening alarms. even united with them, as we have seen, in the persecution to the death, and so, indeed, did the Parliament, of the disciples of Christianity. The proposal of the Commons was therefore, rejected, but it serves to shew, to what extent the eyes of the community were open, at that time, to the glaring enormities of the Ecclesiastical body.

The latter end of this reign was tranquil and well conducted. Henry was inflexible in Justice, and impartial in its administration. Hc was wise and prudent in his schemes for aggrandising his Country. He engaged in the adjustment of the cause between the two contending Popes, the end of which was, the rejection of both; and the elcction of Alexander V. to the Papal chair. was taking an interest in the unhappy policy of France, now torn asunder by the factions of Bur-

II.

CHAP. I.

SECTION gundy and Orleans. He was even indulging II. thoughts of the Crusades!

The King's surprized by death. His summons was sudden and unexpected. He was seized with apoplexy whilst offering up his prayers before St. Edmund's Shrine; and died within the precincts of Westminster. Whilst the lamp of life was lingering in its socket, he employed the lingering moments in giving his last injunctions to his Son. He exhorted him to administer the law with impartiality, to succour the distressed, and to beware of flatterers, with many other sage observations respecting government.

His Character.

Henry IV. was, certainly, admirably adapted for the situation to which he was unexpectedly raised. He made the best, of the worst materials. He was prudent in counsel and prompt in execu-Hc was the same man, both in prosperity and adversity. He was courteous and affable: and by his familiarity, won the humbler classes of his subjects. I do not upbraid his character with cruelty.—All his acts were rendered necessary, to sustain the course he had entered upon.— His severity was not from choice, but necessity. He dicd young, at the age of forty-seven; but he was old, in experience. He was one of those mcn who gain wisdom from their former errors: and certainly, the latter end of his life exhibits a great dcgrec of moral, I wish I could say, Christian virtuc.

SECTION II. CHAPTER II.

HENRY V.—THE CONQUEST OF FRANCE: STRUGGLES OF PROTESTANTISM.

WE are now about to enter upon a celebrated portion of our history.—The period it embraces is brief, but the reign of Henry V. is pre-eminent in martial achievement and national triumphs, and has always been the boast and pride of Englishmen.

SECTION
II.
CHAP. II.
A. D. 1412
Henry V.

So great was the confidence, and such, the submission inspired into the people, by the distinguished abilities of Henry, that all ranks of people were anxious to swear allegiance to his person, even before coronation. This unanimity of mind and feeling, predicted a vigorous reign. The body politic was animated with one soul, and hence it was likely, that its motions would be uniform and powerful. The coronation was solemnized on the ninth of April. His words and actions were manly, wise, and prudent. He seemed to enter upon the

II. CHAP. II.

SECTION functions of his high dignity with more than mortal energy; and raised the hopes of his admiring subjects to the highest pitch. He dismissed the flatterers of his youthful follies—regulated the judieial proceedings-removed incompetent and corrupt officers-endeavoured by proelamation, to instil some moral vigour into the mind of the community, and sat every day, for a certain period, to hear the petitions of the people. Before he attended to the funeral obsequies of his father, he endeavoured to make some reparation to the memory of the unfortunate Riehard, by removing his body, which had been meanly interred at Langley, with great solemnity, to Westminster.

> He went further, and in compliance with the superstitious and unhallowed notions of the time, sent to Rome for absolution, from the crime of his death. A strong proof to us, of the immense power the Papal throne exercised over its subjects, when such a strong mind as that of Henry's was thus powerfully induced to yield to its influence.

Persecution

Scarcely had Arundel the Archbishop of Canof the Lollards. terbury, performed the ceremony of the Coronation, than he entered with fiery zeal on the duty of persecuting the Lollards, or protestants of the day. By his influence, another of those hateful engines of arbitrary power, a commission, was issued to enquire into the character and extent of heretical opinions. The report of the enquiry was, that the doctrines of Wieliff had spread to

a most alarming extent through the country; and SECTION especially at Oxford, where the students had imbibed them with enthusiasm. A Synod or Convocation was assembled at St. Paul's, to receive the report of the commissioners; and when it was delivered, the whole assembly was thrown into consternation. In looking round for a victim by whose destruction, they might strike a salutary terror into the minds of the heretics; and put a timely check to their pernicious doctrines—the eyes of all were fixed upon Cobham, a nobleman of high birth, and distinguished abilities, both as a statesman and a soldier. He was most obnoxious to the hierarchy, for the unwearied zeal with which he propagated the simple doctrines of Christianity; his example was considered most dangerous, and, if unchecked, most fatal to the interests of the Papal church. But Lord Cobham stood high in the favour of the young King, and to accomplish his fall was acknowledged to be a difficult enterprize. But it was effected by the artifice and management of Arundel. The King undertook to use his influence with Lord Cobham, and to endeavour to reclaim his misguided servant, but failing to accomplish his purpose, he gave him up to the will of his enemies. Lord Cobham's answer to the King, from its true Protestant spirit, is worthy to be recorded.—"You, I am always most ready to obey, because you are 'God's Minister' and bear the sword for the punishment of evil

II. CHAP. II.

SECTION doers. But as to the Pope and his spiritual dominion, I owe them no obedience, nor will I pay them any; for as sure as God's word is true, to me it is fully evident, the Pope of Rome is the great ANTICHRIST, foretold in Holy writ, the 'Son of Perdition,' the open adversary of God, and the abomination standing in the Holy place." This noble declaration should be engraven upon the hearts of our children to all generations.

Lord Cobham brought to trial.

Arundel, supported by the sovereign power, issued a citation for Cobham to appear before him, which refusing to do, he was excommunicated.— He was however, at length, obliged to appear, and after a long and vexatious trial, in which he evinced much of the wisdom and spirit of Christianity, he was condemned. "The day" said Arundel, "passes away fast, you must come to a conclusion.—You must either submit to the ordinances of the church, or abide the dangerous consequences." To which Cobham replied.—" My faith is fixed. Do with me what you please." The Primate without further delay, "judged and pronounced Sir John Oldcastle, Lord Cobham to be an incorrigible, pernicious and detestable heretic," and having condemned him, he was delivered to the secular jurisdiction for the execution of the sentence. *

The day which passed over the heads of that assembly, has left a melancholy record of their deli-

^{*} Rymer vol. ix, p. 61. Fox p. 642.

Снар. II.

berations. It has passed away—but the record SECTION remains, a stain upon their memory on earth and an accusing witness against them in Heaven; and observe this remarkable fact. - The Archbishop who presided on that occasion was destined, in a shorter interval than his victim, to appear before the tribunal of PERFECT JUSTICE AND UNERRING WISDOM. He died on the twentieth of February, of an inflammation of the tongue, with which, it is said, he was seized at the moment of pronouncing sentence upon Lord Cobham. Be that as it may, his death was sufficiently striking to draw the following remarks from Bishop Goodwin: "He who had withheld from the people, the word of God, the food of the soul, by the just judgment of God, had his throat so closed, that he could not speak a single word, nor swallow meat nor drink, and was thus starved to death.*" His death caused some disorder in the councils of the persecutors, and Lord Cobham contrived means to escape from his confinement in the tower. He fled into Wales, and for the space of four years, eluded the malice and vigilance of his enemies.

Happily, in the midst of the darkness and ignorance of the times, and the enormitics of the Papal church, Christianity was gaining for itself a throne in the hearts of thousands. The writings of Wicliff, like a lamp in a dark place, shot an enlivening ray throughout the land, and many

s * Ency. Brit. in loc.

II. Снар. II.

SECTION there were, who hailed the light and rejoiced in No stronger proof can be given of the very general bias in favour of the doctrine of the gospel as inculcated by Wicliff, than the circumstance, that when the King had fixed a great price on the head of Lord Cobham, no person could be found to betray him.

Origin of the War with France.

But whilst the rulers of the Papal church were thus persecuting Christianity to the death, the instability of their own usurpation was manifest; whilst God was designing, for the present, to put a stop to their deadly persecutions. The Commons brought in a bill to put down the Monasteries, and to reform, generally, the intolerable abuses of the ecclesiastical body. This bold enactment filled the whole Hierarchy with alarm and resentment. To use the words of the historian* which are sufficiently expressive. "This bill caused the Abbots to sweat, the proud Priors to frown, the poor Friars to curse; the foolish Nuns to weep, and all her merchants to fear, lest Babel should sink." The bill, however, was not fully carried into effect, yet one hundred and ten monasteries were suppressed and their temporalities given to the King. But the measure of their iniquities was not yet filled up. Neither the rulers, nor people, were qualified to reform; and the King is diverted from further enquiry by a nobler prey, in pursuing which, he was destined to become the scourge

of France, already distracted as we have seen, SECTION with the factions of Orleans and Burgundy.

II.

Archbishop Critchley had succeeded Arundel CHAP. II. in the see of Canterbury, and was equally conspicuous for his talents and intolerance. He foresaw the evil effects likely to result to his own order from such proceedings in Parliament; and by a bold and inhuman stroke of policy, determined to put a stop to them for the present. He began by rousing the martial spirit of the King, and turning his thoughts to the ambition of empire and the glory of war; and in a set speech in Parliament, reminded him of his unquestionable right to the throne of France, which had descended to him from his illustrious ancestor, Edward III. The scheme succeeded, the breast of Henry was fired with the prospect thus opened before him, and in his desire to accomplish it, every thing of a domestic and humbler character was forgotten.

The Archbishop's motives were politic; but, in every respect, degrading to humanity; but in his blind desire to save the apostate church, he was rousing the vice-gerent of heaven, to accomplish its mighty purposes against the whole kingdom of France. The King's motives were equally corrupt, but of a different character to those of the Prelate; they were not so degrading, yet were they equally at variance with truth and rectitude. Such was the origin of the celebrated French war under Henry V! In pursuing its details, we

11. CHAP. 11.

SECTION shall find nothing gained by England, except martial glory, inasmuch as all the territory acquired, was so soon to be relinquished, and the English themselves to be expelled from the soil of France. But we shall perceive the fearful chastisement to which that unhappy country was exposed, already torn to pieces with internal dissentions, and daily massacres; and he who discerns not the inflicting HAND, must be inaccessible to the demonstrative evidence of circumstances.

French folly bastens the war.

As the war itself was founded in injustice, so it was carried on, under its influence. An embassy was sent to France, and instructed to make such exorbitant demands as it was well known. could not be admitted. A second embassy was dispatched with a similar message; but it is difficult to say, where these negociations might have ended, had they been left to their own course. But rash impertinence set the whole into a flame. The Dauphin of France, in ridicule of the preposterous demands of the ambassadors, sent their master, a present of a ton of tennis balls, intimating, that such playthings were better suited to his habits, than the laborious exercise of arms. was enough. Immediate preparations were made for war, which the French endeavoured by negotiation to avert; but which, by their insolence and levity, they only hastened and aggravated.

The place of rendezvous for the English army was Southampton, but on the last day of July,

CHAP. II.

when all was ready for embarkation, a dangerous SECTION conspiracy was discovered in the English army. The persons engaged in this nefarious transaction, were Richard Earl of Cambridge, Henry Scroop lord treasurer, and Sir Thomas Grey a privy counsellor, they had agreed with the French ambassadors for the sake of "all corrupting gold," to attempt the crown and life of their Prince. The bribe was said to be a million of gold. Their design was defeated and turned to their own ruin; but the attempt itself, covers all parties with the deepest infamy.

At length, on the thirteenth of July, the armament reached the coast of France, near Harfleur, for France. where like William of Normandy, leaping on shore, the King bowed the knee in token of submission to the throne of Heaven; and sought his favour, in aid of the enterprize, which he had prevailed upon himself to believe, legitimate. I mention this circumstance, not as a proof of his piety, —for I can see no justice in the undertaking, but as another testimony, that all great minds, and especially those, who have been signal instruments in carrying on human affairs, from the times of Cyrus and Alexander, have manifested this peculiar disposition of mind.

Harfleur was the first point of attack, and was taken after great waste of human life, and coloni-ed retreat. zed from England. The season being now far advanced, the King prepares to conduct his army

SECTION into winter quarters. Calais was the point to which he intended to go; and lest it should seem beneath the dignity of a conqueror to go by sea, which would have been perfectly safe, he determined to brave all hazards, and to make his way by land; little thinking, that he was about to conduct one of the most perilous enterprizes ever undertaken—not excepting the retreat of the ten thousand—to achieve one of the greatest of victories, and to bring on the French nation the most disastrous calamities. His little band consisting of about fifteen thousand men, no sooner moved from Harfleur, than they found themselves in the midst of almost insupportable difficulties. The enemy had cut down the bridges, blocked up the roads, rendered the fords impassable, by driving down sharpened stakes, removed all provision from the line of their march, rendered every step of advance desperate, by well concealed ambuscades; and harrassed the rear with incessant skirmishes. In short, by the vigilance and activity of the French, Henry and his whole army were reduced to the greatest straits; and were under the necessity of feeding on the nuts and roots, afforded them by the woods and fields. nothing daunted, Henry had arrived at Virron, with the design of passing the Somme, at Blanchtaque; but finding it too strongly fortified, he marched by Vormes and pitched his camp at Beileu, intending to cross the river at Port de Remi;

but this pass being, also, too well secured, he con- SECTION ducted his march along the banks of the river Hargest. The French army under the command, of Albert, constable of France, followed his movements along the opposite bank. Henry still intending to pass the Somme, resolved to attempt it at its very mouth, and passing by Amiens, Bowes, and Corbue, he ascertained by his spies, the possibility of accomplishing the passage at Saint Quintin's. He did accomplish it, but with his little army so overcome with fatigue, sickness and famine, that his men were more fitted to enjoy the comforts and asylum of a hospital, than the labours of warfarc.—But after the passage of the Somme they were far from finding rest. They were constantly harrassed by the enemy.—Their days were spent in unheard-of toil-thcir nights in watchfulness. Their lodgings were cold and wet—their provisions scanty and miserable. Such indeed were their privations and dangers, that their high-spirited leader was ready to have bargained for their safety, by the restitution of Harfleur. And it may be here remarked—let the remark have what weight it may—that his inflexible picty was the means of saving his army. He strictly forbad the pillaging of churches and religious houses; and for a breach of this order, one of his soldiers was put to death. The country people were so affected with this forbearance, that in spite of the strictest commands to the contrary,

CHAP. II.

for religion.

SECTION they shared their scanty morsel with Henry's soldiers! By this means he was enabled to pursue his way through every difficulty; till at length, about October, he came in view of the French army drawn up in order of battle, and in such a position, that it was impossible for him to avoid an engagement. Like the worthy descendant of Edward III. he prepared for the event. He threw himself from his horse, and commanding all his men to imitate his example, the whole army kneeling on the earth, with uplifted hands and eyes, implored the divine assistance.

Passing observation on Hume.

It is difficult to say upon what grounds, the historian Hume has omitted such particulars as these. His, is a melancholy page: a cold and cheerless field of inquiry: a wilderness of human error, without those oases of verdure which elevate our hopes, and solace our desponding hearts. Surely, the philosopher could not think it degrading, to offer worship to the Omnipotent. If he did, such philosophy, by the consent of all, should for ever, be banished from the society of intelligent beings. If there be any thing noble, any thing elevated in the human mind, it must be inspired in the moments of its approach to the Supreme Being; or, if there be any privilege in man's superiority, it must mainly consist, in his ability to adore the hand by which he exists, and by whose power he has been distinguished.

Henry, as we have seen, was now in sight of SECTION the French army, one hundred and forty thousand strong, whilst his own troops did not muster more than ten thousand effective men. To all human Battle of calculation, his destruction was inevitable; and Agincourt. the confidence of the French was so great, that they could not refrain from the most insolent manifestations of it. They repeatedly sent taunting messages to Henry, one of which was, to ask the sum which he intended to propose for his ransom. But he was silent, treated their ambassadors with the greatest generosity, sent them back with magnificent presents, and returned such answers, as discovered the unruffled composure of his breast

The day fixed for the battle was now approaching; and the manner in which the preceding night was spent, by the two armics, will sufficiently discover the mind and temper of each. French were occupied in all kinds of rejoicing and excess. The English were engaged in watching, in prayer, and in mutual exhortations to valour. The King was employed with his officers in arranging the order of battle; and the morning dawn beheld every man at his post, awaiting in breathless silence, the issue of the important day.

The point of approach to the French army was chosen between two woods, which scrved to protect their flanks. The archers, defended by a moveable barrier of sharpened stakes six feet long,

CHAP. II.

SECTION were disposed with great art, as wings to the main body. A company of bowmen of extraordinary strength and agility, were posted in a low ground, as an ambuscade, and defended by a deep ditch filled with water. In the woods, which we have said covered the approach, were concealed a strong body of horse, which were ordered to wait the most favourable opportunity, and attack the enemy when the battle became general. The van was commanded by the Duke of York, supported by the Lords Beaumont, Willoughby, and Stanhope. The main body was led by Henry himself, in complete armour, his helm surmounted with a crown of gold, of dazzling brightness, and his shield was quartered with the arms of France and England. His horse, of high spirit, was richly caparisoned, and his trappings embroidered with the victorious emblems of the English monarchy; whilst before him, was borne in gold and splendid colours, the standard of England, with innumerable banners of every order. Thus arrayed, and whilst waiting the attack of the enemy, the immortal hero, thus addressed his ardent band.

> "You are now entering," he said, "the glorious field of honour, which by your valour may become more renowned than even the fields of Cressy and Poictiers. For my part, England shall never be charged with my ransom, nor any Frenchman triumph over her King.—Death or Victory shall be my portion, as I expect it will

be yours. I am persuaded by your very appear- SECTION ance that, future ages will stand amazed to find what the lance, the battle-axe, the sword, and the bow can perform in the hands of such valiant men.—But although these are the mighty weapons, by which we are to reap the harvest of this day—yet I rely upon Omnipotence for victory; and it is a remarkable coincidence in divine Providence, that our enemies have offered us battle on the very day, appointed in England, for the people to implore a blessing on our arms: so that in the moment of conflict, the whole English nation will be lifting up their hands and eyes to Heaven for our success." With such words he encouraged his soldiers to the desperate encounter which was so soon to follow.

In the mean time, the French were advancing in three lines. The first was led by the Constable of France, the Dukes of Orleans and Bourbon, and several others of the chief nobility. The second line was commanded by the Duke de Berri, and the Earls Alencon and Nevers. The third. by the Duke of Brabant, and the Earls of Marle, Fauquenberge and Monsieur de Lormy. The right wing was led by Arthur Earl of Rechemont; and the left, by Lewis de Bourbon; whilst the whole army was crowded with the most illustrious names of France.

The ardour of the English was at length so great as scarcely to be restrained, Henry however CHAP. II.

II. Снар. II.

SECTION delayed, in hopes that the French would begin the charge. But when he saw them halt, and not wishing to damp the courage of his troops, he gave the word of advance with a loud voice.-"Since our enemies have intercepted our way to Calais-let us make our way through their ranks in the name of the Glorious Trinity, and on the most propitious day of the year." He then alighted from his horse, to share the equal dangers of the day. The army now advanced, preceded by Sir Thomas Erpington, who gave the signal for the attack by throwing his truncheon into the air. The clouds were rent with the acclamations of the soldiers. The archers in the wings, advanced and began the fight, making dreadful execution with their yard-long arrows. Against these, a select body of French cavalry were ordered to advance; but they were so dreadfully galled by the incessant showers of darts, that the attack became disordered.—One rank crowded upon another, and the confusion was greatly aggravated by the narrowness of the pass. Instead of a regular and wellcompacted phalanx, the French horse exhibited an indescribable meleè of men and horses. van was impelled forward, by the mechanical force of the mass behind, and the archers retired within their moveable spikes, upon which the impaled horses of the French, offered a frightful barrier to their advancing cavalry. During the whole of this time, the two hundred bowmen in ambush,

Снар. II.

performed deeds of death upon the crowded ranks SECTION of their foes. The moment the French cavalry reached the spikes of the archers, was critical, and a black tempest of arrows overwhelmed them with destruction. Such as escaped the havoc at this point, in utter despair, fell back with such force and precipitation, that they disordered the main line of the first division which was advancing behind them. The archers, thus perceiving their ranks exposed, threw away their bows and with great courage, rushed forward with sword and battle-axe. The French stood their ground as well as their broken lines would permit, and sustained a dreadful carnage. The archers retired as if for a breathing time, and then, with redoubled vigour returning to the charge, the attack proved irresistible, and the enemy fled.

Henry was now advancing at the head of his main body, to attack the second line of the French, advancewhich firmly awaited the charge. Henry acted the part of a General and a common soldier, and everywhere exposed himself to danger. rendered himself conspicuous, and eighteen French noblemen combined to destroy him, or perish in the attempt. They made a furious attack upon his guard; and charged so near, that one of them with a battle-axe, struck him on the crest,-But their courage was exerted in vain: they were immediately repulsed, and paid for their bold enterprize with the loss of their lives. In the defence

The English

SECTION of the King's life the valiant David Gamm, the Welsh chieftain, greatly signalized himself, and was at length mortally wounded, together with two of his relatives. 'The loss of these brave men was the subject of great grief to the King; and in the midst of the battle, whilst they lay expiring on the ground, he found time to confer on them the honor of knighthood, the only acknow-Still the battle

rages.

ledgment he could then bestow, of the regard he Battle entertained for their services. raged, and the Duke of Gloucester was struck down with a battle axe: the King stood over the fallen body, defended him, and saved his life. But whilst he was thus engaged he received such a severe blow on the head, that it brought him on one knee, whilst two gentlemen, in armour similar to his own, were slain at his side. English, encouraged by the example of their leader, pushed on with such fury, that at length they broke through the French battalions, whose horses pierced by the archers, had become ungovern-At this critical juncture, the English cavalry which had been stationed in the woods. rushed on the rear of the disordered foe. decided the conflict, and the French General, Alençon perceiving all was lost, and determining not to survive the fatal day, advanced into the thickest of the fight, calling for Henry, and crying out that he was Alencon. Nor long. The two leaders were now in sight of each other; Alençon

rushed forward, and with a furious blow of his SECTION battle axe, cut off part of the crown, which formed the crest of Henry's helmet. This ferocious attack so roused the spirit of the English lion, that his uplifted arm was nerved with redoubled might, and the falling axe laid his noble antagonist in Henry would fain have spared his life, the dust. but his enraged followers were deaf to his commands.

By the foresight and intrepidity of the English, two armies had now been routed; but there stood a third behind them still untouched, which might have joined an equal contest. But fear now performed as much as the sword, and without waiting for the attack, they fled with precipitation. English were victorious, but surrounded with imminent dangers. They who fled, were more in number than the victors: they who were prisoners, out-numbered their guards. The enemy also were seen rallying on an adjacent rising ground. Henry sent them a threatening and peremptory message, that if they did not disperse he would shew them no mercy. They were overawed and But unfortunately for the French prisoners, some of their troops which had fled at the first onset, cowardly attacked the English camp which was feebly guarded, pillaged the tents and baggage, and carried off the King's crown, together with immense spoil. The noise and clamour of the assailants, in the rear—the approach

II. Снар. 11. Death of the French Leader.

SECTION of night, and the vast number of the prisoners made it necessary, inasmuch as they were apprehensive of a general attack, to issue orders for a massacre of the prisoners, whilst the English although fatigued and harrassed, bravely prepared for a renewed fight. But all was soon quiet. The plunderers having effected their purpose, retired.

Piety of the King.

This sudden alarm was soon changed into joy, when they found themselves undisputed masters of such a field, and the King was so convinced of a superior cause that he returned solemn thanks to God, at the head of his army. He directed the hundred and fifteenth Psalm to be sung, and at the words "Not unto us O Lord, not unto us," he commanded all his army to prostrate themselves on the ground, in token of their humility. After this, in presence of his nobility and the French Heralds, who had been sent to obtain leave to bury their dead—he declared that it was not his own, but an unseen hand that had gained the victory; and that the carnage they had that day seen, was intended as a divine infliction upon the French The King then enquired the name of the nation. nearest castle and being informed that it was Agincourt—then, he replied, "let this field of fight, to all posterity be called the battle of Agincourt."

I have been the more minute in detailing the particulars of this famous battle, because it is so strongly marked, throughout, with the interference

Снар. II.

of an Almighty hand. The chief incidents are so SECTION miraculous, (it is difficult to use any other word) that it is unnecessary to recapitulate them. They must be abundantly manifest to the most superficial reader. There was little in the result of the contest for the advantage of England, and the whole, no doubt, belongs to the history of France. The victory was not followed up; and the King after remaining a short time at Calais, returned to England.

The triumphant entry of Henry into London, The King was of the most imposing character. He was returns to met by the Lord Mayor and Corporation and four hundred Citizens in robes—the streets, were hung with tapestry, on which were depicted the exploits of the Kings of England. He heard Psalms and Hymns every where sung, in praise of his victory. But with the same profound humility as before, he refused his own praise, and attributed all to God. From the same feeling he would not permit his dinted helmet and battered armour, to be carried before him in the procession, alleging, that it would be too vain an affectation of glory. At St. Paul's he alighted from his horse, and made a solemn thanksgiving-offering for his safe return; and in order that all his subjects might unite with him in this grateful exercise, he appointed a day, for a general thanksgiving throughout his dominions. Such was the awe impressed on the mind of the King, from the conviction, that in the whole of

SECTION this matter, he was acting as the signal instrument of heaven.

Снар. II.

Whence could this impression arise but from a supernatural source? It will not be alleged that it could arise from a weak or distempered mind; nor: can it be considered as a necessary concomitant of the superstition of the times. For previously, there was nothing of this kind manifest in his character. Nor was it the result of contact with persons of a religious or enthusiastic turn of mind. It was learnt in the camp and in the field. It was the result of an influence which amidst affliction, wonders and miracles he was obliged to own, and with which, he was willingly captivated and overcome.

Negociation attempted.

Soon after the King's return, the Emperor Sigismund at the desire of all Europe, became mediator between the two contending powers. But whilst he was prosecuting his design at the court of London—the aggressions and treachery of the French, compelled him to give it up in disgust, and after entering into alliance with Henry, he returned into Germany. The King now thought of nothing but war, and France was again destined to become the theatre of renewed slaughters, as it still continued to be, of factions and rebellions.

Schism of the Popes.

In the mean time, a deadly contest was carrying on in the professed house of Peace—in the bosom of the Roman Catholic Church—the legitimate descendants, forsooth, of those, whom St. Paul designates as "the beloved of God, called to be This furious contest was no other than the conflicting claims of three competitors for the triple crown, Benedict XIII. elected by the Spaniards, Gregory XII. by the French, and John IV. by the Italians. To put an end to the animosities and bloodshed attending this struggle, a general council was appointed by the Princes of Europe, to be held at Constance. This assembly was perhaps the most splendid and numerous ever collected together. There were present, the Emperorthe Pope—the Belgrave of the Rhine—three Patriarchs, twenty seven Cardinals-forty seven Archbishops—one hundred and fifty Bishops—Princes, Barons and Gentlemen, above thirty thousand. The English deputation made a prominent figure, and drew forth the admiration of all, for their learning and splendourt. Mighty was the preparation, and it was but reasonable to suppose, that the results of their deliberations would be in keeping with such pretensions. But alas! this famous assembly was as far distant from the wisdom and assembly. spirit of christianity, as they were superior in splendor to the apostolic council of Jerusalem. secular question (for such it was) was soon decided, by the elevation of Martin IV. to the Papal

SECTION II. CHAP. II.

Power of the

^{*} Epist. Rom. i c. 2 v.

⁺ Bishops of London, Salisbury, Lichfield and Coventry, Bath and Wells, Norwich, Hereford, St. David's, accompanied by the Earl of Warwick

II. Снар. II.

SECTION chair. A decision of itself, destructive of the doctrine of infallibility. The circumstance of three contending and contradicting Infallibles, is imposible; and still more, if more can be admitted, when a fourth, who before had no pretensions to it, is elected to their exclusion.

Weakness of the Synod.

From the decision of this question wherein the assembly shewed its strength, they proceeded to dispose of others, wherein they discovered their The books of the immortal Wicliff weakness. were decreed to contain heretical doctrines; and ordered to be burnt. John Huss and Jerome of Prague, men of eminent learning and piety, were committed to the flames of martyrdom, and to crown the united wisdom of the thirty thousand, Bridget, the holy maid, was canonized! It is impossible, for the words of the historian were he to fill folio after folio, to paint in more striking colours the character of that day. These facts embody the very image of the times, and fill the picture with striking contrasts of light and shade. the darkness prevails. It is like one of Martin's midnight scenes—deep—gloomy and full of terrific objects; but without that gratifying sublimity which always triumphs, in the delineations of nature.

Uses to be made of such events.

If any thing can cure us of our prejudices, or diminish the obstinacy with which we cleave to our preconceived opinions, it must be, such exhibitions as those presented to us in the council of

Constance! No man can boast entire exemption SECTION from prepossessions. They are inspired by the institutions of our country—by received customs, by current opinions, and by parental authority. Every division of the globe, every country, every religious sect, every class of society, has prejudices peculiar to itself. These prejudices have a tendency to contract the mind, blunt the feelings, and obscure the understanding. Every page of history corroborates this truth, and furnishes examples of its malignant effects. But the details of history have a tendency to remedy the influence of this universal disorder. History extends our views and enlarges our ideas of men and things, extinguishes the pride of our own superiority, opens our minds to candour-induces a liberality of sentiment and a correctness of judgment, with which the spirit of intolerance and persecution is incompatible.

But Christianity, which teaches on a sublimer Lord Cobham scale, and embraces in its system all that is grand suffered marin philosophy, and all that is splendid in morals; which unites every principle and every sentiment in the bond of charity, was at this period, in England, enduring a similar outrage to that which we have been considering. Lord Cobham, who after his condemnation had escaped from the Tower, was at length retaken, and again brought before the blood-stained tribunal. Many fresh complaints were urged against him, particularly

SECTION that of defacing the pictures in the mass book! an indignity it was solemnly urged, against the Saints in Heaven! Our self-love would tempt us to hope, that such inconceivable blindness and intolerance do not belong to the human family generally, but are peculiarly the offspring of Popery. But alas! they are indigenous in our nature. pery was only a prolific soil for their nourishment and growth. The storm against Lord Cobham was cruel in the extreme; and as it was the first noble blood shed in England, for entertaining sentiments in opposition to the Roman church, so was his death pre-eminent in cruelty. He was suspended in chains; and in this manner burnt alive.

> Oh cursed lust of power! that would coerce The very THOUGHT;

And to glut its impious appetite— Demand the blood of MAN.—

Second expedition into France.

In the mean time, Henry had embarked a second time for France, and landed at Harfleur, at the head of a valiant and well-provisioned army. was here met by Cardinal des Ursins, who attempted to incline him towards peace. But the King replied to him in the following remarkable terms as recorded by Hume. "Do you not see said he, that God has led me hither, as by the hand? France has no sovereign. I have just pretensions to that kingdom. Everything here is in the utmost confusion, no one thinks of resisting me. Can I have a more sensible proof, that the Being who disposes of Empires has determin- SECTION ed to place the crown of France upon my head!" These words require no comment. The King proceeded at once to active warfare. Nothing could stay his progress, and throughout the Winter, he advanced from conquest to conquest. order to proceed more rapidly with the subjugation of Normandy, he resolved upon the reduction of Rouen, its capital, a place of extraordinary strength and the deposit of immense riches. It was a dreadful resolution, and by the obstinacy and resistance of the inhabitants, they brought upon themselves the most unheard of calamities. King's intention was not to destroy, but to reduce the city, which he designed to accomplish by a strict blockade. This was so effectual that they were reduced to the greatest extremities—they fed on horses, and every kind of inferior animals, and even killed one another for the purpose of sustaining life: and it was not, till thirty thousand had perished by famine, that they consented to send commissioners to treat for peace. Henry at first stood on peremptory terms, but as all truly brave men, temper severity with mercy, the King commiserating their sufferings accepted their submission, and secured to them the full enjoyment of all their ancient privileges and immunities.

The day after the capitulation, Henry entered Rough taken. Rouen in great pomp as its sovereign. He held his court there as Duke of Normandy, and regu-

CHAP II.

11. Снар. II.

SECTION lated the internal affairs of the kingdom. Nor did he stay long, but hastened to pass the frontiers of France; and though the power of that kingdom was roused against him, yet he quiekly penetrated to Alberil and St. Valiere. The French court had now recourse to negociation, and Melun was appointed as the place of meeting between the Kings of France and England. On the day appointed, attended with splendid trains they met. the splendour of the French pavilion was greatly increased by the presence of the Queen and her accomplished daughter, Catharine. Henry had before been eaptivated by the reported charms of Catharine; and the Queen, who was deeply skilled in the arts of intrigue, presently saw how much his prepossessions were increased by the sight of She attempted by the sudden those charms. removal of the object to inflame his desire, in order to obtain less rigorous demands: but the King saw through her design; and was more eonfirmed in his resolution to stand firm. Throughout the whole of this eonference and its interruption, the French were only endeavouring to ereate They deceived: they perplexed every delay. thing; and whilst offering peace with one hand, they were preparing for war, with the other. Dauphin and the Duke of Burgundy who had been engaged in deadly opposition, unite in firm alliance, and all parties resolve for a time to hush their eommon feuds, and to unite their strength

in resisting the enemy of their country. The SECTION path they took was not for their honour. II.

When Henry became acquainted with their de- Chap. II. sign and intentions, he was roused to great resent- France spoilment, and hastened to unsheath his sword.—ed and con-Poictiers soon fell into his hands. This opened his way to Paris, which he took by surprise. The sword was every where awake, and busied in slaughter. The Duke of Clarence lay before Paris. The King himself was engaged in the Isle of France. The Duke of Gloucester was storming Saint Germaine. The Earls Marshall and Huntingdon were in the county of Mayne; and they were all, at the same time, victorious. The French nation was now in the most deplorable condition. Their capital taken:—their country threatened with destruction by a victorious enemy, and torn in pieces with internal dissensions, and irreconcilable hatreds.

The reconciliation of the Dauphin and Burgundy was wholly in appearance: but such as it was, gundy assassiand brief as it was, it laid the foundation for the overthrow of France! The Dauphin viewed Burgundy as the real enemy of France, and considered his death, as the only event that could heal the disorders of his country. The impious thought once admitted, became predominant; and led to its accomplishment.—The Duke of Burgundy was assassinated, when invited to meet the Dauphin. under the pretence of a conference.

Duke of Bur-

SECTION II. CHAP. II.

In his untimely end, we are called to observe the judicial appointment of heaven. By his hand the Duke of Orleans, twelve years before, had been assassinated in the streets of Paris, which had given rise to a long series of evils. He himself now met with a retributory fate, which in like manner gave birth to increased calamities. The animosity of faction and the miseries of France, were increased in a ten-fold degree. The Queen herself resented the murder; and excited the young Duke to revenge his Father's death; and by every art, endeavoured to accomplish the ruin of her own son, the Dauphin. But this was not to happen. That son was the Alfred of France, and destined, when all its hopes were lost, to be her restorer.

Treaty entered into with Henry.

Through the influence of the Queen and the resentment of the Duke of Burgundy, a treaty was entered into with Henry, now advanced into the very bowels of France. The conditions were more ample and honourable than he contemplated. But they were dictated by unnatural affection, ambition and revenge! The Dauphin was to be excluded from the throne of his ancestors—the Queen's daughter was to be united in marriage with Henry—the Regency of France was to be conferred upon him; and on the death of the French King, the crown itself was to descend to him. There could be no hesitation in accepting such proposals. The nuptials between Henry and Catharine were celebrated with extraordinary

pomp and magnificence. The French nobility SECTION swore allegiance, and, in every respect he was considered as the RULER OF FRANCE.

But the Dauphin was yet in arms; and it was siege of Melun concluded that no time should be lost in his subjugation. One place after another was taken from him; and Henry sat down before the important city of Melun. The most vigorous assaults were made upon the town to no purpose; and the King at last ordered the walls to be undermined. The besieged, countermined. At one time a mine having been effected, the King himself entered first, with his drawn sword. On the side of the besieged, the foremost man was the Duke De Barbasan. These two met, and for some time sustained a furious contest-At length De Barbasan, disclosed his name, and Henry, announced his. The French Governor immediately retired, and ordered the barricades to be closed. Melun was afterwards taken, and pardon secured to all but the murderers of the Duke of Burgundy. Barbasan, as it is said, was saved, according to the laws of chivalry, by pleading his single combat with Henry. But this is a digression.

On his return to Paris, Henry, as Regent of Henry assu-France, assumed its proper authority in appointing mes Sovereign and displacing of officers—redressing grievances power. and reforming abuses. He even caused a new coin to be stamped, to declare the union of the

SECTION two countries, in the reverse of which, were quartered the arms of France and England. CHAP. II.

home.

Henry having disposed of the affairs of France, The King's as well as circumstances permitted, and having wise and vigo-rous conduct at appointed the Duke of Clarence his Lieutenant, he arrived in England with his Queen, who shortly after, was crowned. The King in person, visited a great part of the kingdom, and redressed every kind of abuse, with a judgment, for which he has been justly celebrated. He also gave the deathblow to the appointment to vacant, Bishopricks, by the Pope. It is of importance to observe this fact, because it tends to shew that this power which had been exercised by the Pope, was considered a usurpation. After thus vigorously ordering the internal affairs of his own country, he was again called to France. During his absence, the Scotch had sent assistance to the Dauphin, and in a desperate engagement, the Duke of Clarence was slain by the Duke of Buchan. Henry on his arrival, carried every thing before him; and during the siege of Meaux he had the satisfaction of hearing of the birth of his Son, whom he named Henry, and it is said, pronounced that he would become unfortunate.

France completcly subjugated.

After the surrender of Meaux nothing could oppose him, and such was the fear inspired by his might, that deputies were sent to him from various places, offering to capitulate within a certain time, if not previously relieved. But there

was none to relieve, and the Dauphin was reduced SECTION to the greatest extremities. 11. CHAP. II.

In the midst of his successes he was joined, by his Queen, whom he attended to Paris, where they were entertained with the greatest pomp; and where Henry exercised the SOVEREIGN POWER in the fullest and most unequivocal manner. It was now the crisis of this great enterprize. The French murmured, but were overawed: and at length, from the justice and impartiality of his acts, their jealousies were turned into affection. He was hailed, not as the conqueror, but the father and benefactor of France, in which acknowledgment, they tacitly admitted the judgments of God to be just and salutary.

From the seat of empire, with great strength and unusual preparation, Henry went out against ness and death. the Dauphin, determined, at once, to strike a decisive blow. But the blow was averted. The great RULER OF EVENTS, who had intended to chastise and humble France, having now accomplished His purposes, turned aside the fatal stroke. He again restores to France, her own Prince, whom he had shielded from harm; and appoints to the distracted country its regular order of government. On the eve of his march, Henry was seized with a fistula, which under the unskilful management of his Physicians soon proved fatal. In vain he attempted to proceed with his army. His strength entirely failed him. He could only

11. Снар. 11.

SECTION issue his commands; and expired on the thirty first of August, leaving his elder brother, the Duke of Bedford, Regent of France, and his younger brother, the Duke of Gloucester, Regent of England.

> This event, which was the first of a series of calamities to England, affords a signal example of the instability of all human greatness; and displays the power of an unseen hand, which can curb the spirit of princes, with as much ease, as the feeblcness of babes and sucklings. Both are alike in his hand; and Henry whom he had raised up, and adorned with every accomplishment of body and mind, is laid aside in a moment. The goodly fabric is despoiled of its glories, and crumbled into dust. We still admire the ruins: for this magnificent Prince, with scarce a stain upon his character after he ascended the throne, save what the necessity of things imposed upon him, was a noble monument of the power of the Divine Architect.

Reflections suggested by the History.

Notwithstanding, during his reign, the social system advanced but little. Indeed, its tardy progress through centuries of time, is, in no small degree, confounding. We can perceive by the historic record that it was advancing, but it was by slow and almost imperceptible degrees. history of all Nations and all times, furnishes us with a like fact in the conduct of human affairs. But a fact so extraordinary, must be supposed to involve some principle, essential to the human character under its present condition. For it is evident that the Author of our being, if he pleased, SECTION could in a short time, advance society to its highest elevation of improvement and intellectual attainment. It cannot arise in Him, from want of benevolence to dictate such a course, or a defect of wisdom to conduct it .- We may, therefore presume, that the tardy progress of society is best adapted to the nature of man. We shall find the truth registered in the volume of nature. Those things which are for the enriching of man, and for enabling him to build up and adorn his civil institutions, are precious, and difficult of attain-When nations begin, de novo, they have nothing but their physical powers to rely upon. With great labour and toil, cities and the monuments of society, arise. Labour accumulates property—Property begets the arts and elegancies of life.—Such an advance of society gives birth to leisure; and operative leisure, promotes intellectual improvement. Doubtless, the great Architect of the world could have altered this course of things, by placing the materials of advancement, more easily, within the reach of man. Had this been done, in all probability, the system of society would not have existed at all! Man is naturally indolent. —It is the disease of his nature. It is a matter of fact, that in those uncivilized countries, where the means of living are abundant, the tribes who inhabit them, are most indolent, and most degraded. But even should mankind with the materials at

CHAP. II.

SECTION hand, have aspired to society, what would have been the result?—Unoccupation and leisure. state of things utterly inconsistent with the nature of man, and the economy of the Divine Government. Labour is the great check to vicious indulgence; and man is made to labour, against his will. Let us review this astonishing fact as connected with the history of our species, and compare it with the original denouncement on our first parents-" In the sweat of thy brow thou shalt eat thy bread, "-and we shall, at once, be convinced that it is the law of our existence; and in obedience to which, we shall find our greatest happiness.

> This slow and progressive improvement, seems also to be best adapted to the genius of man. moral powers are incapable of sustaining sudden and violent changes. Look at the history of individuals: sudden prosperity elevates—adversity It is the same with nations. depresses. at the effect of sudden successes, or sudden revolutions - A nation is intoxicated with joy or phrenzied with madness. To take an example from our own times.—Forty years have now elapsed since the French Revolution, and tranquillity has not yet been restored to that country. During this period, the happiness of millions of Frenchmen has been destroyed; and indeed, the civil happiness of the whole nation. No doubt the hurricane of the Revolution was necessary for the purgation of France, I only adduce the event to shew, that,

sudden and violent changes are, immediately, des- SECTION tructive to human happiness, and that calm and gradual advancement is best adapted, and indeed, only adapted to our present state,—so that a nation cannot, at once, mount to the height of eminence, and any precocity of this kind, may be presumed to be short lived and unstable.

Снар. 11.

In cases of colonization, where the eolonists have carried with them, the experience and civilization of a more advanced state, their progress may be facilitated; but to be safe and enduring, it must be gradual.—Too rapid an advance will be likely to end in extravagance of one kind or other, and to hasten a revolution.

Perhaps, America will be adduced to shew the futility of these observations. But in vain. We are aware of the rapid and unprecedented rise of that country, and can have no doubt, but it is intended to become a mighty Empire. But it must be subject to the laws which have governed all nations and all times. It began its progress under peculiar advantages: It had been fostered by this country with great care, and strengthened by the accession of some of her best citizens. At the Era of her independence, she had acquired considerable solidity, and a variety of circumstances at that period, precipitated her career. The tide of her prosperity has not ceased to flow, and she has afforded the fact of a nation, doubling its population and property in thirty years. But what does

SECTION all this shew? It shews that a country possessing prodigious natural advantages, and colonizing , from highly civilized states, has in a short time made unexampled acquisitions of people and property; and that unceasing activity and industry have been followed by their natural results.

> But will it shew that, that Nation has gained equal solidity in Government, refinement in social intercourse, or unity of feeling in the community? These queries will be sufficiently answered in the extract* given below, from an important work lately given to the public. We have no design to decry America. We desire nothing so much as the improvement of our race. But we are searching for great truths; and the history of America and her present state, will be a grand evidence to shew, that slow and gradual advances in improvement are best adapted to the genius of man, and

[&]quot; Perhaps, on impartial inquiry, it may appear that a country is best governed when the principal authority is vested in a permanent senate. But there seems little probability that such a body could be established here. Let it be proposed by the best men among us, and it would be considered as a plan of aggrandizing themselves. Experience alone can incline the people to such an institution. That a man should be born a legislator, is now, among unfledged witlings, the frequent subject of ridicule. But experience, that wrinkled matron, whom genius contemns, and youth abhors; experience, the mother of wisdom, will tell us, that men destined from the cradle to act an important part, will not in general, be so unfit as those who are objects of popular choice. When a general abuse of the right of election shall have robbed our government of respect, and its imbecility have involved it in difficulties, the people will feel what a friend once said, 'that they want something to protect them, against themselves."

essential, indeed, to the principles of his Being, and that where this course is deviated from, it will be attended with danger and peril. It is impossible at this period of the world's existence, to suppose that new principles are to be discovered in the moral powers of man. The same springs of action which have governed him from the beginning must continue to do so.—

SECTION II. CHAP. II.

SECTION II. CHAPTER III.

HENRY VI.—DELIVERANCE OF FRANCE—THE SCENE OF
THE DIVINE JUDGMENTS CHANGED TO ENGLAND.

SECTION
II.
CHAP. III.
English Regency.
A. D. 1422.

In the death of Henry V. the principal actor was removed from this seene of the drama; but there were left behind him ardent spirits, fully equal to the great task he had imposed upon them. He had appointed as we have seen his elder brother, the Duke of Bedford, regent of France a man of consummate ability and romantie valour. His younger brother, Humphrey Duke of Gloueester was Regent of England; and the education of his infant son he had committed to Thomas Duke of Exeter and Beaufort, Bishop of Winches-These men were all admirably fitted for their several appointments, and entered on the diseharge of their respective duties, with the utmost devotion. Every thing prospered in their hands; and the affairs of England both at home

and abroad were in the most flourishing condition. SECTION But it was the deceitful calm which precedes the storm.

CHAP. III.

We have already observed that the affairs of France were tending towards a beneficial change; and in reviewing its course, we shall not fail to discover the HAND by which it was conducted. Charles the VII. of France did not survive Henry more than a few days; and his son the Dauphin, like another Alfred, was hunted from one place to another; but his spirit and courage was invincible. The Regent of France, in strict alliance with the Duke of Burgundy, was victorious wherever he turned his arms; and, at the battle of Verneville achieved a second Agincourt.-

The first thing that seemed to shake this prosperous state of affairs in France, was a private quarrel between the Duke of Gloucester, Regent of England and the Duke of Burgundy; which, although it was composed through the influence of the Duke of Bedford, yet, as we shall see, drew after it important consequences.

Another event occurred, which although it seemed to arise from a private quarter, was the means of imparting vigour, to the rising destinies of France. This was a contention in England between the Protector and the Bishop of Winchester, tutor to the King. It is unnecessary to enter into the particulars of this quarrel, the result of jealousy and ambition. To settle the

II. Снар. III.

SECTION difference, the Regent of France was obliged to leave the government of this kingdom, which, at that time, from the defection of the Duke of Burgundy and the Earl of Rechemont, more than ever required his presence.

> Whilst the Duke of Bedford was in England, one of the King's tutors, the Earl of Exeter was removed by death-a man of great wisdom and abilities. In his place was appointed Beauchamp Earl of Warwick, who had been left as Lieutenant in France during the Regent's absence, and had rendered singular service to the English cause.

The affairs ten to a crisis.

The calamities of France were now hastening of France has- to a crisis. The Duke of Bedford having established matters in England, returned to France, accompanied by the Bishop of Winchester, who on his arrival in that country, received the habit and dignity of cardinal. On his return home, armed with the authority of a Legantine Bull, he levied great exactions upon the clergy, by which he enriched himself beyond precedent. return.

Siege of Orleans.

The Earl of Warwick on his appointment in England, was succeeded in France by the Earl of Salisbury—a man second to none, both in the council and the field. In order to strike a decisive blow, he is sent to the siege of Orleans—a place almost impregnable, well garrisoned and well provisioned. The siege of the place was conducted in regular form, for sixty days, and its

affairs had become desperate. The Earl to com- SECTION plete the triumph, had resolved upon a general attack; and was making observations for that, purpose, at a small grated window, which overlooked the city, when to speak after the manner of men, an accident put an end to his life and his A boy at the moment, was levelling a intentions. cannon, the ball from which, struck the casement, and by the splinters it occasioned, he was mortally wounded. The assault, in consequence, did not take place, which in all probability would have succeeded, and proved fatal to the affairs of the Dauphin. The fate of France seems to have been suspended upon this event; apparently as casual, as the death of the King of Israel, who fell by an arrow, which it is said, was drawn at a venture. But another event arose which also assisted. The besieged were reduced to such extremities, that they declared themselves willing to surrender to the Duke of Burgundy. This offer of course, could not be accepted by the Duke of Bedfordbut his refusal was secretly resented by the Duke of Burgundy. The siege still continued, when another circumstance arose which had a manifest influence on the whole war.

Orleans was unexpectedly relieved through the influence of a rustic maid; and the Duke of Alen-Orleans. con with a chosen body of troops, forced his way into the town. The maid of Orleans or Joan of Arc, as she is sometimes called, was, no doubt, in-

The Maid of

II. Снар. III.

SECTION structed by some superior spirit, probably the Duke of Alencon himself, in the part she was to The woman herself was of a romantic turn of mind, and was wrought up to the highest pitch of enthusiasm: and influenced with a vehement desire of avenging the wrongs of her country.— Her first success gave additional inspiration to her She assumed a divine mission: and on this assumption, in language as if divinely inspired, she encouraged her countrymen, and denounced their enemies. The French universally accredited her mission, and their leaders made the best advantage of the enthusiasm which was created by it. She was clothed in complete armour—mounted upon a noble steed—and to complete the effect she received a consecrated banner from the hands of the Pope himself. The dying hopes of the French were inspired with new vigour. The English affected to despise the pretended mission.— But it had a secret influence and created many a superstitious fear.

Her mission prospers.

The siege of Orleans was raised, not, I dare say, from any dread of the prowess of the sacred maid, but from the circumstance of the succours introduced by Alencon. The French attributed the withdrawing of the English to her influence, and a monument to her memory was erected by the grateful citizens. Not a moment of time was to be lost, and the brave Alencon with his heroic prophetess, issued forth to battle and conquest.—

The tide of their good fortune induced many to SECTION join their standard, and amongst these, the Constable of France. On a sudden, they attacked the English forces under Lord Talbot, the most celebrated Captain of the age, and after a long contest vanquished them, and took their noble leader cap-crowned. This was too striking an advantage to be tive. neglected, and was improved by the coronation of the Dauphin at Rheims.

The Regent now thought it was high time for himself to appear in person. Accordingly, he led his army out of Paris; and by valour and prudence soon checked the prosperous current of their affairs. Their cause was further depressed by the death of the maid of Orleans, who was taken pris- The Maid of Orleans taken. oner, and shortly after burnt alive at Rouen. is impossible not to reprobate such a merciless act. -Oh! thou just and benevolent Being, who rulest over the affairs of men, how abhorrent must such conduct be to thy perfections! The barbarous deed was in keeping with the ignorance of the age.-The unhappy victim was tried by the Bishop of Beauvois, in whose diocese she had been taken prisoner; and condemned for vicious practices in conjunction with her pretended mission. Duke of Bedford and his council gave their consent on political grounds, inasmuch as her presence inspired the French with enthusiasm: But we will not dwell upon it.

SECTION 11. CHAP. III.

The Duke of Bedford, not to be behind the French, had the young King of England conducted to Paris; and there solemnly crowned King of The English King was entertained with the greatest demonstrations of loyalty and affection; and through the influence of Pope Eugenius a truce was concluded between the contending parties for six years. Shortly after this treaty the young King returned home.

The Duke of offence.

Scarcely had he reached the shores of his own Bedford gives eountry, when a step was taken by the Duke of Bedford which served to hasten the issue of the pending struggle. On his way to Calais in order to quell a certain insurrection, he found time for other matters, and on his arrival at Turwin, he married the daughter of Peter of Luxembourg Earl of St. Paul—an alliance offensive to the Duke of Burgundy, and which served still further to detach him from the English interest. Meanwhile the calamities of France were greater than ean be described. Let the reader eonceive to himself, a country without the protection of law-over-run with armies or, rather predatory bands of soldiers -exposed to pillage, robbery-burning and massacre with all their attendant private evils-let him paint every circumstance that can aggravate these evils; and then, his imagination will not furnish him with a picture equal in calamity, to the original.

At length by the intervention of the heads of SECTION Christendom, a negociation was set on foot, and Arras appointed as the place of Rendezvous. It CHAP. III. is said to have been one of the most splendid assemblies the age had seen; but their deliberations had proved ineffectual, had it not been for the defection of the Duke of Burgundy from the English alliance. The Dauphin had long seen that the Duke of Burgundy must be won, and he determined if possible to gain him, whilst he himself from a variety of causes, which we have endeavoured to trace, was now ready to break with his English friends. Accordingly, the Dauphin sent him a Carte blanche, desiring him to prescribe his own conditions, which he did, both largely and unreasonably.

As the accession of the Duke of Burgundy to the English alliance, by which the French power unite. was divided, had been the means, in a great measure, of English superiority—so his defection, by which that power was again united, became the overthrow of English domination. The energies of France revived and the love of their country, at length overpowered the lust of private revenge.

The Duke of Bedford was the only bulwark of Death of the the English cause, the only individual able to Duke of Bedford. stem the torrent of success, which now set in upon the affairs of the Dauphin. But he was not permitted to act. His sword had now been unsheathed for the last time, and was destined to re-

SECTION pose with him in the grave. He died soon after the Duke of Burgundy's defection, and it is asserted, that the anxiety and vexation of the crisis, hastened the event. He was the most accomplished and magnificent Prince of his age. prudence, courage, and generosity were unequalled, and he left such a reputation behind, that when certain parasites of Louis the eleventh advised that Monarch to demolish his magnificent tomb at Rouen, they received the following answer and rebuke from their Sovereign. "What honor can it be to us or you, to deface this monument; and to disturb the bones of him, who when living, neither my father nor your progenitors, with all their power, were able to resist? Who by his strength, policy, and conduct expelled them out of the kingdom of France and the dukedom of Normandy? As for this tomb, I do not think it worthy of his honor and his deeds."

> After the death of the Regent there was some difficulty and delay in choosing a successor. length the most improper choice was made in the person of the * Earl of Cambridge, Duke of York, -not only on account of his latent title to the crown of England, but because he was the avowed enemy of the Duke of Somerset, who was then in the government of Normandy. Nothing could have been more infatuated than such a step.—

^{*} Great grandson of Edward III. by his fifth Son.

Could the Protector, who was truly alive to the SECTION interests of his country, have seen the devastations and bloodshed which would accrue from the ambition of this man-Could the King have foreseen the evils which impended over himself and his family from this source; or, lastly, could the Bishop of Winchester have had a glimpse into his own future history—the Duke of York would have been the last man in the kingdom to have been promoted: but blind to their own real interests, and guided by private feelings, they took a step, contrary to the remonstrances of the Duke of Somerset, which involved them in utter ruin; but which was big with important consequences, and rendered subservient to GREAT DESIGNS.

Before the Duke of York could reach his government, Paris was lost; and all attempts to retake it, were ineffectual. Rouen was now the head-quarters of the English in the North, and Bourdeaux in the South. Nothing was achieved by the new Regent, owing in a great measure, to the disunion that existed in the English councils, both at home and abroad. He was shortly after recalled, and was succeeded by the Earl of Warwick, the whole of whose Regency was a time of perpetual wars and bloodshed, equally injurious to both parties; and, in the midst of his heroic deeds, this great chieftain was removed by death. Duke of York

The Duke of York, who was busily employed second time, in laying the deep foundations of his future ambi-France.

SECTION tion, had sufficient influence at court, to be appointed a second time, Regent of France. He went with a determination to vindicate his tarnished honour. He had many a sharp encounter with Charles, in which he was generally superior. At length, Charles goaded by despair, and the taunts of his subjects, determined to recover his lost ground. He beseiged Pontheirs, near Paris, with great fury, and after much slaughter on both sides, took it by storm, being himself the first man to enter the breach. The fame of this successful exploit served to re-establish his reputation and to promote his good fortune.

> In the mean time, another fatal mistake was made in the councils of England—a mistake founded in injustice and fraught with evil to the country at large. The young King had been affianced in the most solemn manner, to the Duke of Armagnac's daughter. The King of France was exceedingly averse to this match, as it would have been the means of strengthening the English cause in Normandy and Gascony; and accordingly made an attack upon the Duke, entered his dominions and took his two daughters prisoners. The King of England instead, as in honor bound, of demanding his affianced bride, was induced through the influence of De la Pole, Earl of Suffolk, to accept in marriage the portionless daughter of Reynor, Duke of Anjou. The whole of this affair was conducted to its close in direct opposition to

H.

the advice and remonstrances of the Protector. SECTION And there was a party gathering about the King's person who were adverse to his plans, and deter- CHAP. III. mined to thwart him. They succeeded in this instance too well-and the completion of their alliance, was attended with fearful consequences to the kingdom at large, and to the house of Lancaster in particular. But the devices and intrigues of the court, opposing as they did, the uprightness and integrity of the Protector, were overruled as we shall see, by the Allwise disposer of things, to the punishment of the immediate actors, and to the future greatness and stability of the kingdom.

Margaret of

The young Queen upon whom we are now to look as the principal agent in the great transac-Anjou, Queen. tions of this reign; and who was the unconscious instrument of advancing the Divine purposes—is described as a woman of considerable personal attractions-eloquent in discourse-officious in counsel-covetous of praise-masculine in couragevigilant of her opportunities, daring in execution, and capricious in temper. She was no sooner seated in a share of the throne, than she became the leader of those, whose evil counsels were gaining ascendency about the person of the King, This was to be expected, not only from the natural violence of her own disposition, but from the hatred she had conceived against the Protector, for his strenuous and unceasing opposition to her mar-In his straight forward and manly policy

SECTION he thought of nothing but the happiness and prosperity of his country; and in opposing the mercenary and ambitious views of De la Pole and Beaufort bishop of Winchester, he exposed himself to the jealousy and hatred of a faction, who determined upon his ruin.

> The King who was now entering upon the functions of government, had been almost entirely under the controll of the Cardinal of Winchester. His mind though imbued with learning, had been fettered by the haughty tyranny of his tutor-restrained from every manly feeling, and made the prey of every superstition. Perhaps the prelatical power was never carried to such a height of worldly splendour, as in the person of this individual; and his magnificent tomb in Winchester cathedral, will serve to convince us that it was indeed a reality. The young King himself displayed none of these ostentatious and ambitious feelings; but we are led to fear, that his forbearance in these respects, was more, from the authority of his education, than the effect of that humility which is the essence of Christianity, and which does not destroy the spirit and energy of the character, but properly controls and forcibly directs it, into its proper channel.

Intrigues and treachery of the Duke of York.

The Duke of York, reckless of danger, was bent on removing every obstacle that stood in the way of his ambition. But he was deep and designing —never hastening his purposes, but at the same

time permitting no circumstance to escape him, that could in any way, assist his main project. He was ingenious in evil; and an adept in laying those plots, which without awakening suspicion of his real intentions, paved the way for their accomplishment.

SECTION 11. CHAP. III.

Amidst such contending powers, perilous in the extreme was the state of England! But to return to our history.

The Duke of York had now returned from France under France, and Somerset had succeeded him as the Duke of Regent of that kingdom, where, under his rapacious government every thing was lost. The scene now changes to England; and the storm of misrule first discharged its fury on the lofty but uncorrupted head of the Protector. Sacred to Englishmen be the memory of such a man, the firm and unflinching friend of his country; who for his probity and honor, became the object of hatred to the wicked; and for his vigilance and wisdom, fell a victim to the designs of the ambitious.

Somerset, lost.

De la Pole, created Marquis of Suffolk, who had been the chief actor in the King's marriage, the Duke of and who unfortunately leagued himself with the Queen, was raised through her influence, to the highest offices of trust; and became, through the circumstances of his situation, the principal agent in the destruction of Gloucester. The first step of this tragedy was now resolved upon; and on the first meeting of Parliament at St. Albans, the

H. CHAP. 111.

SECTION Protector was arrested as guilty of treason, and himself and his adherents cast into prison. his enemies foreseeing the danger, and indeed impossibility, of accomplishing their designs by public trial; and their machinations not admiting of the possibility of escape, they allowed him but short respite, and murdered him that night! death became the immediate signal for tumult, sedition, and bloodshed. Every thing was thrown into confusion. The master power was gone; and the whole machinery of the state was disordered. The virtuous fied from court, and the wicked triumphed. The Queen and her partizans had the entire sway; and the evil influence of their example produced the most lamentable effects. The greatest discontent prevailed amongst the people, and they rose in many places, against their oppressors.

Death of the chester.

The death of the Cardinal of Winchester who Bishop of Win-died at this crisis, like that of Wolsey, might afford an equal monition to mankind, of the vanity of all sublunary good, when acquired by evil means, or employed for ambitious purposes. is said, in his dying moments, to have exclaimed in language similar to the famous Cardinal of Canterbury:—"Why should I die, who have so much wealth? If the whole kingdom would secure my life, I am able by policy to get it, or by my wealth to buy it: Will not death be bribed? or, is money of no value?"*

^{*} Echard.

The death of the Protector had inspired the SECTION hopes of the Duke of York with new vigour, and he saw the path-way to the throne, if not free from difficulty and danger, yet as offering no insuperable barrier to his wishes. He now became the great mischief-maker of the times-perverting every good intention of the government—irritating every evil, and, embarrassing all things. ed his designs to those of the nobility upon whom he could rely; and every where, fanned the flame of discontent against the King's government. The crisis of affairs became appalling. The Parliament was loud in its complaints, and the whole nation was demanding some sacrifice to appease its anger. The popular fury directed itself against Suffolk as the most prominent person, and laid upon him all the evils of mis-government, both at home and abroad. He was a man of great abilities, and had served forty years with great reputation in France, during seventeen of which, he had never seen his country, and indeed was in every way worthy of the honor to which he had been advanced. But then, he had tarnished all his glory by his evil alliance with the Queen and her party, and was GUILTY of the BLOOD OF GLOU-He was however, for the present, CESTER. snatched from the impeachments and resentment of Parliament; and by the influence of the Queen, confined a prisoner in the Tower. But in a few months, falsely thinking that the storm had abated,

CHAP. III.

SECTION he was restored to his place at the council board. But short lived are the immunities of crime. This bare-faced indignity to the public, roused a double vengeance; and to save their favorite from the fate which awaited him, he was banished by the King for five years. But his destruction slumbered not; and the murderer of Gloucester is about to expiate his crime by a retributory punishment. The vessel in which he had embarked, was captured by a man of war, fitted out by the Duke of Exeter, a circumstance which sufficiently shews the state of things at that period. The unhappy minister enjoyed a shorter respite than even that which had been allowed to the lamented Gloucester. His head was struck off on the gunwhale of the boat, and his body ignominiously thrown upon the shore

* * * "jacet ingens litore truncus,

Avulsumque humeris caput, et sine nomine, corpus."

The death of the Marquis of Suffolk was a severe blow to the Queen, the stability of whose counsels, much depended upon his abilities .--Things were now fast hastening to maturity. The Queen in plotting new schemes—the nobility in the infraction of law and decency—the people in their mutinous and rebellious acts, were all working their own chastisement—the cure of their licentiousness and the prosperity of England!

A formidable insurrection was fomented by the of Cade. artifices of the Duke of York, and put under the management of Jack Cade a man of great abili- SECTION ties, but infamous morals. In order to prepare the way for the grand object of the Duke's ambition, Cade assumed the name of Mortimer, and pretended to be cousin to the Duke of York. The spirit of the insurrection spread far and wide; and the Captain of Kent, as he styled himself, encamped at the head of a great multitude at Blackheath. After committing great enormities and levying great exactions on the people of London; he was at length resisted by the exasperated citizens, with uncommon bravery. severe contest took place at London bridge, and many fell on both sides. But it was an effectual check to his progress: for this success being followed up by a proclamation of pardon, the rebels dispersed.

In the mean time the Duke of York, who was then stationed as Lieutenant in Ireland, was narrowly watching the effect of his plot: and whilst the influence of it, was yet operating upon men's minds, and the discontent of the people still increasing, he hastened from his post, fully determined, by every species of villainy, to make his way to the throne. He was now at the head of a formidable body of men; and had already procured the death of Adam Malleins, Bishop of Chichester and Lord Privy Seal, a man of great integrity, and consequently an obstacle in his way. But there was another individual still more formi-

Снар. III.

SECTION dable to him.—This was the Duke of Somerset, formerly Regent of France, who by his authority and counsel was the chief support of the King. -He saw that in removing the Protector he had achieved nothing, whilst Somerset lived.—His death was therefore determined upon. On his landing he made the greatest protestations of loyalty, and intimated that he only came to redress grievances and to remove improper counsellors.— The news of his arrival, under such circumstances seemed to awaken even the spirit of the King, and he led an army towards Wales, to teach him more reverence and respect. On the King's approach. his partisans deserted him in great numbers, so that he found himself obliged to submit to the King's mercy.—That mercy was too great. the most unheard of duplicity, and by the most solemn oaths of fidelity and loyalty, he lulled the fears of the King and procured a reconciliation.

> Having thus far succeeded, the wily Duke advanced another step upon the clemency of the King, and demanded the impeachment of the Duke of Somerset, accusing him of avarice and The haughty spirit of this nobleman peculation. could not brook the indignity of such an accusation; and presenting himself face to face with his accuser, in the most eloquent and convincing manner, he shewed the treachery of the Duke of York and his treasonable intentions and asserted that if they wished to save the country from deluges of

Affairs of

blood, the Duke of York must be sacrificed to the SECTION public weal. But great as was the eloquence and II. CHAP. III. foresight of Somerset, it was more than counterbalanced by the treachery and falsehood of York. He exclaimed against the injustice of the charge, and alleged the impossibility of such being his intentions; and the more effectually to assert his innocence, and blind the eyes of the royal party, he solemnly attested his loyalty before the high altar of Saint Paul's, in the presence of the King and the principal nobility of the realm.

It will be necessary to detain the reader, for a The France. short time to notice the state of France. English possessions in that kingdom had been gradually declining, and were now fast tending to utter extinction. A diversion was made in fafour of the sinking cause in Gascony, under the famous Lord Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury, who for twenty-four years had been the terror of France, and by his impetuous valour had been the cause of infinite calamities to that country, and the principal support of the English. On this occasion his wonted success failed him. He perished in his eightieth year together with his son, whilst leading on his troops to an unequal charge; and his, was the last noble blood of England shed in this long contest. The English troops were now recalled, unhappily to be engaged in still more dreadful and calamitous scenes in their own country, for which a long train of circumstances had been

Снар. III.

SECTION preparing the way. When the English soldiers were embarking, a French Captain scoffingly asked an English Knight-when they would again To whom the latter made this return to France? reply: "when your sins are greater than ours," an answer that deserves consideration. Nothing could allay the evil spirit in the breast of the Duke of York, and it is difficult to say in what arts his vicious disposition most excelled—in dissimulation, treachery or perjury. With these spiritual weapons he sought the objects of his ambition, and was allowed to triumph. The Duke of Somerset was yet in his way, and all his powers were exerted to accomplish his destruction.

> The Duke was a great man with his master wise in counsel and brave in action; but he was unpopular for his ill success in Normandy, which was lost under his Regency. The Duke of York worked secretly upon this popular dislike; openly professing loyalty to the King, but covertly, by the most subtle artifices, undermining his authority. In this silent manner the plot advanced, till it was greatly accelerated by the addition of two other spirits, as wicked as himself, and admirably fitted to second his purposes. These two individuals were the Earl of Salisbury and his son the Earl of Warwick. The former, famous for wisdom in council, and the latter for his invincible courage in the field.

After sowing the seeds of disaffection through- SECTION out the kingdom, they proceeded openly to attack the Duke of Somerset, whom during a temporary indisposition of the King, they arrested in the Arrest of Somerset by Queen's lodgings, and committed to the Tower. the Faction. But on the King's recovery, the Duke was released and made Governor of Calais. Disappointed of their prey, they determined upon other measures; and retired into Wales, for the purpose of raising troops and marching to London. On their approach the King retired to St. Albans, and in accordance with the usual mildness of his disposition, sent some of his Lords to negotiate with the Duke and his confederates. But the demands of the triumvirate were too unreasonable to be complied with; and the impetuosity of the Earl of Warwick soon brought the matter to the appeal of the sword.

In this dreadful conflict the King was wounded, many of his nobles slain, and amongst them the Albans. Duke of Somerset. After the battle, the King found himself in the hands of the Duke of York. But even at this moment, dissimulation triumphed over the other atrocious qualities of his mind, which proved to him the source of unnumbered evils, and paved the way for his own destruction. He pretended he had gained all he wished by the death of Somerset; and with the greatest reverence conducted the King to London, where they spent the feast of Pentecost together. No doubt,

Battle of St.

SECTION the Duke had politic reasons for his dissimulation. The King stood high with the people for his piety and clemency; and the Duke saw, it was impossible for him to strike the blow he wished, without the greatest risk. But he was intending to strike that blow in a more safe and effectual manner.

Duke of York

In a parliament which was now assembled, and made protector. which he contrived to render subservient to his wishes—he was declared Protector of the realm the Earl of Salisbury, Lord Chancellor; and the Earl of Warwick, governor of Calais. By this means the whole sovereign power was lodged in their hands, and every thing they could desire, seemed to be within their reach. But in the moment of triumph they were least secure; and their well-laid schemes are not to succeed.

> The Queen once more appears upon the stage; and in conjunction with the young Duke of Somerset and other Lords, who clearly saw the designs of the Duke, determined to make an effort to save the crown. A special council was held, in which the King's authority was asserted—the irregularity of the protectorship denounced, and the Earl of Salisbury commanded to deliver up the seals.

> But the Queen meditated deeper counsels; and perceiving the Earl of Salisbury and his son the Earl of Warwick, to be the chief instruments of the evil, designed their ruin. In the King's name on their allegiance, she commanded their attend

ance. But whilst preparing to attend the sum- SECTION mons, they were secretly warned of their danger and fled.

II. CHAP. III.

The King was highly displeased at these violent proceedings; and having no desire but the peace and prosperity of his subjects, he summoned a grand council to arbitrate between all parties, and, if possible, to bring to an end the vexations and disputes which harrassed the land.

To shew the state of things at that time; and the stronghold, which Feudalism still maintained in the country—I shall give a brief account of the nobles and their train who attended this council.

The Duke of York, with a train of four hundred men, lived in his own house, called Baynard's Castle. The Earl of Salisbury, with five hundred men, occupied a place called the Harbour; the Duke of Exeter and the Duke of Somerset, with eight hundred men, were lodged within Temple Bar; the Earl of Warwick, with six hundred men in uniform, at the Grey Friars; and the Earl of Northumberland, with the Lords Egremont and Clifford, with fifteen hundred in Holborn. King and Queen were entertained at the Bishop's Palace; whilst Godfrey Boleyn, the Lord Mayor,* with six thousand men, daily rode round the city, for the purpose of preserving the peace!

The eyes of the whole nation were fixed with earnest expectation on this council. Nor in vain. council summoned.

A. D. 1458.

^{*} Ancestor of Queen Ann Boleyn.

SECTION After a few meetings-greatly aided by the prudent exhortations of the Archbishop, a final agreement was entered into, and a reconciliation established amongst all parties. A public rejoicing was instituted on the occasion; and a magnificent procession to St. Paul's took place, in which the King was conducted in triumph, preceded by the nobles, two and two, one of either party; and the Queen was conducted by the Duke of York!

> Whether this reconciliation was as sincere as it appeared—or how long it might have retained its influence, we have no means of judging. incident, as it seemed, re-kindled all the former animosity into still greater resentment. of the Earl of Warwick in a quarrel with a servant of the King, wounded him, which so roused the indignation of his fellows, that a general attack was made on the followers of the Earl: many were slain, and the Earl himself returning from the council, with great difficulty escaped with his life. After conferring with his father and the Duke of York, he embarked for Calais as governor of that place, taking with him all the King's ships that were in readiness.

It is not improbable that the jealousy and fear of the Queen, incited her to this violent breach of the reconciliation; and that this guarrel was designedly brought on. It is certain, that after the flight of Warwick and the strong remonstrances made by Somerset and York, she prepared for the

most desperate measures. She was determined SECTION that a decisive blow should be struck; and for this end, she laid her plots in the most extensive, manner. Nor had she superfluous time for consideration. The Earl of Salisbury set out from his castle at Middleham, with four thousand men; and the impetuous Queen hurried off the Lord Audley to encounter him. They met at Blackheath.—The contest was obstinate, and ended in favour of the Earl of Salisbury. This victory enabled him to join the Duke of York at Ludlow, which place became the rendezvous of the party. The strife was now become mortal, every preparation was made on both sides and a collision would soon have taken place, had it not been for Sir John Trollope's going over to the King, with a select body of troops. The fears of the confederates were alarmed; and they broke up their camp and fled. The threatening storm seemed once more to be dissipated. The Parliament added their authority to the kingly power, and the three restless and mighty chiefs were outlawed. But Warwick in spite of the King's commands, obstinately retained possession of Calais; and in Ireland, the authority of the Duke of York was supreme.

The harrassed kingdom was now beginning to feel the real evils of this deadly strife; and was about to enter upon a long night of peril and calamity, in which not one of the noble families of

SECTION the land was to escape; and in which thousands of the common people were to suffer: so that, like the infliction on Egypt which came immediately from the hand of Jehovah, it may be said of this chastisement on England, which came from his hand, mediately, that there was "not a house where there was not one dead."-Exod. xii ch. 30 v.

> The triumviri still urging their unquiet and ambitious schemes, sent their emissaries throughout the kingdom. But Kent was made the chief scene of their attempts. They published the most artful and perfidious statements—full of loyalty to the King and love for their devoted country. So that, not only the common people; but persons of rank and station were carried away by their dissimulation.

Battle of Northempton.

The menaces of war were again heard; and the Earls of Warwick and Marche, the latter, son to the Duke of York, ventured forth to the contest against the Queen and Somerset. The two armies met at Northampton, where a bloody engagement ensued, in which the Earl of Warwick was victorious. Many of the bravest nobility were slain. The King was taken prisoner; but the Queen and the Duke of Somerset escaped to the north, and strenuously employed themselves in raising greater forces. With respect to the person of the King, the same dissimulation was practiced, and he was treated with the utmost respect by the victorious Lords.

On hearing of this success, the Duke of York SECTION hastened from Ireland, and without delay, proceeded to London. On entering the house of CHAP. III. Parliament he walked up the hall, and laid his Dukeof York hands upon the throne, as if to read the countenan-claims the Crown. ces of the assembly. A deep silence ensued, until the Archbishop rising, courteously asked him, if he would not pay his respects to the King. The Duke did not expect such a reply; and all the proud ambition of his soul, which had been so long smothered, burst forth with furious indignation. He answered, that he knew no person in the kingdom to whom he owed allegiance; but all owed it to him; and, then, openly asserted his claim to the crown. Accordingly, his title was produced before Parliament in writing, and was debated before that assembly.

The right* of the Duke of York's title on the Settlement female side could not be disputed. The attainder of the dispute.

II.

^{*} The substance of the Duke of York's claim to the crown of England, was as follows-King Edward III. had seven sons, Edward, Prince of Wales; William of Hatfield; Lionell, Duke of Clarence; John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster; Edmund, Duke of York; Thomas, Duke of Gloucester; and William of Windsor. Of these Edward the eldest died during his father's life, and left one son, King Richard II. who died without issue; King Edward's second son William died without issue. Lionell, the third son had one daughter named Phillippa, she married Edward Mortimer, Earl of Marche. Their issue was Roger, Earl of Marche, who had four children of whom only one survived, Anne, sole heires of the house, and married Richard, Earl of Cambridge, son of Edmund Duke of York, fifth son of Edward III. and had by that marriage, Richard, Duke of York the present claimant. So that

SECTION of his grandfather was considered the greatest bar to his claim. But the long, undisputed and acknowledged succession of, Henry, and from a male stem of the same royal stock, was determined to be paramount; and it was ordained, "that forasmuch as Henry had been acknowledged King, for the space of more than thirty eight years, he should enjoy the name, and title, and possession of the kingdom during his life. And if he died, or resigned, or forfeited the same, violating any point of his contract, that the said crown and dignity should be devolved upon the Duke of York and the lawful heirs of his body to the exclusion of every other."

> A document embodying in formal terms, the substance of this decree was signed, sealed and sworn to, by the King and the Duke; and in joy for the settlement of this important question, on All Saints, the King rode in solemn procession to St. Paul's, attended by the Duke of York; and on the following Saturday, the Duke himself was proclaimed by sound of trumpet, heir apparent to the crown of England!

Death of the Duke of York.

Here again, to all appearance, there might have been an end to the troubles of England. dreadful evils were impending! The much exas-

on the male line, the claim of the House of Lancaster, was superior, being descended from the fourth son of Edward III. But the marriage with Anne the heiress of the third son, gave a priority to the claim of the house of York.

perated Queen would not suffer the indignity thus cast upon her offspring, to remain, and made the greatest preparations in her power, for re-establishing her authority. If the Duke of York had not gained the eminence he wished, yet he saw that he had ascended as high as he could, with the consent of the people; and he appeared willing to be satisfied. Having so far, therefore, achieved the purposes of his breast; he was fired with indignation at the contumacy of the Queen, and determined, in the pride of his heart, to chastise a woman's insolence. Such was his precipitation on this occasion, that he set out with only part of his forces, ordering his son the Earl of Marche, to follow, as soon as possible, with all his power. But alas! he was hastening his own destruction. The punishment of his perjury and treachery, and cruelty, was at hand! The impatience of his revenge hastened his march, and precipitated his death. A furious conflict took place at Wakefield, in which the Duke of York was slain, and with him, great numbers of the southern nobility and gentry. The Earl of Clifford was the great champion on the Queen's side, and, was as pre eminent in cruelty as in station. With his own hand he struck off the head of the unfortunate man, whose heart had so lately dilated with joy as heir apparent of England; and having surmounted his pale and ghastly brow, with a mock crown of paper, he presented it to the Queen, at

SECTION
II.
CHAP. III.

Battle of Wakefield.

SECTION the miserable spectacle of which, like another Tomyris, she seemed to be delighted. But this was not the whole of his punishment. more costly sacrifice was to be offcred to the demon of revenge. His younger son the Earl of Rutland, a promising youth of twelve years of age, was in the camp attended by his tutor. He was observed by Clifford, from the circumstance of his rich garb, who, pursuing him with his dagger, asked him who he was. The poor boy struck dumb with fear, with many tears, entreated for pardon. But his tutor coming up and thinking to save his life, at once disclosed his rank. The inhuman Clifford raising his dagger, with a fearful oath, exclaimed: "As thy father's sword hath slain mine, so shall my sword do to him and all his progeny." On saying which, he plunged the barbarous weapon into his heart.

Earl of Marche victorious.

But the Earl of Marche was on his way to avenge these cruel deeds, and to requite his father's and brother's blood. On his way he fell in with the western army, under Tudor, Earl of Pembroke, and Butler, Earl of Ormond; and encountered them at Mortimer's cross, near Ludlow. Nothing could withstand his impetuous valour. The Welsh army was routed. The Earls of Ormond and Pembroke escaped; but Sir Owen Tudor* with many others of the nobility, were sacrificed to the manes of his father.

^{*} Father of the Earl of Pembroke by the widow of Henry V.

In the mean time, the Queen, with her victo- SECTION torious, but undisciplined forces, proceeded towards London. The insolent and notorious conduct of her followers, operated unfavourably on the minds of the people, and, especially, on the citizens of London. But in the midst of their tumult and plunder, and rejoicing, the approach of the Earl of Marche was announced, and threw them into such consternation, that the whole body of their army precipitately fled towards the North. The Earl of Marche entered the metropolis, amidst the greatest demonstrations of joy. His amiable manners—his known courage—his undoubted title and the supposed breach of the late contract, all united in his favor. He was constrained to accept the crown, and was shortly after, proclaimed King, under the title of Edward IV.

CHAP. III.

SECTION II. CHAPTER IV.

EDWARD IV .- CONTINUANCE OF THE CIVIL WAR-RISE OF THE MIDDLE AND LOWER CLASSES OF SOCIETY.

SECTION II. CHAP. 1V. Earl of Marche, Duke A. D. 1460.

THE character of the young King developed itself fortunately to the wishes and expectations of the people, and they flattered themselves that the vessel of the state had, at length, gained a safe of York, pro- mooring under his shelter. But a sudden tempest claimed King, was gathering which was destined to unsettle their hopes and drive them out once more into the sea of confusion and bloodshed. The sword was not yet to slumber; and it was little foreseen by the rejoicing multitude, that even in a few days, more English blood would be shed than on any one occasion since the conquest. The forces of the Queen had rallied; and gained more than usual strength and confidence, from the circumstance of King Henry having placed himself at their head. The young King left London for the North, at

II. CHAP. IV.

the head of forty thousand men, ready to strike a SECTION decisive blow. The armies met at Pontefract. But previous to the general engagement, the retributory punishment of the atrocious Clifford was rendered conspicuous. Whilst he was making some arrangements with respect to the position of the troops, whether from the hurry of the moment, or whether, overcome with the oppressive heat, he took off his gorget-when an arrow from an unknown hand, and without a head, pierced his throat and put an end to his life. But as if his own death was not to suffice for his brutality to the innocent Earl of Rutland, it is remarkable, that Clifford's own son, had, as it were, the mark of Cain set upon him, and lived a beggar through the successive reigns of three Kings. *

The fatal battle of Pontefract followed, which after a contest of ten hours, ended in favour of Pontefract. Edward. Thirty-seven thousand men were left dead on the field, with the Earls of Northumberland and Westmoreland and hosts of the nobility, so that it is said, the neighbouring rivers were dyed with streams of human gore.

After this battle, Edward was crowned at Westminster with great magnificence. The vigour of the young King was shewn, in sending a strong and effective armament into France, to let that nation know, that they must no longer trifle with the English shores; and to strike a wholesome

* Restored in the reign of Henry VII.

SECTION terror into any of the continental powers, who
II. might feel inclined to assist the claims of Henry.

But the indefatigable Queen left nothing untried,

King Henry and at the head of a body of Scots made a furious
taken prisoner. irruption into England.—But to no effect, and to
add to her trials, shortly after, Henry himself entering England in disguise, was taken prisoner,
and committed to the tower.

The Constitution advances.

In the midst of these civil feuds and bloody contentions, the constitution of England was advancing. The common people from the value set upon their services by the contending parties, and by the frequent appeals made to their wishes, began to feel their growing importance; whilst the nobility were made deeply to mourn the evils of their own licentious liberty; and the whole community saw and lamented, that the EXECUTIVE authority should be liable to so many fluctuations, arising from its entire dependence on the person of the Prince. All this was dear bought, but valuable experience, and led the way to the most substantial improvements.

The King's abilities for government,

The King shewed that his abilities were of the most splendid character, and fitted, not only for the managing of warlike affairs, but for administering the duties of peace. Edward gathered up the reins of the executive which had been thrown loose, on the necks of mens passions. He redressed the grievances of the state—Insisted upon the impartial administration of justice, and even sat upon

the bench with the judges. He reduced the ordi- SECTION nary fees of the courts, and reformed and augmen-He also regulated the coin, ted the statute book. and even went so far, as to ordain penalties against blighted by his excessive pride in dress. But alas! as the bright-licentious conest scenes in nature are, oftentimes, overclouded duct. with storms, so the princely qualities of Edward were for a time-shrouded in darkness, through the violence of passion; the sinful indulgence brought on a dark night of peril upon himself and his country; and in its calamitous course, the Almighty Governor again manifested the impartiality and certainty of his punishments; and shewed, that the crimes of Princes as well as people, with dread certainty, bring on their own retribution.

The affairs of the public being established, the King's thoughts were turned to a matrimonial alliance; and Bona, daughter of the Duke of Savoy, and sister to the Queen of France, was selected and approved of by the council. The Earl of Warwick at that time, the most powerful and munificent subject of the realm, was chosen to conduct the embassy. The authority and revenue of this nobleman were too large for any subject, in those turbulent times. His retainers were lodged in every tavern in London, which were filled with his provisions, and such was the number of his domestics, and the extent of his hospitalities, that six oxen were consumed every day, in the single article of beef.

SECTION II. CHAP. IV. King.

Vigorous in all his proceedings, the Earl was not long in conducting the affairs of the King's marriage, to a favorable issue. But before he could The Earl of return from his embassy, a sudden and violent af-Warwick takes umbrage at the fection, had been conceived by the King for the beautiful and accomplished widow of Sir John Gray, slain in Henry's cause, at the battle of Saint Albans. His passion for this lady was such that it blinded his understanding, and obscured the light of reason. Never did the voice of justice and honor speak more audibly, and never were they more completely lost amidst the tempest of passion. He was placing the honor of the Earl of Warwick in jeopardy, and the word of his country—he was insultingly breaking a foreign alliance, which he had voluntarily sued for; and he was laying himself and the country, under an obligation to elevate and provide for the family of the wife he was about to choose. I do not introduce the subject in this manner, to pass a stern censure upon the conduct of the King-There are few men who have a right to pass a condemnatory sentence. I do not presume to be of that number. But the circumstance is introduced, because it is material in this history, and affords striking evidence, that violent passion, however disguised, when pursued in contradiction to justice and honor, will draw after it, certain and inevitable punishment.

> The King is married. The Earl of Warwick is deeply wounded, but smothers his resentment—

the jealousy of the nobility was excited by the ex- SECTION travagant promotion of the Queen, and the honor of the whole nation was tarnished by the transaction.

11. CHAP. 1V.

From the moment of his marriage Edward The King and became jealous and suspicious of Warwick, and the Earl of Warwick muon several occasions discovered evident signs of tually disgusted his uneasiness and dislike. The Earl retired to his castle in disgust, and resolved, at a fitting moment, to overthrow the man, whom he had been mainly instrumental in making a King.

Edward was no despicable rival and busily occupied himself in contracting foreign alliances, one of which, must be particularly noticed as essential in this enquiry, because, afterwards, it became the turning point of his future destiny, and the means of his restoration, after his fall and consequent punishment.—This was his alliance with the Duke of Burgundy, who sent ambassadors to solicit the hand of his sister Margaret for his son Charles, the Count Caralois. The ambassadors were courteously received by all but the Earl of Warwick, and sent back loaded with presents, and with a gracious answer to their request. these negotiations, the old Duke of Burgundy died; and Charles now raised to the Dukedom, desiring the fulfilment of the contract, Margaret proceeded with a splendid train to the continent, and was married to the Duke at Bourges.

But the sword was again furbishing for civil slaughter, and a dreadful and complicated scene

SECTION of confusion and bloodshed is about to pass in 11. CHAP. IV. wick conspires against the King.

review before us. The Earl of Warwick, to strengthen himself for his perilous enterprize, Earl of War- communicates his designs to his two brothers the Archbishop of York and the Marquess Montague, president of that city, and earnestly solicited their assistance. They acceded to his wishes, but with great unwillingness, especially Montague, whose indecision was one of the principle points in the denouement of these tragic scenes. The Earl of Warwick next essayed the Duke of Clarence brother to the King; who was a known mal-content, and had taken umbrage at the elevation of the Queen's family. The Duke is gained, and the unrighteous alliance fortified, by his accepting the Earl's daughter in marriage.

The Archbishop of York and the Marquess Montague are left to manage matters in England; and the Earl and his son-in-law retire to Calais to watch the event. The first effect of their traitorous policy was, an insurrectionary movement in Yorkshire, which at length, became formidable when they were headed by Sir Henry Neville and Sir John Conyers, the latter a man of great ability and reputation. The King on hearing of the rebellion and of the designs of Warwick and his brothers, roused himself to action. He dispatched immediately the Earl of Pembroke and his son Sir Richard Herbert to disperse the rebels in the north; and put himself in readiness to resist the threatened danger.

II. CHAP. IV.

The hostile parties fell in with each other at SECTION Danes-moor near Banbury, and for a long time sustained an equal contest. A great slaughter, took place on both sides; and it is difficult to say whether victory could be claimed by either party. But according to the barbarous custom of those times, many precious lives were afterwards sacrificed, among whom, was the Earl of Pembroke, and his heroic son, Sir Richard Herbert: whilst Sir Henry Neville one of the northern leaders, had been taken prisoner and put to death on the preceding day, by Edward's party. In the mean time, another insurrectionary banditti had broken loose from Northamptonshire, and surprised the Lord Rivers, father to the Queen, and his son John, in their mansion-house at Grafton; and, having brought them to Northampton, beheaded them in the most brutal manner!

> What monster, half so monstrous, As the unrul'd, licentious mob?

The Earl of Warwick and the Duke of Clarence had now arrived in England; and Warwick is made the place of rendezvous. The King hastened to meet his foes.—On the eve of battle, through the influence of some of the principal persons on thrown off his guard. both sides, a negociation was set on foot, which threw the King entirely off his guard, as he made himself sure of an accommodation. But the wary Earl, perceiving that there was an utter want of vigilance in the King's camp, caused a sudden attack

11. CHAP. IV.

SECTION to be made during the night, and with slight opposition took Edward prisoner. We are told that the Earl insultingly triumphed over the monarch; and declared to him his intention of humbling the power he had raised. This was sufficiently galling to the spirit of Edward, rendered proud by his successes and luxurious by the gratification of his desires; and, to complete the ruin of his character, he was beginning to manifest symptoms of his father's duplicity and cruelty.

Taken prisoner, but escapes.

The King was committed to the custody of the Archbishop of York, whose mild and gentle behaviour, afforded him many opportunities of making his escape. He lost not the occasion and reached London in safety.

This was an unexpected and perplexing event to the Earl of Warwick: and he thought it prudent to attend a conference, to which he was invited by Edward, for the adjustment of their affairs. But this conference ended in nothing but mutual recrimination and disgust; and they separated with minds more exasperated, and each resolved on deeds more desperate.

Battle of Stamford.

The storm next made its appearance in Lincolnshire, where Sir Robert Wells, son of Lord Wells, appeared in arms, at the head of thirty thousand men. On hearing of this insurrection, the King sent for Lord Wells, and commanded him to write to his son to desist from his seditious purposes, and taking Lord Wells with him he marched to

meet his enemies at Stamford. He hoped that SECTION the presence of the father would deter the son from proceeding further; but when he found him, still bent upon pursuing his designs, the King, contrary to the law of justice, honour, and propriety, put Lord Wells and his son-in-law, Sir George Dymock, to death! In the battle which followed, Edward was victorious; and most of the noble prisoners, with Sir Robert Wells himself, were executed without mercy.

After this victory, Warwick and Clarence, not considering themselves in a state to meet Edward Circumstance. in the field, embarked for France, where they were favourably received by Louis, who promised them considerable succours; and, in order to secure success to Queen Margaret's cause, a marriage was concluded between the Queen's son and Anne, the second daughter of the Earl of Warwick! Such is the force of circumstance, and such the instability of human affairs!

Remarkable

On the flight of Warwick and Clarence, the King once more devoted himself to criminal indulgence and pleasure; but on receiving tidings of these transactions, he was again roused to action. and adopted severe measures against the leaders of the Lancastrian party. Many submitted themselves to his authority: amongst these, was the Marquess Montague. At the same time, a gentlewoman, whose name the historian does not mention, was sent over into France to detach the Duke

11. CHAP. 1V.

SECTION of Clarence from the interest of the Earl of Warwick, which important service she accomplished, and secured the Duke's secret promise to that effect.

Warwick returns.

The schemes of the Earl of Warwick being now matured, he set sail from Dièppe with a formidable fleet, and landed at Dartmouth. The King, it seems, was taken by surprise; once more engulphed in pleasure, he thought not of the approach of such an enemy. He fondly hoped that Warwick was securely blockaded in the French harbour, by the Duke of Burgundy; and never dreamed a thought, that the winds of heaven had scattered his fleet, far and wide, over the ocean.— Warwick proceeded at once to London, proclaiming King Henry on his way; and such was the energy of one, and the negligence of the other, that Edward had scarcely time to escape, and retreat to Nottingham.—But no matter: there was now no rest for the sole of his foot in England.—The tide of popular affection in favour of Henry, had set in, and it was irresistible. Vast numbers flocked to The excitement was the standard of Warwick. universal. In every street, bonfires were lighted -in every church, the bells were ringing-in every house, psalms and songs were heard-every man shouted, "King Henry!" and every voice echoed, "a Warwick! a Warwick!"

The King fled.

Edward, attended by his brother, the Duke of Gloucester, and the Lords Hastings and Scales,

with some risk and danger, reached Lynn, where SECTION he embarked with seven hundred men, for Hol-Such, indeed was the haste and confusion of CHAP. IV. his departure, that on his landing, he had not sufficient money to pay his passage.

In the mean time, the potent Earl of Warwick, King Henry attended by his brother the Archbishop of York, is released from Prison and reand other nobles, entered the tower, where King stored. Henry had been confined for seven years; and, once more, bowed the knee before him and saluted him King. He was immediately conducted with great pomp, through the city to the Bishop's palace, where a court was held until the thirteenth of the same month, when he went in solemn procession to Saint Paul's; the Earl of Warwick bearing his train—the Earl of Oxford, his sword, and the fickle people crying-'God bless King Henry!'

A Parliament was summoned in Henry's name, which met on the sixth day of November, and proceeded, by its enactments to illustrate the sacred truth, that no confidence can be placed in Princes. nor any trust in the sons of men. Edward was decreed a traitor and usurper—his estates confiscated, and all statutes made under his authority. annulled. The crowns of England and France were confirmed to Henry and his heirs male, and in default of such, to those of the Duke of Clarence in which his interests were consulted, as son in law to the Earl of Warwick. But these were vain

projects, and doomed to be as unsubstantial, as SECTION they were unreasonable and unjust. II.

CHAP. IV. Henry VII. age, presented

to the King.

Through the dark clouds which overshadowed the social heavens, a momentary gleam darted a twelve years of ray of hope; and the nation was permitted to have a transient view of the future King, under whose wise and prudent sway, all these deadly feuds were to be composed, and England was to receive a new impulse in her mighty course. He was then a child about twelve years of age, living in the deepest retirement, unknowing and unknown. This was Lord Henry, grandson to Queen Catharine,* widow of Henry V, great grandson to John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, son of Edward III. He was discovered in his solitude in Pembrokeshire, where he was carefully educated under the eve of the Lady Herbert, by the Earl of Pembroke, and was by him brought to London and presented to King Henry, soon after his restoration. It is asserted by historians that, the King viewing him with much seriousness, predicted his future greatness; and presenting him to the nobility present, uttered these words: 'Lo! this is the person to whom, after all our violent struggles, both we and our adversaries must at length, submit.'

^{*} Owen Tudor, married the widow of King Henry V. and from him sprung Edmund of Hadham, Earl of Richmond father of this Lord Henry. This descent had no affinity with the house of Lancaster. But his mother the Lady Margaret, was grand-daughter to the Duke of Lancaster, fourth son to Edward III. Though even this affinity to the crown of England is not without defect.

This may be thought to border on the marvellous.—It is given as history: but with so many
marvels, both within us, and without, in nature
and morals, a wise man will pause and consider.
Yet I do not think I should have quoted the words
of Henry's prophecy, had it not been for a splendid passage I lately met with, in Sir Humphrey
Davy, which has a strong tendency to humble the
pride of reason; and which, as it contains the result of his long and matured experience, is an invaluable addition to the stores of human wisdom.
—It is as follows.

"In my opinion, profound minds are the most "likely to think lightly of the resources of human " reason: And it is the pert, superficial thinker, "who is generally strongest in every kind of unbe-"lief. The deep philosopher sees changes of "causes and effects so wonderfully and strangely "linked together, that he is usually the last per-"son, to decide upon the impossibility of any two "series of events being independent of each other; "and in science so many natural miracles, as it "were, have been brought to light, such as the "fall of stones from meteors in the atmosphere, the "disarming a thunder cloud by a metallic point, the "production of fire from ice by a metal white as "silver, and referring certain laws of motions of the "sea to the moon, that the physical enquirer is "seldom disposed to assert confidently, on any ab-"struse subjects belonging to the order of natural

SECTION
II.
CHAP. IV.

"things; and still less so, on those relating to the "more mysterious relations of moral events, and "intellectual natures. Again, I envy no quality of "the mind or intellect in others, not genius, power, "will, or fancy; but if I could choose what would "be most delightful, and I believe most useful to "me, I should prefer a firm religious belief, to "every other blessing; for it makes life a thorough "discipline of goodness; creates new hopes, when "all earthly hopes vanish; and throws over the "decay, the destruction of existence, the most gor-"geous of all lights; awakens life even in death, "and from corruption and decay, calls up beauty "and divinity; makes an instrument of torture and "shame, the ladder of ascent to paradise; and far "above all combinations of earthly hopes, calls up "the most delightful visions of palms and amar-"anths in the gardens of the blessed; and the "security of everlasting joys, where the sensualist "and the sceptic view only gloom, decay, annihila-"tion, and despair."

The presentation of Henry VII. to the English nation, has broken in upon the course of the history more than I intended—but there was another "marvellous" circumstance in connection with it, which must be mentioned. At the very moment when the royal boy stood in the presence of Henry, the daughter of the exiled Edward, Elizabeth, who was designed to be his future Queen, was then an infant in her mother's arms, pre-

served from violence, within the sanctuary of SECTION Westminster.

CHAP IV.

But we must now return to our more immediate enquiry. King Edward was busily engaged in King Edward pushing his interest with the Duke of Burgundy spur. upon whom all his hopes depended. But that Duke's situation with respect to France, prevented him from openly espousing his cause. He secretly, however, assisted him, and after many vexatious delays, provided him with a slender armament, with which he landed at Ravenspur, in Yorkshire. But we behold him without satisfaction. He had thrown off the honor and frankness of youth; and following his father's pernicious example, had recourse to falsehood and perjury. He solemnly avowed his allegiance to Henry, and that he came solely for the purpose of claiming his patrimony of York; and under this false pretence, took formal possession of the city. Things remarkably conspired in his favor and he is permitted once more to mount the throne.

The Earl of Warwick had stationed his brother the Marquess Montague in the north, with sufficient force to intercept Edward. But we have seen that he was never ardent in his brother's cause, and his conduct on this occasion, chiefly contributed to the King's success. Edward passed without molestation, through the midst of those, who ought to have opposed him, which gave the people an idea that his return was encouraged

His success.

II. CHAP. IV.

SECTION by those in power. At Nottingham great numbers flocked to his standard. He hastened directly to Warwick to meet his potent adversary, who astonished and enraged at his brother's conduct, had sent a message to the Duke of Clarence, to join him with all speed.

Duke of Gloucester, afterwards Richard III. interferes.

The contending parties had now met, when Edward's brother the Duke of Gloucester, for the first time appears on the stage. Whilst the armies were drawn up in order of battle, he rushed through the lines-made his way to the tent of the Duke of Clarence, and having entered, pretended to deliberate on what we know had long been determined. He soon re-appeared, leading the Duke of Clarence by the hand, and conducting him to the tent of Edward, the two brothers warmly embraced with assurances of mutual forgiveness.

The Earl of Warwick was now alone. ence sent him the best excuse he could frame, for his conduct; and in his brother's name, offered the fairest conditions if he would submit. But it was now too late; he had entangled himself beyond recovery, by the marriage of his daughter with King Henry's son. Besides, he was highly exasperated by the defection of Clarence, and the disobedience of his brother. He was like a chafed lion. His stubborn soul was resolved to act its part; in determining which, he was hastening his own destruction.

Edward, in his external manners, was one of the SECTION most plausible men that ever lived. He determined, if possible, on this important occasion, to secure the good-will of the citizens of London, and, by an artful mixture of severity and clemency Albans. completely gained his object. The Earl of Warwick had advanced as far as Saint Albans; and Edward, to cut off all his hopes of supply from the city, stationed his army between London and Saint Albans. The two armies approached each other, both armed with the most deadly resolution. Edward encamped on Gladmore Heath near Barnet. The Duke of Gloucester was appointed to the van—the rear was to be conducted by Lord Hastings—the main battle by himself. Warwick entrusted his right wing to the Earl of Oxford and the Marquess Montague; his left to the Duke of Exeter; and the main body to the Duke of Somerset. When all was ready, he alighted from horseback, sent away his horse and embraced his generals. It was a parting embrace.

For six well contested hours the battle was in favour of Warwick, and was lost by the simplest Earl of Warincident. The Earl of Oxford had given as a badge to his men, a star with streams.—The badge of Edward, was the sun in his brightness. Whilst Oxford was pushing on his men from the right wing, they were mistaken by the Duke of Somerset's men in the van, for the flying adherents of Edward, and they attacked them with great

II. CHAP. 1V. Battle of St.

SECTION fury. Oxford astonished, and fearful of treachery, Il. CHAP. IV.

fled with his men, which rendered the affair desperate on the side of Warwick. In vain he attempted to re-establish his position and regain the day. His efforts were utterly ineffectual, and at length, in despair of the contest, he furiously rushed into the thickest of the fight; on observing which, his brother the Marquess Montague hastened to his rescue. But there was no rescue.

wick slain.

Earl of War- They both fell covered with wounds. Thus perished this powerful Earl, and with him ten thousand men. His character is worth a delineator. He appeared to be governed more by resolute enterprize, than by low ambition; and by his gigantic efforts he laid the most extensive foundation for the future greatness of his family. married his two daughters to two princes; one to Edward, the son of Henry and heir to the house of Lancaster, and the other, to the Duke of Clarence, brother to Edward of the house of York. notwithstanding, the future greatness of his family was denied to him. His sons in law, as we shall see, met with violent and untimely deaths. the sons of the Duke of Clarence, who arrived at any age, died by the axe of the executioner; whilst his youngest daughter, the only one who arrived at any eminence, by her marriage with the Duke of Gloucester, was the miserable Queen of an usurper, and was exterminated by poison. Just Heaven! what a lesson! if posterity would

only have been instructed by it, and have learnt, SECTION that violent dealing, in opposition to thy just and II. holy law, will sooner or later, experience its due CHAP. IV. reward and punishment!

Decisive as was the late victory, yet the chas- Queen Martisement of England and her Queen, was not yet garet reduced complete. Queen Margaret and her French allies, with Prince Edward, landed at Weymouth, and took up their quarters at Bath, where the Duke of Somerset had great influence. But Edward determined to allow them as short a time as possible for increasing their strength; and a general engagement, which was the twelth, was brought about at Tewkesbury. This Battle was won by a stratagem of the Duke of Gloucester, who commanded the right wing. The evil machinations of Queen Margaret, which were, in a great measure, the source of all these evils, were now about to receive the most anguish-stirring punishment. Before the battle, she counselled her generals, that her son should be sent back to France for safety, as upon him, rested all their future hopes. Her counsel was good, but fatally for her happiness, it was overruled by her Captains. In the battle her son was taken prisoner, and being conducted into the presence of Edward, he was asked by the Conqueror, how he dared to set his foot, in an hostile manner, upon the shores of England?—the noble minded youth answered, that he came to recover his father's kingdom, and to claim his own

CHAP. IV. Her son murdered.

II.

SECTION inheritance, descended to him, through many generations. At this answer, Edward was ungenerously offended, and pushed him aside, disdainfully with his spear. It was a sufficient signal. The ignoble Duke of Gloucester assisted by Clarence, Dorset and Hastings, dispatched the helpless youth with their poinards. I mention their names thus distinctly, because we shall find the retributory vengeance of the Most High speedily overtaking them.

Death of King Henry.

This barbarous act was shortly after followed by another, in some respects more monstrous, in which, the Duke of Gloucester was the sole actor. This wicked man, whose mind was full of every evil device, like the prowling felon of the forest, ever intent upon deeds of violence, visited the unfortunate Henry in prison. Of the peculiar circumstances of this interview, we know nothing, except that the Duke became his assassin, and stabbed the mild and patient Monarch to the heart! Such a deed was reserved for such a man. the midst of the unprecedented dangers and treasons, to which this Monarch had been exposed, there never was found one sufficiently abandoned, who could lift his hand against King Henry!not even, the Duke of York!-

Character of Henry VI.

Henry VI. possessed every monastic virtue without their accompanying vices. He was mild and merciful—patient—humble—chaste—temperate and self denying. He never inflicted an injury, and never had a personal enemy. One might SECTION have expected that so many virtues owed their existence to the powerful influence of Christianity. But christianity, does not consist, solely, in the self denying virtues. It gives, indeed, the command over the passions, by filling the mind with objects more worthy of its pursuit, and by instilling new principles of action. But its direct tendency, is, to enlarge the understanding, to arm the active powers with energy, and to teach the subject of its influence, that the performance of the duties attached to his station, is a PARAMOUNT OBLIGATION. In council, therefore, it renders a man prudent, wise and just-in public, mild and unassuming; in private, holy and temperate—under injury, patient and submissive—in prosperity, equable and condescending; in adversity, contented and cheerful, and in the field of battle, courageous. These are its legitimate results upon the character. Of its power in the closet, we are not now speaking. If we try King Henry by this standard, his moral acquirements will be found defective. He He affords the was eminently deficient in the performance of the best example of active duties of his high station; and the time which ought to have been allotted to their energetic discharge, was consumed in those religious exercises, which had usurped the place of christianity. He is a correct example of being "righteous overmuch" He was the "beau ideale" of Popery. He was the perfect representation of a christian

CHAP. 1V.

11. CHAP. IV.

SECTION on the model of that church, and, in some points of view, it was a beautiful portraiture. But truth is proportionate; and Christianity, which is its essence, never leaves, the character fully under its influence, defective in any essential parts. Henry's character was exceedingly defective in the active virtues. Yet he was scrupulously attentive in the performance of the minutest directions of the church. It is therefore evident, that if the system of that church does not involve principles, inconsistent with truth, i. e. with christianity, Henry must have been one of the most splendid characters that ever existed. I do not mean to intimate, that christianity did not exist in Henry. But if it did, it was ill directed. And this we consider to have been the genius of Popery .-- Where christianity exists in the heart, it destroys its energy, where it does not, it holds out temptation to perjury and crime. So that, it has a tendency to nullify the genuine influence of christianity, driving men to the extremes of virtue and vice, for the truth of which, let Henry VI. and the Duke of York stand for examples.—One, is an anchorite in virtue, the other, a fclon in guilt.—

> This defect in Henry's character drew after it, its necessary results, which were overruled by the moral Governor, not only to his own punishment, but in himself and his son, to the expiation of the treason and blood and usurpation of his Grandfather. The facts connected with this assertion

are so palpable, that there can be no occasion to SECTION retrace the subject. II.

CHAP. IV.

In Henry VI., the glory of Henry IV.—for the establishment of which, he waded through so many crimes, was utterly extinguished—affording a monitory lesson to all posterity, that "Riches profit not in the day of wrath;" * and, that "the house of the wicked shall be overthrown". +

Margaret the Queen of the unfortunate Henry, was still alive, and of necessity, plunged into the depths of the most bitter grief, A woman as we have seen, of masculine courage-proud, imperious and factious in prosperity—in adversity, vindictive and resolute. She had warm affections. was a tried and faithful wife; and a careful and affectionate mother. But she was ambitious, treacherous and cruel.

Throughout the whole of the period which has just passed under review, she stood forth as the end of Queen most prominent person in England, and had she pursued the well-being of her family, on just and legitimate grounds, she had not, at last, become so utterly destitute. But after the death of her husband and son, she sunk into such obscurity, that history does not tell us where she died!

Can this be Margaret's lot? Fair England's Queen-Rival, in counsel, to the wise-in Valour, to the brave; and single-handed, Sole antagonist of Kings!

* Prov. xi. 4. + Prov. xiv. 11.

II.
CHAP. IV.
Duke of
Richmond
escapes,

SECTION

Jasper, Earl of Pembroke, who had been conspicuous throughout the civil war, upon the last overthrow of his party—retired with his nephew the Duke of Richmond, the only remaining scion of the family of Lancaster; and fled into Bretagne. It was indeed a narrow escape. Such an one as manifests the interference of a superior and superintending power, watching over the future King of England.

In the mean time, the Duke of Burgundy sent an embassy to solicit assistance against the French King. A request from such a quarter could not be denied. Edward accordingly, conducted one of the best appointed English armies, that had ever appeared in that country. Its approach created considerable alarm, but Louis, by his courtesy and bribery, turned aside the threatened blow. A treaty of peace was entered into, and it was solemnly stipulated, that the Dauphin should marry the King's daughter Elizabeth. The prospect of such an alliance was highly gratifying to Edward, and he returned to England in great pomp.

Henry VII. saved from destruction.

Every thing was now settled to the King's mind, and he would fain have indulged himself in those luxurious and sinful pleasures, which were congenial to his disposition. But one thing still oppressed him. There was yet one obstacle to the full fruition of the happiness which seemed within his reach, and he resolved upon the most

guilty measures to remove it. For this purpose SECTION he sent a chosen embassy, laden with bribes and promises, into Bretagne, to obtain possession of Chap. IV. the Earl of Richmond, at any price. His price was sufficient to buy the whole court of the Duke of Bretagne; and it was agreed, that the young Prince should be delivered up to his will. destruction now appeared inevitable.—But he was still to be saved; and the betrayed and deserted youth found one friend, in that venal court. his name be recorded:—Peter Landoès, treasurer to the Duke of Bretagne.—By means of this person, he escaped from the English ambassador, to whom he had been delivered by the Duke of Bretagne, to a sanctuary, from whence he could not be removed. On the return of the embassy without their prey, though Edward was greatly mortified, yet he endeavoured to bear the evil which could not be remedied; gave full license to every indulgence of his heart, and studied all the arts of popularity.

Whilst thus living in pleasure,—jealousy and treachery were at work within the bosom of his rence circumown family. The Queen suspected the ambitious designs of the Duke of Clarence, in case of the King's death. This jealousy was inflamed where it originated, by the Duke of Gloucester, in whose deep soul, the darkest and deadliest deeds were preparing. The smothered flame at length, burst forth, and the Duke of Clarence was accused of

II. CHAP. IV.

SECTION treason—a crime, of which he had never thought; and it is said, that he was drowned by his own choice, in a vessel of wine. He was the first of the murderers of the late Prince of Wales, who suffered the Divine vengeance. In his destruction the King was an unwilling accomplice.—It afterwards cost him many a bitter pang, and he was often heard to exclaim, when any person interceded with him for a malefactor.—" Oh my unfortunate brother! there was none to plead for thee!"-His natural gaity and affableness of manner forsook him, and he beame, it is said, avaricious!

The King's anxiety to marry his Dauphin.

The great object of his anxiety was now the consummation of the marriage of his daughter, daughter to the with the Dauphin of France; and which, if it had taken place would have proved alike injurious to his own family, and fatal to the peace and happiness of England. No: his daughter was to become the wife of the man, whom he had diligently sought to destroy; and by that alliance, the foundations of England's glory were to be established and her happiness cemented! Her marriage with the Dauphin was frustrated, solely by the caprice of the French Monarch, whose falsehood, perjury, and avarice, were all employed on the occasion. He indulged Edward's fondest hopes, by the fairest promises and the most solemn oaths; and so secure was the King of his fidelity, that when it was told him, that, the Dauphin was married, he would not credit the intelligence, till the same

person affirmed, that he had seen the celebration SECTION 11. of the nuptials. CHAP. IV.

The outraged father and insulted Monarch, made instant preparations for war. But his days King's death. were numbered. He was seized with a sudden melancholy. Some historians say, that he died of a surfeit, which is not improbable, when his habits are considered. Be that as it may, his death was accompanied with the most bitter reflections; and he left the world, under the most terrifying apprehensions.

Never surely was there a more atrocious family Character of than that of York; and never was a family more the House of signally punished. The father the Duke of York, perished in battle: of his three brothers, the Earl of Rutland, was murdered in cold blood, the Duke of Clarence, came to a violent end by intrigue and treachery; and the Duke of Gloucester, as we shall see, died in battle, and was treated with every ignominy. His two sons were murdered by their unnatural uncle; and his seven daughters died without issue! affording demonstrative evidence of the truth of the divine oracle, which declares: "that the lamp of the wicked shall be put out, and their name covered with darkness." *

^{*} Book of Job. xviii. 6. xxi. 17. Proverbs xiii. 9.

SECTION II. CHAPTER V.

EDWARD V .- RETRIBUTION ON THE HOUSE OF YORK.

II. Силр. V. Edward V. April 9. A. D. 1483.

SECTION EDWARD V. eldest son of the deceased monarch, was only twelve years old, on the death of his father, and was proclaimed King of England, under the above title; but his reign was a brief and tragic span, and was hurried to its unnatural close, by the monstrous Duke of Gloucester, who appears to be set forth for the purpose of shewing, to what extent of atrocity, human nature can advance. At the time of his father's death, the young King and his brother the Duke of York, were at Ludlow, in Shropshire, with their mother; and in the midst of her relatives and friends. The wily traitor, their uncle, saw that he could not advance a single step in his designs, whilst the young Princes were thus surrounded by their natural guardians and allies. He determined therefore, to detach such protectors from the persons SECTION of his nephews; and to remove the latter, entirely out of the sphere of their influence. To effect, this, he insinuated to the more ancient nobility, Plots of the Duke of Glouthat they were unjustly deprived of their constitutional right of waiting upon the King; and that their exclusion from his presence, was an implied He addressed himself, in particular, to the haughty Duke of Buckingham, and to Lord Hastings, lord chamberlain.—He succeeded, and a league of ambition, pride and avarice was formed, the legitimate fruits of which, soon made their appearance.

The time appointed for the coronation was approaching, and when they found the King was to be attended from Shropshire, with an unusual guard, they wrote in strong terms to the King's mother, pointing out the danger of such a step: that it would give birth to suspicions and jealousies, and unsettle the minds of many who had been just reconciled.—At the same time, they wrote the most reverential letters to the young King .-Their scheme succeeded: and the King moved forward with a very slender retinue.

The Protector and the Duke of Buckingham, proceeded to Northampton, to shew all honor to the royal progress. On the King's arrival, they pretended there was no suitable convenience for his entertainment, on account of the crowded state of the town, and conducted him to Stoney Strat-

II. Снар. V.

SECTION ford. They themselves took up their quarters at Northampton; and under pretence of shewing him honour, detained with them the Lord Rivers, uncle to the King. They entertained Rivers to a late hour, and when he retired to his lodging, they ordered the keys of the gates to be brought to them. Their servants, who were billetted in the neighbouring villages, they ordered to occupy all the passes to Stratford, and to let no one pass before them. In the morning, before they left Northampton, they secured Lord Rivers; and hasting to Stratford, found the young King mounting his horse, whom they reverently saluted; but the next moment, arrested the King's half-brother, the Lord Richard Grey, whom they accused together with the Marquess of Dorset and Lord Rivers, of a conspiracy to get possession of the kingdom.

Queen flies to sanctuary.

The King was now in the hands of the Protector, but he could proceed no further in his designs, unless he could gain possession of his brother the Duke of York. But this was a difficult task.— The Queen was now alive to the perfidy of Gloucester, and had fled with her son to the sanctuary of Westminster.

A council was summoned, in which it was resolved, through the artifices of Gloucester and the vehemence of Buckingham, that it was inconsistent with the dignity of the nation, and the respect due to the King and to themselves, that the

King's brother should be held in sanctuary; and SECTION it was further determined, that he must be brought away, either by persuasion or force. A deputation of Lords was appointed, at the head of which was Russel, Archbishop of York.—The deputation waited upon the Queen, and proceeded from persuasion to threats, till the terrified Queen, at length, moved by the entreaties and solemn assurances of the Archbishop, delivered up her son, under the most agonizing forebodings of his fate.

The Protector, up to this period, confined within his own breast, his ultimate designs; but he now felt, that the concurrence of others was necessary to his full success: he addressed himself accordingly, to the Duke of Buckingham, whom he had hitherto made use of as an unconscious instrument. I should be in danger of writing a novel were I to detail the particulars. Suffice it to say, that the Duke was gained by the most extravagant promises. The Duke of Gloucester eontracting, to give his only son in marriage to the Duke's daughter.

The great matter of consultation in the council chamber, where the chief men of the nation were assembled, and at the head of whom, was Hastings Lord Chamberlain, was the approaching coronation. The Protector was at the head of another council. council, whose deliberations were secret; and whose object was to frustrate the deliberations of the grand council; and to place the Protector upon

II. CHAP. V.

II. CHAP. V.

SECTION the throne. The first victim to the machinations of the secret council was Lord Hastings, who was stricken down, at a moment when he thought himself most secure, and highest in the Protector's favor. He had a spy in the secret councila man of the name of Catesby—a person bound to Hastings by every obligation, and, in whom he reposed the greatest confidence. This misplaced confidence was the ruin of himself and his friends. For, when Lord Stanley intimated his fears, lest dangerous things were deliberated in the secret council, he was silenced by Lord Hastings, with the assurance, that nothing of importance could be transacted without his knowledge. The Protector was greatly attached to Hastings, and had always found him a steady adherent and friend; and no man could have assisted him more in his ulterior designs. Catesby was commissioned by the Protector to open the subject to the Chamberlain, and, if possible, to gain his concurrence. But he never fulfilled his commission. He was faithless to one master, and treacherous to the other. He determined to undermine his benefactor and to enrich himself with the spoils. He took every opportunity of whispering suspicions into the ear of the Protector; and, at length, intimated that the death of Hastings was the only means of their security—the Protector admitted the demon into his breast, all the jealousy and fury of his nature were roused, and he lost no time in exccuting the purpose upon which he had determined. SECTION -On the 13th day of June, 1483, he entered the council chamber of the tower, in great haste and with an angry countenance: having seated himself, he accused the Queen and others of forming a conspiracy against him. The accusation was Hastings. so preposterous, that the Chamberlain demurred as to the possibility of its existence. The Protector rising up, vehemently accused him of being a party; and striking the council table with his hand, the room was filled with armed men.— Lord Hastings was arrested by the command of the Protector; and after a brief moment allowed for confession, he was hurried into the court, and beheaded on a log of wood which happened to be This circumstance in our history would not have been mentioned, had it not been to shew the avenging hand of Heaven.—Hastings was ANO-THER OF THE MURDERERS OF EDWARD PRINCE OF WALES. The event of his death took place on the very day appointed for the execution of the Lords Rivers and Grey, and in which, he was a principal agent. The circumstances of his fate were such, as to induce the learned and contemplative Raleigh to remark that, "he never in any history, observed a clearer manifestation of the judgment of God, than in the death of Hastings. "*

The toilsome and arduous path of the Duke of Gloucester, was thus far cleared of the obstacles

* Echard.

CHAP. V.

II. CHAP. V.

SECTION which opposed its fatal progress. It was now time to sound the inclinations of the people, and to prepare them for becoming parties to his elevation.— To carry his intentions into effect, he was obliged to enlarge his plan, and to increase the number of his instruments.—One of these, was Sir Edward Shaw the Lord Mayor; and, even ecclesiastics were found, who refused not to desecrate their office, and to cover themselves with disgrace and infamy.—Two are particularly named, John Shaw brother to the Mayor, and Parker, provincial of the Augustine friars. Both these men were in high repute with the people as preachers; and their object was to make the best use of the influence it gave them; and, if possible, to gain the people to the designs of the Protector. The former, was to harangue at the Spittal, and the latter, at St. Paul's cross. Their instructions were, to intimate the illegitimacy of the late King—but to dwell forcibly on that of the young Princes, from the circumstance of their father's former contract of marriage, which had been broken by him. The Spittal preacher in the midst of his discourse, lost his voice and was obliged to desist. The other at St. Paul's cross, was still more unfortunate. His eloquence, no doubt, was as irresistible, as the ingenuity of his text, was beyond comparison: "The multiplying brood of the ungodly shall not thrive, nor take deep rooting from bastard slips."*

^{*} Apoc. Wisd. iv. 3.

CHAP. V.

to gain a complete triumph over the minds of the SECTION assembled multitude, it was agreed that at the very height of his pancgyric, the Protector was to make his appearance. But alas! the pancgyric on rapid wings mounted to its climax,-but no Protector appeared! and the preacher had descended to a humbler strain of common place, before he arrived. It was an awkward predicament: the happy moment had been lost: he endcavoured to retrace his flight, but in vain. The aerial path would not be retraced. He essayed again and again, and threw out some flatteries which were so gross, that they appeared more like libels, than panegyric, and the people, instead of throwing up their caps, and crying King Richard, stood like statucs. The preacher became confused, and hastily closed his sermon; and, the two personages retired, equally mortified and chagrined. The vexation and disappointment of the preacher were so great, that he died, in consequence.—So let all traitors to God and their King perish!

The Protector, however, in no way deterred by this inauspicious beginning, proceeded to form new Plot proceeds. In the scenes which followed, the Duke of Buckingham became the principal actor; and, in conjunction with the Lord Mayor, undertook to bring the citizens to an acknowledgment of Richard's title. For this purpose, with a noble retinue of lords and gentlemen, he attended a grand meeting of the common council and citizens, con-

The tragic

II. Снар. V.

SECTION vened in the Guild Hall. The Duke addressed them in an elaborate speech, in which he exaggerated the mismanagement of the last reign, insisted on the illegitimacy of the young Princes, and magnified the pretentions and abilities of the Protector. But when he had concluded, much to his chagrin, not a voice cried, "King Richard!" The mayor, who had been expected to prepare the people for the occasion, suggested that he could not be understood. The Duke, then, in a louder and plainer manner, went over the same ground. But to the same effect: there was silence still. The Duke a third time, in rather an angry tone, resumed: He declared that his affection for the citizens brought him to consult them. He had no doubt, he said, that the rest of the nation, with the nobility, would approve of his proposition, without their aid; but his regard for them induced, him to make them the offer, that they might be foremost in promoting a matter, in which, the prosperity of the kingdom was so deeply involved.

On the conclusion of these observations the citizens began to look at each other, when some of Buckingham's servants threw up their hats and cried "King Richard!" and, the Duke seizing the moment, applauded their wisdom and unanimity, and begged them to be in readiness, early next morning, to attend him with a petition to the Protector, by which he might be induced to comply with a request so much desired by them, and SECTION the whole nation.

II.

Chap. V.

This miserable farce was enacted next morning, and the Duke at the head of a deputation waited upon the Protector, to crave his acceptance of the The Protector appeared to be greatly amazed at the proposition. The Duke of Buckingham, then, at some length, entered into the grievances of the state—the illegitimacy of the Princes, and the wishes of the citizens, and earnestly solicited him that he would vouchsafe to accept the crown, to the honor of God and the safety of the realm. The Protector with an angry look replied, that though there was some truth in what he had said, yet, that his love for his brother Edward, and affection for his children, would not allow him to accept their offer; and further, that it would afford too fair an opportunity to the envious and malignant, to accuse him of ambitious views. At the same time, he would kindly accept their wishes, inasmuch as they proceeded from honest affection to his person, and sincere love for their country; that his best abilities should be given to the service of the King; and in such a way, as to leave them nothing to desire. This answer being given, the Duke stepped aside, as if to confer with the deputation, and, in a short time returning under the balcony, where the Protector was stationed, requested pardon,—which being obtained, he proceeded in a louder voice and with a fuller tone,

II. Снар. V.

SECTION to declare, that the nation was resolved not to admit the title of the sons of Edward; and that if he refused the offer now made to him, they should be obliged to tender it, in another quarter.

> The Protector affected some surprise at this threat; and answered, that he was sorry they entertained such an opinion of his brother's children; but as there was none beside himself, who could have any title to the throne, and that to his right of inheritance, they had been pleased to add that of election, he should yield to their entreaties, and from that time, take upon him the title and preeminence of the two states of England and France. -He then entreated God to continue him no longer in life, than, that life should be serviceable to his country!

> By such miserable pretences, and under such blasphemous asseverations, did Richard III. gain possession of the English throne; in which transaction, none were more miserably deceived than the principal actors themselves, who in every step, were plotting their own eventual destruction, whilst they were promising to themselves the sweets of ambition.

SECTION II.—CHAPTER VI.

RICHARD III.—EXTINCTION OF THE HOUSE OF YORK—

CLOSE OF THE CIVIL WAR.—BREAKING UP OF THE

ARISTOCRATIC POWER.

SECTION RICHARD Duke of Gloucester, the eighth and youngest son of Richard Duke of York, was proclaimed King of England on the twenty-second A. D. 1483. day of June, under the title of Richard III. the space of two years, he was allowed to hold his badly acquired pre-eminence—but not in peace.— By his excessive ambition and cruelty, he not only became the extirpater of his own house, of which he was the last, but, was the instrument of removing every obstacle out of the way, and facilitating to the utmost, the advance of the house of Lancaster. His acts of falsehood and his deeds of blood, were remarkably overruled; and, he became the wicked and unconscious instrument of hastening a new era in the career and prosperity of England!

SECTION
II.
CHAP. V1.

Nothing now seemed to him, to be wanting to the full establishment of his usurped authority, but the ceremonial of his coronation; which he determined to celebrate in the most sumptuous manner, and with the most splendid accompaniments. The preceding day he went in procession, with great pomp, to the tower, for the purpose of exercising the regal prerogative, in conferring titles of honor. The usurper, on that day of his triumph, when he was about to create new forms of grandeur, as the emblems of his power, little suspected that, his chief errand to the tower, was to liberate from its dungeons, the man, who was to lay the foundation of his overthrow.

He created Lord Thomas Howard, Duke of Norfolk, and Thomas Howard, his son, Earl of Surrey; and Lord Francis Lovell, viscount and Lord Chamberlain, with seventeen Knights of the Bath. At the same time, he proceeded to dispose of the state prisoners who had been immured, since the arrest and execution of Hastings. The Archbishop of York he restored to liberty. The Lord Stanley was merely retained as an hostage for the conduct of his Son, the Lord Strange, who was raising forces in Lancashire. The Bishop of Ely whose integrity was equal to his ability, and whose devotion to the children of Edward, was unalterable, was detained—yet that his restraint might be removed from the public eye, and the Bishop himself, be as remote as possible, from the politics of the day, he was commit- SECTION ted to the custody of the Duke of Buckingham, CHAP. IV. who sent him to his castle in Brecknockshire,— Upon this single circumstance, unimportant as it appears, turned, in a great measure, the future destinies of England!

Disgust of

But previous even to the coronation, the Duke of Buckingham was disgusted with the conduct of Buckingham. the King, and probably, ashamed, of the part he had taken in his elevation. Certain it is, that he pleaded indisposition, and desired to be excused attendance at the approaching ceremony. The King, however, was not to be deceived; and he commanded his attendance, which the Duke gave; but attended with such a magnificent and pompous train, that it effectually widened the breach.

The next thing for Richard, was to look abroad, and to ascertain, in what manner his title was likely duct of the to be recognized by foreign powers. His first step was to send an embassy to the King of France, respecting the league and tribute, which had been settled between him and his brother.-But the embassy was delayed, and did not arrive at their destination, till after the murder of the two Princes, whose death he had, in that short interval, contrived and accomplished. It is impossible to dwell upon this tragical story. His Ambassadors were treated with the indignity which the conduct of their master deserved: and the King of France would not condescend to give them an audience.

French King.

SECTION II. CHAP. VI.

As so little support was to be expected from without, he determined to befriend himself. He proceeded to strengthen his usurped authority, by a second coronation, which he caused to take place at York; at which time, also, he invested his Son with the principality of Wales. But these bright and flattering prospects were suddenly overcast with deepest gloom, by the death of this only son: whilst his throne itself, was undermined by the intrigues of the dissatisfied Buckingham.

The Duke and Ely conspire.

Under the colour of a feigned indisposition, he the Bishop of had retired to his castle at Brecknock, to brood over his revenge. It was not long before his dissatisfaction was discovered by his prisoner, the Bishop of Ely. The prudent Bishop sounded the Duke as to his own intentions respecting the crown, and finding that the Duke abandoned all his pretensions, in favour of the Earl of Richmond, as the nearest heir to the house of Lancaster, it was agreed, that immediate steps should be taken to raise him to the throne. It was proposed by the Bishop as the most probable means of healing the distractions of England, to unite the two houses of York and Lancaster, by the marriage of the Earl of Richmond with Elizabeth, eldest daughter of the late King Edward IV. It was next determined to treat with the Countess of Richmond. mother to the Earl; and for this purpose, the Bishop proposed to send for a trusty servant of the Countess, whom he knew to be discreet and faithful in matters of trust and importance. The name SECTION of this person was Reginald Gray; and on his arrival, they gave him the following instructions to his mistress. 'That considering the kingdom could not be reduced to quiet, but by advancing the Earl of Richmond to the crown, and uniting the two houses of York and Lancaster by marriage —that the Countess of Richmond should treat of this matter with Queen Elizabeth, and having obtained her eldest daughter, she should send into Bretagne to her son; and if he promised to marry her, whenever he was crowned, they engaged by joining the forces of the faction to make him King.'

This foundation being laid, the Bishop escaped into Flanders, where he was made the instrument of saving the scheme from destruction. Queen was yet in sanctuary; and the Countess of Richmond conveyed to her the instructions she had received, through her physician. The Queen was overjoyed at the proposal, and felt as if her misfortunes were about to receive a termination. But alas! she was doomed to afford one of the most striking examples of woman's inconstancy. Messengers were immediately dispatched to the Earl, in Bretagne. He fully acquiesced in the plan, and, in conjunction with the Duke of Bretagne, entered into active preparations, and for the present, sent over a very encouraging message.

The adherents of the Earl of Richmond were now, every where, in a state of activity; and the

II. CHAP. VI.

SECTION Bishop of Ely, did much to forward the design by his letters from Flanders. But although the greatest secresy was observed, yet the wary and jealous King was on his guard; and suspecting the Duke of Buckingham to be the prime mover of the disaffection which he could not fail to observe, he endeavoured more effectually to gain him by greater and more extravagant promises. But the Duke was not to be ensnared a second time, and sent continual excuses on account of indisposition.

Civil War begins.

At length, the King dissatisfied with his evasions, sent him a peremptory command to appear before him. This was as peremptorily refused, and, became the immediate signal for war. Marquess of Dorset, son to the Queen Dowager, left his sanctuary, and went into Lancashire, for the purpose of levying troops. In Devonshire and Cornwall, Sir Edward Courtney and his brother, the Bishop of Exeter, were in arms; and Sir Richard Guilford was making preparations in Kent.

The King understanding these movements, set out, at the head of his army, and marched to Shrewsbury, whilst the Duke of Buckingham, who was now about to receive the due reward of his past treachery and crimes, directed his course towards Gloucester, intending to pass the Severn, for the purpose of forming a junction with the other leaders of the party. But when he approached the banks of that river, he found it swollen SECTION to such an unusual degree, that the passage was impossible. The waters which were never known, in the memory of man, to have risen to such a height, covered the neighbouring hills. The Duke was, therefore, necessarily detained; which led to his ruin; for, the sufferings of his army were so great, from the incessant rains and want of provisions—that with one consent, they disbanded themselves and returned home.

The Duke thus deserted, instead of following their example, became infatuated; and took refuge in the house of an old servant of the family, who was under infinite obligations to him; and hoped there to find a safe asylum from the pursuit of his enemies.

The other leaders hearing of the Duke's misfortune fled, and reached Bretagne in safety. Buckingham Whilst the King used the most vigorous methods perishes. for breaking up the conspiracy: he blockaded all the sea ports-fitted out a fleet to observe the motions of the Earl of Richmond; and issued a proclamation of a general pardon, and one thousand pounds reward, to any person who would deliver up the Duke of Buckingham. eternal disgrace, Bannister with whom he had secreted himself, betrayed his benefactor to the Sheriff of Shropshire, who apprehended the once high, and noble, and potent Duke, digging in a potatoe field, in the disguise of a day labourer!

CHAP. VI.

SECTION
II.
CHAP. VI.

He was conducted to Shrewsbury, and the King denying him his presence, he was beheaded without process, in the Market-place.

This brief campaign did nothing towards the furtherance of the great catastrophe of the reign, and seems intended, by the Almighty Governor, to exhibit, in the most open and public manner, the downfall and punishment of the proud, and treacherous, and capricious Duke of Buckingham. was allowed, and so far it was well for him, to retrace his steps, to be the first mover in the restoration of the line of Lancaster; but he was not counted worthy to behold it. SO FALL THE WICKED! Whilst these things were going on, and the Duke of Buckingham was receiving the due reward of his deeds—the Earl of Richmond had put to sea; but his fleet, was dispersed by a storm. He stood however, towards the English shore, in hopes of hearing some intelligence respecting his adherents; but finding none to receive him—he returned to Normandy. He there learnt the entire failure of the first attempt, and the death of the English The party, however, did not despair of final success; and in the Cathedral of Rennes, swore to the execution of the compact, as at first proposed; and all present, gave their fealty to the Earl of Richmond, as King of England.

Richard was not idle. In a parliament convened in London, the Earl and his adherents were outlawed, and their estates confiscated, whilst he

CHAP. VI.

himself determined, if possible, by arts of his SECTION own, to get the Earl into his possession. He sent a messenger to the Duke of Bretagne, entrusted, with the most magnificent presents, and still more munificent promises—offering all Richmondshire—all the Earl's revenues—and the estates of all those who had fled from England into Bretagne! On the arrival of the ambassadors, the Duke of Bretagne was under the influence of a delirium to which he was subject; and the whole Richmond providentially sa-Dukedom was under the management of Peter ved by Landoes Landoès, a name which has been before introduced who demands a whole district to the reader. On both occasions, he was made in the North the instrument of saving the future King of Eng-Riding of Yorkshire. land, but in different ways. On the former occasion, as we have seen, the Earl was saved by his VIRTUE—on the present, by his AVARICE. virtue of Peter Landoès was to be bought. was captivated with the golden bribe of Richard. He did not forget his incapacitated master, but demanded Richmondshire for his own share. It was thus necessary to write to England, for directions.—This delay saved the Earl. The ever watchful Bishop of Ely became acquainted with their design, and gave as timely notice as he could, to the Earl of Richmond, who escaped into France; but, so narrowly was his escape effected, that another hour would have proved his ruin.

The attentive reader will pause, over the circumstances of this transaction, in which he will

The Earl of

II. CHAP. VI.

SECTION discern the hand of a controlling power, that can cause the wicked to be taken "in the crafty wiliness which they have imagined" and can render the vices of men subservient to the purposes of his goodness.

> At Montargis, the Earl was joined by John Vere, Earl of Oxford, who, since the battle of Barnet had been confined in the Castle of Vannes. He not only contrived his own escape, but prevailed on Sir John Blunt the Governor of the Castle, and Sir John Fortesque, porter of Calais, to join the cause of Richmond.

Active measures of the King.

In the mean time, Richard was incessantly employed in propping up his already tottering throne, and meditated schemes more and more heinous. The first was, to decoy the Queen Dowager and her daughter, into his hands—the second was, to rid himself of his wife, and the third, to marry his niece the Princess Elizabeth! It is not necessary to enlarge. He completely succeeded in his first design. The Qucen and the two Princesses left their sanctuary at Westminster and were conducted, with great solumnity, to court.

The destruction of his amiable and unhappy wife, was not quite so casy a task. Although he was scared in conscience, and brutal in disposition, yet he could not coolly contemplate the taking her life. She must have been lovely to disarm the rigour of his savage breast! Historians relate

that she was of a soft and tender disposition, and SECTION Richard thought, by a little delay, he could destroy her by continued ill usage and neglect. He forbore her company—refused to speak to her, and took every opportunity of agonizing her mind. This scheme it is thought, succeeded, although it is uncertain whether she was not taken off by poison.

II. CHAP. VI.

Thus was he well nigh the accomplishing of his schemes, and he was doubtless, allowed to proceed thus far, in order, the more signally, to display the avenging hand that pursued him; which, whilst it gave the most unlimited range to his furious passions, was able by the simplest means, and, in a moment to check his furious career.

We find him now congratulating himself on the dexterity, with which he had executed his two the King infatfirst schemes; and without delay, he was proceeding to the marriage of his niece—the future hope of the peace of England-when the storm of vengeance that was to overwhelm him, gathered so quickly, and grew so suddenly black about him, that his progress was interrupted. His crimes and his days were numbered. A slight advantage which he had obtained in the reduction of Hannes Castle, and the reports he heard of the weakness of the Earl of Richmond, disarmed him of his usual vigilance, and threw him off his guard. He recalled his fleet and disbanded his army.

SECTION II. CHAP. VI.

sponds.

The Earl of Richmond, who had experienced some disappointment in the backwardness of the French King to grant him supplies, was now at The Earl of Roanne with the chief of his adherents; and to their Richmond de- inexpressible mortification, they heard of the death of the Queen, and of the immediate intention of the usurper to marry his niece. They were thrown by the intelligence into despair; and after a solemn consultation, they concluded the further pursuit of their enterprize, rash, and its success, visionary. They were thus at the point of abandoning their project altogether, when they received intelligence that Rice-ap-Thomas and Captain Savage, two persons of considerable experience, were ready to declare for Richmond. This good news was, indeed but like a little cloud in the west-but it was the fore-runner of the destructive tempest. Wearied with delay and disappointment, they seized the hope, however slender, and determined to strike an immediate and resolute blow. They lost no time in embarking what forces they had: and, after seven days, landed at Milford Haven, from whence they advanced to West Hereford: and the Earl, hearing that his uncle, Jasper Earl of Pembroke, was at the head of a considerable body of men in Pembrokeshire, he proceeded to Cardigan.

His prospects brighten.

This Earl of Pembroke seems to have been one of the most active and prudent men of any age or country; and must be considered as having given the first impulse to the success of this expedition after it reached the shores of England. You never SECTION hear of this man, till you find him in action. Richmond's army, thus augmented, directed its march, to Shrewsbury, where Sir Rice-ap-Thomas swore fealty to him. His next advance was to Newport, where Sir Gilbert Talbot joined him with two thousand men. At Stafford he fell in with Sir Gilbert Stanley.—But Lord Stanley who was at Lichfield, on the Earl's approach, drew off his men, lest the King should take vengeance upon his son, whom he held in possession, as a hostage.

Richard was at Nottingham, and hearing of The King at the passage of the Severn, he thought it high Leicester. time to bestir himself. He advanced by forced marches, to Leicester, which place he entered at night-fall, on a white steed, and attended by his guards. His countenance, it is reported, was wild, and his language furious. Next day he hastened to meet his enemy, and receiving intelligence of his near approach, drew up his army in order of battle, near Market Bosworth.

When the Earl of Richmond heard of this movement, he gave orders for the breaking up of mond and Lord his camp at Tamworth, and for the advance of his the Three Tuns troops. He himself was at Atherstone; and the Atherstone. house is now shewn, where, the night previous to the battle, himself and Lord Stanley held a secret conference.

That fatal day was now arrived; and Richard Bosworth. drew out his army with great ability and precision.

Earl of Rich-

II. CHAP. IV.

SECTION He committed the van to the Duke of Norfolk. the main body was led by himself, whilst Lord Stanley was posted between them, holding as it were, the balance of victory in his hands. temporizing of Richard put this into his power. The King was, throughout, suspicious of Lord Stanley's fidelity, and threatened him, in case of treachery, with the immediate death of his son. Had he struck the blow, or delivered up his son, the conduct of Stanley would have been decided. He hesitated, till it was too late, for after the battle was set in array, Richard sent a message to Stanley, threatening the execution of his son, to which Stanley replied: 'Let him do as he likes, I have more sons than one.' By this answer he saved his son: for the King, perceiving his revolt at that time, would be fatal to his cause, durst not put his threat into execution.

> The Earl of Richmond committed the van of his army to the Earl of Oxford,—the right wing was placed under the conduct of Sir Gilbert His left was commanded by Sir John Talbot. Savage; whilst himself and the Earl of Pembroke, took charge of the reserve.

> The battle soon became general, but there was a want of energy in the army of Richard, which, although he far outnumbered his adversary, soon manifested itself in the decided superiority of Richmond. Richard, like an enraged wild beast, ran furiously through his lines, endeavouring, in

II.

vain, to animate his lifeless troops; and perceiving SECTION the Earl of Richmond, at a short distance, with a CHAP. VI. slight attendance, he rushed upon him with his lance. The Earl rejoiced at the opportunity of meeting his antagonist, and was preparing to receive him, but was prevented by his attendants. Richard disappointed of his prey rushed upon the great standard, and slew Sir W. Brandon, the standard bearer; and advancing, bore down to the ground, Sir John Cheney, a knight of great strength and valour. At this point, his fury was stopped by the Earl of Richmond, who presented himself to him, sword in hand; but at the same moment, the Lord Stanley who had been watching his opportunity, surrounded the King's squadron; which Richard perceiving, like a chased boar driven to the last extremity, he rushed into the thickest of the fight, and perished like a second King Richard Cataline, with his sword grasped in his hand, and perishes. with all the fury of revenge depicted in his countenance. But this was not all. The retributory justice of Heaven did not end in hurling him at one blow, from the lofty seat of his guilty ambition, and cutting him off from the land of the living, in the prime of his days—but he was made an ignominious spectacle in the sight of all men, and a lesson to all future generations: his dead body was plundered and stripped by the avaricious soldiery, and his naked corpse thrown carelessly over a horse, was carried to Leicester; where, for two

SECTION days, it lay exposed on the bare earth, as if it were II. beyond the pale of humanity—and, at last, as if out of the pale of Christendom, he was buried without funeral rites.

Thus perished the last male descendant of the house of York; of which, whilst in his own thoughts he was pursuing its aggrandisement, he in reality became the great extirpator.

House of York.

This branch of the royal house had undoubtedly the best claim to the crown; but it must be apparent that its destruction was a felicitous event for England. The whole lineage was unprincipled—vicious, blood-thirsty, false, and inconstant. Their personal licentiousness, whilst it corrupted by its example, obliged them to wink at the crimes of others; and, the laxity with which they held the reins of government, although attended in the result, with advantage to our constitutional liberty, yet inflicted great temporary evils upon the community. It is evident the family was too flagitious to live; and in consistency with the divine system and moral government of the world, they were cut off from the earth.

The battle of Bosworth, was the thirteenth, and last of the civil wars, which had lasted for thirty years; and in which, according to an eminent historian,* there perished eighty Princes of the blood—hosts of the nobility, and one hundred thousand of the common people.

^{*} Comines.

To the dear bought experience of this period, may SECTION be traced the downfall of the feudal power by the destruction of the aristocracy, and the full establishment of that great principle of the English constitution - the hereditary succession of the crown, which succeeding statesmen have guarded with jealous care; and to which, as long as a sane person is at the head of her policy, this country will inviolably adhere.

We observe also, during the irregular transactions of this time, the growing importance attached to parliament. It was incessantly appealed to by both parties; and became the arbiter among Kings, of their power and their thrones.

But the times gave encouragement and influence to a more formidable power than parliament —the middle and lower classes of the people. To them, both parties were obliged to sue for the purpose of asserting their claims; and in consequence, flattered and indulged them. The voke of feudal slavery was greatly alleviated; and the growth of the middling and lower classes of the community, must be regarded as receiving a great and effectual impulse from this date.

We may further add, that the authority of the crown, became paramount and undisputed, not only from the series of victories which the sovereigns had obtained-but by the immense slaughter of the nobility, and the confiscation of their estates, which crippled their power, and made them less able to compete with the supreme authority.

II. CHAP. VI. Progress of the Country.

SECTION
II.
CHAP. VI.

Nor was learning without its ornaments, We may record the names of Basset, Walsingham, Lyttleton, Fortesque.

But more than all, this age gave birth to the art of Printing, which was brought into England by William Caxton, a mercer of London, whose first Printing press was set to work in the *Abbey of Westminster*, 1471. Its Popish Masters at that time, little thinking, that that simple machine was to be the great instrument of their overthrow.

We can say little respecting religion. Popery, without any open opposition, retained its dark dominion over the minds of men—but the doctrines of the immortal Wicliffe, watered by the blood of martyrs, was taking deep, but silent root in the hearts of thousands; and were only waiting a favorable opportunity to burst forth and adorn the land.

We evidently perceive, that if great civil perfection had not been attained by our country, that mighty preparations were making for its future destination; and we shall not be disappointed in the succeeding era of our history at the progress which it attained. And we shall further perceive, whilst evils of such magnitude were transacting and bringing swift punishment upon the immediate actors—the main interest of the nation was secured, by HIM "whose paths, are in the sea, and whose judgments are in the great deep."

THEOCRATIC PHILOSOPHY, &c.

SECTION III. CHAPTER I.

HENRY VII .- UNION OF THE HOUSES LANCASTER-CONSOLIDATION OF THE KINGDOM-ESTABLISHMENT OF THE SOVEREIGN POWER.

THE time had now arrived when the Almighty SECTION Governor, after having severely punished the whole nation, was intending to raise its drooping, head—to give a more rapid impulse to its prosperity, and, to cause it to stand forth more promi-proclaimed nently, as an EXEMPLAR STATE. For this end A.D. 1485. He raised up an individual, eminently fitted for the intended work, -- a man of great capacity, deep penetration, unwearied diligence, unshaken courage, habitual temperance, and, as all such men are, —deeply embued with religious reverence. Like William the Conqueror, he had not, in his early years, been fondled on the lap of ease; but nurtured for great deeds, amidst hardships and dangers.

III. Henry VII. SECTION
III.
CHAP. I.

Whoever considers the extraordinary manner in which his life was, more than once, preservedthe unlikely means by which his elevation was secured, and the personal fitness with which he entered upon it, will not fail to perceive in the steps by which he was led to the throne, the high and superintending Providence of God. could have been more improbable than such an event, during the reign of Edward IV. in whom centred all the glory of the house of York? What more improbable on the death of that Prince, who left behind him two sons and a daughter-two sisters and two nephews? We have, indeed, seen how the way was opened by Richard III. in order to gratify his own lust of ambition; and how signally his crimes were punished by the just Arbiter of human affairs: and now we perceive the same Supreme Being "educing good out of evil," and raising up the fittest man in the world, for the purpose of carrying on the scheme of his benevolence.

His Exile in Bretagne.

During his long exile, he had both time and opportunity for making observation, and meditating upon the affairs of England.—Nor did he neglect the opportunity. He was well acquainted with the evils which harrassed his country; and long before he reached its shores, he had formed those schemes for remedying them, which he, afterwards, so vigorously carried into execution.

III.

CHAP. I.

He was now about thirty years of age, and was SECTION considered the representative of the house of Lancaster—but for what reason, the line of his succession has been called the House of Tudor, it is not easy to determine. - His father, Edmund Earl of Richmond, was son to Owen Tudor and Catharine, the Queen and widow of Henry IV.-This descent could not possibly have made his father the heir of the house of Lancaster, or given him a title to the crown of England. The claim of Henry, arose from the marriage of his father with Margaret, youngest daughter of the Duke of Somerset, who was grandson to the Duke of Lancaster; so that, if the succession is to have a name, it ought to be denominated the "House of Somerset."

The great principles on which this distinguished Principles of Monarch had determined to conduct his governGovernment. ment were law and policy; his designs for establishing the foundations of the British Monarchy, as they had been long and deliberately formed, so were they carried into execution with unusual promptness and perseverance.

After the battle of Bosworth, he proceeded by easy stages, to London-not as a conqueror, but as a long recognized King, who was making a progress through his dominions-and he entered the capital City, not with military pomp, but in a close carriage, amidst the acclamations of the multitude. The proclamation of a general pardon gave universal satisfaction. At Saint Paul's, he offered

III. Спар. І.

Houses of York and Lancaster united.

SECTION solemn thanksgiving to God; and the "Te Deum" was chaunted in demonstration of the public joy.

> His prudence and foresight were discovered in the very commencement of his reign, by resolving not to allow his claim to the throne, to depend solely upon his marriage with the princess Elizabeth, which he saw would be attended with many serious inconveniences, both to himself, and the peace of the country. Elizabeth was the sole surviving representative of the House of York; and the nation, wearied with its long dissentions, was extremely anxious for her union with Henry, and all men felt a deep interest in the final settlement of the question. Whilst therefore he quieted the minds of the nobility and the people, by renewing, in the most solemn manner, his intention of marrying the heiress of the House of York, and putting an end to all distinctions for the future, he caused himself to be crowned, alone, on the title of the House of Lancaster.

Henry marcess Elizabeth:

After his coronation, he fulfilled his pledge, and ries the Prin- married Elizabeth; an event which created universal joy, and filled all hearts with gladness.*-It was indeed a happy consummation for England, and brought about by a series of events, contrary to all human expectation and hope! Yet the King's unconquerable aversion to the House of York, deeply affected his conduct towards his Queen; and indeed, to the whole of her family. By his unjust and implacable conduct, he embit-

^{*} Bacon Hist. 7.

tered all her domestic enjoyments, and in his SECTION public capacity he was severely punished, by the intrigues of two illustrious females of that still persecuted house,—the Duchess of Burgundy, sister to Edward IV. residing in Flanders, and his scheme to august widow, mother of Queen Elizabeth. latter, soon commenced her machinations against wick. the peace of her son-in-law, by forming a shallow scheme, the whole narration of which, is unworthy the dignity of History; and would, certainly, find no place here, were it not to shew, that folly and pride generally prepare the means for their own correction. Her design was to find some one to personate the Earl of Warwick, who was the nearest male heir to the throne, and who had been made prisoner by Richard III. and was, by an unjust and mistaken policy, still confined in the Tower. This unfortunate young man was son to the late Duke of Clarence, brother to Edward IV. In his case, the crimes of the father were still punished in the son, who was imprisoned from his earliest days, and came to an early and violent death, for no other reason, but, because he was the son of the Duke of Clarence: and had in consequence, a near relation to the throne.

The Queen and her counsellors were not long in finding a person who bore some resemblance to the family; and was of equal age to the unfortunate youth in the Tower. He was trained and instructed, with great care, for the part he was to act; and with great success, so far as persona-

III. CHAP. I.

The personate the

III. CHAP. I.

SECTION tion was concerned.—But the scheme itself, had nothing to rest upon; the true Earl of Warwick, was in the Tower, and the King could demonstrate it, which he did, by shewing him openly to the people. The plot, however, was sent on its progress; and Ireland was to be the first scene of Many in that country, were deceived by trial. his pretensions; and amongst the rest, the Earl of Kildare.—But the principal victim in this foolish enterprize, was the next heir of York, after the Earl of Warwick!—This was the Earl of Lincoln. son of Elizabeth the sister of Edward IV. a youth of an enterprising spirit, martial talents, and ambitious aims. He eagerly rushed into the scheme, and making use of the Pretender as his tool, he trusted, amidst the horrors and confusion of civil war, to be able to guide the storm and secure himself on the throne. Assisted by his aunt, the Duchess of Burgundy, with money and a considerable body of Germans, and attended by the pretended Warwick, who was proclaimed and crowned as King; he advanced as far as Stoke in Nottinghamshire. In this place, he was met by Henry; his army was routed and himself slain.—The just reward of his ambition and perfidy! other restless spirits fell with him, as Kildare, Lovell, and Broughton; whilst the counterfeit Warwick, was appointed to a menial office in the King's household; and the Queen Dowager confined to a nunnery, the rest of her days.

The King had commenced and studiously pur- SECTION sued his plan of enriching his Exchequer. The Снар. І. supplies granted by Parliament, were rigidly collected, which caused loud complaints, and at length, broke out into insurrection in Yorkshire, and Cornwall. But these commotions-the remnant of those turbulent times which had just passed away, though truly formidable, were dispersed as much by the King's policy, as by the force of his arms.

The account of this reign by historians, and even Affairs of

by Hume, is much engrossed with the affairs of France occupies the King's France; by the details of which, a great deal of attention. French dissimulation and treachery are manifest. But the whole of these transactions, as they lead to nothing important in the affairs of England, may be dispensed with in few words-Henry obtained supplies from his Parliament—led an army into France—compelled the French King to pay his expenses—concluded peace and returned home.

Soon after the King's return, a singular and important embassy arrived from Spain, to inform from Spain, him of the expulsion of the Moors, by the victorious arms of Ferdinand and Isabella; and of a still more glorious event, the discovery of America, by Christopher Columbus, under the same enterprising Sovereigns. This latter event is worthy of a more minute examination, and would, no doubt, develop, in a remarkable manner, the overruling Providence of the Most High—but we must rc-

III. Силр. 1.

SECTION frain, because it belongs to the history of Spain, or rather of the world. On the occasion of this embassy, solemn thanksgivings were offered in the cathedral of Saint Paul.

> But unfortunately, Henry was his own tormentor. His steady and unrelenting persecution of the House of York, served to keep that party in a constant state of excitement, and the close confinement of the Earl of Warwick, filled the nation with disgust; whilst his uncompromising severity in the administration of the law and the levying of the taxes, rendered the unruly and avaricious, ever ready to disturb his government.

Queen's Coflege founded.

The Queen-mother was now dead, and far removed from those scenes of trouble in which she had been engaged; but her life was prolonged till she had completed the foundation of Queen's College, Cambridge, which had been commenced by that noble-spirited woman, Margaret, Queen of Henry VI.

Duchess of Burgundy, instructs Warbeck,

A. D. 1492.

But there was another distinguished female of that house still surviving, endued with much greater abilities, and formed for deeper intrigues, who was determined not to permit the insults and injuries offered to her family to pass without This was the Duchess of Burgundy. revenge. She laid her schemes accordingly; but however skilful and full of mischief they might be, they were laid for her own mortification, and the further punishment of her devoted family.

Under her tuition, a youth of the name of SECTION Warbeck was instructed to personate the Duke of . III. York, son to Edward the IV. and the younger of the brothers, murdered by order of Richard III. His education was conducted with the greatest secresy and success. By the artifices of the Duchess, he was acknowledged by the King of France, and treated as a Royal personage. King James of Scotland, not only received him as the legitimate heir to the English Throne-but gave him a noble and beautiful lady for his wife, who was a near kinswoman of his own. But the policy of Henry frustrated the whole of this well laid plot. He had a spy in the closet of the Duchess herself; and in the councils of the Personator. He became acquainted, familiarly, with every circumstance and event of Warbeck's history; and with the names of all the English nobility, who favored the scheme. The most conspicuous person that, fell an easy victim to this plot was Sir W. Stanley, Lord High Chamberlain, the very person who turned the scale of victory at Bosworth Field; and who till then, stood deservedly high in the opinion of Henry. Warbeck obstinately continued the imposture, and, for some years, kept the King's mind in a constant state of uneasiness. At length he landed in Cornwall, determined to make a grand effort for his cause. He was defeated near Exeter, by Henry, to whom he made a full conSECTION fession, on which account, his life was spared, and he was confined to the Tower. III.

CHAP. I. But on this very circumstance, I mean the pardon of the Impostor, was to turn the punishment

ented, which ended the Plantaganets. A. D. 1499.

The Earl of Of the Duchess of Burgundy, for her studied Warwick exe- revenge and falsehood. The restless spirit of Warbeck, induced him to intrigue with his keepers, and through them, with the Earl of Warwick; a plot was laid, in which the Governor of the Tower was to be assassinated and their escape secured. But it was prevented, and not only Warbeck suffered, but the miserable Earl of Warwick, the last remnant of the House of York, was sacrificed!—Not really for this meditated escape, but for another reason, which I would gladly pass over, had not the Hand of God as the just avenger of crime, been afterwards recognised by one of the indirect actors concerned in it.

Policy of the King.

The policy of the King had been altogether triumphant. He was a man endued with the most eminent courage, but his study was Peace; and when violent measures were proposed to him, he was accustomed to answer: "When the Son of God came into the world, Peace was sang; when he went out of it, Peace was bequeathed." His great object was attained; and peace and tranquility succeeded his labours, and smiled, propitious, on the happy land; whilst his reputation, for wisdom and prudence, at this period of his life, stood pre-eminent amongst the Potentates of the earth.

We are now approaching the consideration of SECTION events, which, if not in themselves of striking moment, yet involve in the course of time, results, of surpassing magnitude.

The first important transaction to which our Infanta of attention is directed, is the marriage of Prince Spain married to Prince Arthur, who was now sixteen years of age, with Arthur. the Infanta of Spain—an alliance which Henry had long coveted, as well for its political advantages, as for the costly dower with which the Princess was to be accompanied. But it was an unhappy marriage, and no wonder, for it was cemented with blood! The ostensible reason for the execution of the Earl of Warwick, and the plea which was alleged, was his premeditated escape with Warbeck; but the real and impulsive cause, was the determination of the King of Spain, not to allow his daughter to marry, whilst Warwick was alive! This fact was asserted many years after by the Infanta herself, when greater troubles assailed her-as the ground and reason of her misfortunes.—She acknowledged in her sufferings, the retributory hand of the Most High, saying: "It was no wonder that God should make her "so unfortunate in her marriages, inasmuch as "they were both sealed with the blood of War-"wick."

Prince Arthur died within six months of his Prince Arthur marriage, but the King had another son; and he dies. determined if possible, not to lose the valuable

Nov. 12. A. D. 1501.

III. CHAP. I.

His widow married to Prince Henry.

SECTION prize which had been put into his hands, and he insisted that his younger son, afterwards the renowned Henry VIII. should be contracted to his brother's widow. This alliance was much against the stripling's will; and he opposed the paternal authority, as far as a boy of twelve years of age could be supposed capable of opposition. But in vain. The Infanta of Spain, was in proper time married to Henry, now the heir apparent to the English throne; and upon the circumstances of this marriage turned in after time, the Reformation of the Church of England! The influence it had, so many years after, upon that ever-memorable event, could not have been exerted, had it not been for the Infanta's previous marriage with Prince Arthur. This was the pretext upon which Henry founded his appeal for a divorce. rine was an excellent Queen and most exemplary woman: and no other plea could have been devised, as she was free from every stain of dishonor. It was this fact, which had originated in very different intentions, and which had no connection or similarity with the result, that enabled Henry VIII. to shake the Papal throne to its foundations, and to rescue the Church of England from its long-usurped and tyrannical sway!

But a similar event was about to follow, which The King's daughter mar-was intended in the overruling counsels of Heaven, ried to the King of Scot-still more to secure the prosperity of England. A.D. 1502. This was the marriage of James, King of Scotland, with Henry's eldest daughter—an alliance SECTION which, in after times, was to give a succession of Princes to the English throne—afford stability to the realm, and affix the name of Great Britain to the Island. This contract was a splendid political act; and it is worthy of remark, that whilst the subject was under discussion at the wary council board of Henry VII. it was suggested by one of the Councillors—that, probably, if the King's sons should die without issue, the Kingdom of England might devolve to the King of Scotland, to the prejudice of the English monarchy. this the prudent Monarch with prophetic sagacity replied—that if such a circumstance should happen, Scotland would become an accession to England, not England to Scotland, because the greater would certainly draw the less.

Whilst the King was thus promoting foreign Improvements alliances, and laying strong foundations for the in the body stability and splendour of the throne, he was not inattentive to the welfare and prosperity of the body politic. By his well directed efforts, he changed entirely the balance of power in the state; and gave the fullest impulse to the growth of the middle orders in England, which at this day, form its greatest stability and wealth. It was his leading policy to restrain the licentiousness, and abridge the power of the nobility, which he did, not by the strength of his own prerogative, which was fluctuating in its nature—but by the provi-

CHAP. I.

III. Снар. І.

SECTION sions of Law, which are permanent. He went to the root of deep and intolerable evils, which had long oppressed the land. He caused a law to be enacted, by which the lands of the Barons were made alienable,—a law which was intended to cause their exorbitant power to crumble to pieces, of itself.

> His next endeavour was, to bind the tenant more to the soil, than to the fortunes of his Lord; and he caused certain proportions of land to be allotted for tillage, in order that the comforts of the husbandman being increased, he might less easily be seduced by his master, to quit the ploughshare for the sword, and leave his tranquil employments for the purpose of disturbing the public peace. And the more effectually to cripple the present power of the nobility-a law was enacted, by which the multitude of their retainers was abridged, and a certain specified number allowed.

King's visit to the Earl of Oxford.

An anecdote in reference to this subject is related of the King, which, as it has a tendency to illustrate his character, is worth retaining. The King had honored the Earl of Oxford his prime minister, with a vist at Henningham Castle, where he was entertained with great splendor, and hospitality. To greet the King on his departure, the Earl assembled all, that by any title held land of him-gentlemen, yeomen, and retainers. the King passed through the long line of vassals, he enquired of the Earl, whether these were all

his servants: to which the Earl with a smile SECTION returned: 'they were his tenants and retainers.' The King then thanked him for his entertainment, saying that the report of his hospitality did not even reach the truth-but, looking round, he added: "I cannot allow my laws to be broken in my presence, my attorney must talk with you about it," and the Prime Minister was obliged to compound for this breach of the law, with no less a sum, than fifteen thousand marks.

It is impossible to estimate, too highly, the effect of his salutary enactments on the state of our present policy. He was laying the foundation of a mighty monarchy, and raising the scaffolding for the completion of a magnificent edifice, which was to be an Exemplar among states.—Its construction was not that of a baseless fabric, liable to be disturbed by every gust of fortune: but formed to endure; built on Law, and cemented by Justice.

His act against the arbitrary enclosure of land, which had caused great local distress, by depopulating large districts, is, deservedly, celebrated for its wisdom. It both served to check the nobility, and to encourage the growth of the lower orders of society. In short, it was now that the strong links, which, in the system of feudalism, had bound together the elements of society, were severed, that the illusive glory of chivalry vanished, and the foundations of rational freedom and solid improvement, were laid.

III. CHAP. 1. SECTION III. CHAP. I. The King next turned his attention to the patrimony of the crown, which had, during the civil wars, fallen into great disorder. Leases of considerable length had been granted, and the exigency of public affairs preventing all enquiry, the individuals in possession, considered the lands as their own, and devised them as if they were held in fee simple. To rectify these abuses, and, to call into operation many wholesome laws, which had fallen into disuse, the King issued one of those commissions of inquiry, which are always odious to the people of this Country, and which nothing can justify but urgent necessity.

Commissions unpopular.

The power with which these commissions are necessarily armed, being unconstitutional and arbitrary, few of those persons who have been selected to carry them into execution, have escaped the temptation they offer, for the exercise of tyranny and rapacity. In the present instance, the names of Empson and Dudley, have become justly execrable, for the manner in which they conducted this inquiry: their cruelty, rapacity, and tyranny excited the indignation of the whole kingdom: whilst, their intolerable pride hurried them on to acts of the most illegal and arbitrary character, which, in the following reign, ended in their own destruction.

But the policy of the King was answered:—the laws were enforced, and the executive was fortified and enriched—wealth flowed into his treasury,

III. Снар. І.

not from this only, but from many other sources; SECTION until, at length, he was acknowledged to be the richest Prince in Europe. But he was not laying up treasures for himself, but for the nation—His, were not the accumulations of avarice, but of foresight and enlarged views! He had perceived the misery and ruin to which the throne had frequently been exposed for want of a well furnished exchequer, and it was his policy, to the utmost of his power, to guard against this evil for the future,

But in reality, it was for another purpose which he never contemplated. All this wealth was absolutely necessary for carrying on the GREAT EVENT which will soon be before us; and indeed enabled the executive power, in the succeeding reign, to stem the torrent of opposition which was opposed to it.

Whilst then, it is certain, that the King was actuated with the desire of aggrandizing the Monarchy; it is not impossible, that he might have been gratifying a more ignoble passion, which, indeed all historians attribute to him. I confess, I do not. I cannot trace its low bred, insidious working, in the great events of his reign; nor will I be so ungenerous as to record without sufficient proof, that his great mind was a prey to the debasing crime of avarice. If he was eager to accumulate wealth, he was princely in bestowing it upon noble objects; and he freely left it to be enjoyed by his successor.—These are not the

III. CHAP. I.

SECTION characteristics of avarice. But be this as it may, his accumulating policy was overruled for greater purposes, than ever entered into his calculationpurposes, intimately connected with the scheme of the Divine benevolence, and rendered, as an instrument, greatly subservient to their accomplishment. Not that Henry, on this account, is excusable for the wrongs he committed.—These, in the Divine Judgement, stand recorded against him: nor, was he himself insensible to the claims of justice. The loud complaints against the rapaciousness of his ministers reached his ears; the ministers of religion from the pulpit exhorted him to interfere; and he was so far open to conviction, as to order a clause to be inserted in his will, for the purpose of making restitution to all, who had been unjustly deprived by the rigorous inquisition of his officers.

> A circumstance now occurred, which, although it relates to a private individual, must not be omitted, because it has a tendency to discover the retributory Providence of God. I allude to the public execution of that barbarous instrument in murder, Sir Walter Tyrrell.

Earl of Suf-Kingdom.

The person whose birth entitled him to be folk leaves the second to the King, in eminence, was Edmund, Earl of Suffolk, the heir and representative of the house of York.—But he was a person of a proud and haughty disposition; and on some occasion, in the heat of his resentment, he committed homicide. "He flattered himself in his own eyes," and SECTION thought of committing this flagrant act with impunity; but, he was in some measure, mistaken; for, whilst the King promised him a pardon, he insisted that, he should go through the formality of a trial, and receive the sentence of the law. Irritated at this, which he esteemed an indignity, he fled from the kingdom and took refuge in Flanders, with his relative the Duchess of Burgundv. But the King, fearing lest his residence there, should be the cause of new disturbances, had recourse to his never failing policy; and by fair speeches and large promises, prevailed upon him to return.

After the lapse of a few years, the Earl was A second time, A. D. 1504. induced to leave the kingdom a second time, and

under such circumstances as afforded strong suspicion of treasonable designs. The King immediately applied himself to those methods, which he had found so successful on former and similar

occasions.

Through the instrumentality of Sir Robert Curzon, governor of Calais, he became fully apprised of all the circumstances, connected with the Earl's departure, and acquainted with the names of all the eminent persons in England, who favored his evil intentions. Amongst these was Sir Walter Tyrrell. Many other persons of distinction were implicated; but the fatal lot fell only upon two-Sir Walter Tyrrell and Sir John Wynd-

III. CHAP. I.

III. CHAP. I.

SECTION ham, who were brought to the scaffold and beheaded as traitors. With the character of Sir John Wyndham we are unacquainted; but we cannot fail to recognize in the untimely and infamous death of Sir. Walter Tyrrell, the just vengeance of an Almighty hand, which will not suffer the guilty to escape. It will be necessary to observe, in connexion with this event, because the subject will again be brought before us, that the Earl of Suffolk by a strange concurrence of circumstances was secured, and lodged by Henry, in the Tower!

> Henry had now reigned more than twenty years, and concluded his long and able system of state policy, by affiancing his daughter the Princes Mary, to Charles of Spain, afterwards the celebrated Emperor Charles V. It was on this occasion, that he said, on a review of the various alliances he had been enabled to form-" I think I have built a wall of brass around my kingdom." And which indeed was true. In the wisdom and prudence of his administration he surpassed all the Princes of Europe, and has justly acquired for himself the appellation of the "Solomon of England."

The King's health declines. A. D. 1507.

He had now completed his well-laid plans, and accomplished his utmost wishes. He had frustrated the designs, and ruined the projects of his enemies. He had repaired all the breaches of hatred, contention, and strife, which had been

created by the civil wars. He had enriched the public treasury to an immense extent, so that he was not only reported to be the wisest, but the richest Prince in Christendom. He had multiplied to the people, both the means and conveniences of living. He protected the arts. He had extended commerce; he encouraged enterprise, and to conclude the acts of his public beneficence, he furnished and endowed the ancient Palace of the Lancastrians in the Savoy, for a Metropolitan Hospital; nor should it in this place be omitted in honor to the memory of his mother, Margaret, Duchess of Richmond, that by her generosity, aided by her Son, the colleges of Christ's and Saint John's were founded in the University of Cam-Whilst the splendid Chapel in Westminster Abbey, which bears his name, will long continue a noble monument of his taste and munificence.

His physical powers were in unison with the qualities of his mind. He possessed great strength and vigour of body, and is said to have been remarkable for the beauty of his person, and the attraction of his manners.

His regard for religion was simple and uniform, without ostentation on the one hand, or superstition on the other; and it is remarkable that, the father of Henry VIII. received more marked and signal honors from the Popes of Rome, than any individual Monarch. He was thrice elected, in

SECTION III. CHAP. I. SECTION III.

the several Pontificates of Alexander VI. Pius III. and Julius II. "Chief defender of Christ's Church," in preference to all other Christian Kings; and, in the year preceding his death, and in virtue of this title, he received as a present from Pius II. a cap of maintenance and a sword, as badges of this high distinction.

So little can the foresight of the most politic statesmen scan the changes which await their most favorite projects in a few revolving years. How little could these subtle Potentates of Rome; have foreseen that the immediate Son and successor of the man they "delighted to honor," would be the first to break their usurping yoke, and to annihilate every vestige of their power and authority in England!

But the work of Henry VII. was now accomplished, and he must yield up the sceptre he had so much honored, to other hands, which should carry into execution those great measures, for which he had made such extensive preparations, without having the least perception of their character.

The work to be accomplished, and for which he had been laying the deep foundations, was the reform of the Church of England, which neither he, nor his successor contemplated. But, both, were fitting instruments in the hands of Him, who in a prophetic vision, said of the all-conquering Cyrus: "That saith of Cyrus, he is my

shepherd, and shall perform all my pleasure, even saying to Jerusalem, Thou shalt be built, and to the Temple, Thy foundations shall be laid."*

SECTION
III.
CHAP. I.
His death.
A. D. 1509.

In like manner, Henry VII. of England, endowed and fortified by divine power to carry on the designs of the Eternal Providence, having with signal prudence aggrandized both his kingdom and family, now approached the end of his course at the early age of fifty three, with dignity and composure. He consecrated the few remaining days of his life to acts of charity and devotion, and with solemn seriousness awaited the final hour,† when he should be summoned by the Supreme Governor, to lay down his delegated authority, and to exchange time for eternity.

^{*} Isaiah xl. 28. + April 2.

SECTION III.—CHAPTER II.

HENRY VIII.—REJECTION OF THE AUTHORITY OF THE POPE, AND ESTABLISHMENT OF POLITICAL PROTESTANTISM.

SECTION On the death of Henry VII., the importance of his persevering policy began to appear; and the III. CHAP. II. course of national events forthwith rushed to their Henry VIII. accomplishment. His prudence, wisdom, and A. D. 1509. experience were gone; but in their place, succeeded vigour, dispatch, and enterprise. His son who now mounted the throne, was in the pride of youth, and adorned with every manly and noble grace. He was endowed with uncommon abilities, and with such variety of temper and disposition, that he is said to have inherited and united in himself, all the good and bad qualities of the two Houses of York and Lancaster. In personal endowments he was unrivalled.—He was tall, and

majestic;—and, possessed of such remarkable SECTION strength and agility, that few would venture to III. contend with him in the joust, or oppose him in Chap. II. the tournament.

To these external advantages, was added a considerable share of the abstruse learning of that day, which, combined with the lighter and more attractive accomplishments of poetry and music, gave a captivating polish to his character.

In the commencement of his reign, he discovered a remarkable modesty and noble ingenuousness of mind; and under the direction of his grandmother, the Duchess of Richmond, with the advice of the wise counsellors bequeathed to him by his father, the acts of his Government were distinguished by prudence and moderation.

He had now an opportunity, if he had pleased, to have broken off the contract of marriage into which he had been urged against his will, with Catharine, the Infanta of Spain, and widow to his brother Arthur. Indeed, the way had been opened to him by his father, who on his death bed stated his doubts as to the propriety of proceeding with it. But the desire of the young Monarch to fulfil, what he considered the deliberate judgment and long cherished design of his father, prevailed over every consideration; and within six weeks of his father's death, on the third of June, his marriage with the Infanta was solemnized. The coronation took place, on the

SECTION midsummer day following, with great magnificence; and attended with every circumstance of III. CHAP. II. pomp and festivity.

Dudley suffer for their evil deeds.

His next object was to fulfil that clause of his Father's will, which enjoined a general pardon, and restitution of property to all who might have Empson and been unjustly wronged by the extortions of his To honor the triumph of this general officers. pardon, Empson and Dudley, were committed to the Tower. The King by no means, intended their execution. But their injustice and rapaciousness demanded the heaviest doom. The Parliament which was immediately summoned, was led to institute a strict inquiry into their proceedings, and to abolish many of the obnoxious statutes under which they had acted. The imprisonment of these unfortunate commissioners, so far from satisfying the people, only made them more importunate for their capital punishment, and the King was obliged to comply. How short sometimes is the interval between pride and its overthrow, between injustice and its punishment!

> By this sacrifice to the national will, and by the abolishing of many arbitrary fines, the King acquired the universal admiration of his subjects. His youthful ardour, his skill and ability in chivalrous exercises, his shining endowments and ardent pursuits of literary knowledge, attracted the attention of the nobility, who fired by his illustrious example, entered into a generous and

successful emulation; whilst foreign Princes hear- SECTION ing of the splendor and eleganee of his court, were induced to cultivate his friendship and alliance.

III. CHAP. II.

Such were the commanding auspiees under which Henry VIII. commenced his reign. Congratulations on his accession, poured in from every side. Embassies crowded to his shores from the most powerful Monarchs of Europe. will be necessary to introduce these personages to the reader, because they will be chief actors in the seenes, which are about to open before us, and the influence of some of them will be largely exerted on the transactions of this reign.

Lewis XII. King of France, engaged as he was Princes and in the pursuit of territorial ambition, lost no time Europe. in soliciting Henry for the continuance of peace. James IV. of Seotland, who had married the King's sister, hastened to eongratulate him, and to assure him of his esteem and regard. Ferdinand of Spain was anxious to obtain his assistanee against the Moors. The Emperor Maximillian was equally anxious to seeure him as a friend and ally. The King of Denmark solicited a treaty of trade and commerce; whilst Pope Julius II. earnestly entreated for effectual aid against the encroachments of the French in Italy, offering to constitute Henry the head of the "Italian League." Such were the several powers under whose sway the destinies of Europe were then conducted, and by their unanimous consent, Henry

SECTION at the opening of his reign, was exalted as the III. Arbiter of European affairs, and the "Balance of Power" placed in his hands.

His penetrating mind perceived the lofty station to which he had been raised by the election of his compeers. His ardent temperament would not permit him to reject the offered distinction, and his wealth and ability enabled him to hold the pre-eminence, generally, with honor to himself and his country. Indeed, it was the commencement of a new era in European politics, and England was called to occupy a position, in her advances from which, she has never since retreated.

A. D. 1510.

The political scene now opens. The King's first step was to answer the solicitations of the Pope; and he dispatched Bambridge, Archbishop of York to make arrangements with the Sovereign Pontiff. But his Holiness was in need of more effectual assistance than the counsel of an Archbishop; for, the French had advanced their conquests in Italy; and had now invested Bognonia, where the Pope himself was confined with sickness; and, after a brief resistance, the place was obliged to surrender on very severe conditions.

This success of the French arms, created general alarm, and it was determined to check its further advance. For this purpose, Henry immediately entered into an alliance with Ferdinand, the King of Spain.

It would not be necessary for me, in a history SECTION of this kind, to cause a digression by narrating a trifling circumstance, which gave umbrage to the King of Scotland, were it not, that it laid the foundation in his mind of a smothered resentment, Battle of Flod-den Field. which never could be allayed till it expired with his life, amidst the slaughters of Flodden Field! The circumstances were these; King James had granted letters of marque to one of his subjects, against the Portuguese Nation, from whom he could gain no redress, for injuries which they had committed. Not content with making reprisals of the vessels of Portugal, the Captain attacked and plundered several English ships, under a pretence that they conveyed Portuguese goods. In consequence, his ships were captured by the English Admiral. The principal was slain in the action, and his comrades conveyed to London, and presented to the King, who pardoned them, and sent them to Scotland. King James demanded satisfaction; but the English Monarch answered his messenger, "That it did not become him to impute a breach of treaty to an ally for shewing mercy to pirates." Whatever influence the disastrous Battle of Flodden Field may have upon the history of Scotland-it was this incident that gave rise to it-so fatal in its results, may be the guilty indulgence of secret revenge!

But to return. The alliance with Ferdinand for the protection of Italy and the Popedom,

III. CHAP. II. Origin of the

SECTION necessarily involved a war with France. A Parliament was called, in which soldiers were granted; and preparations made for the immediate invasion of France.

War with France.

Many disasters attended this first equipment, owing to the treachery of the King of Spain; but at length, an alliance having been formed with the Emperor Maximillian, and preparations having been made on a grand scale, the King determined to invade France in person. The prodigious expense of fitting out this immense armament, both by sea and land, must of itself discover, the rapid advance which the country had made in riches and power. The fleet was increased to forty-two sail, and some of them, ships of considerable bulk, conveying six or seven hundred men -a circumstance, which will tend to shew how much the knowledge of navigation and maritime affairs had progressed, since the commencement of the reign of Henry VII.

During these preparations, it was thought necessary to engage the King of Scotland in a treaty of peace - but his passions had been before-hand. His revenge had seized the first opportunity for which it had been anxiously waiting; and he had, already, entered into an alliance with the King of France.

Every precaution had been taken for the security of the kingdom, during Henry's absence, the Queen had been appointed Regent; the brave

Earl of Surrey was placed at the head of the SECTION army, and the King was about to embark with all his forces. But the tragical part of these preparations was still to be enacted. The guilt of the House of York had not yet been fully expiated: and another victim was now to be added, to its list of illustrious sufferers. The wary council of Henry intimated, that it would not be safe for him to hazard his person in war, whilst Edmund Dela-Pole, Earl of Suffolk, the representative of the House of York was yet alive; and who, in case of his death, might exchange the Tower for the Palace, and once more plunge the kingdom in civil war. This voice prevailed: and De-la-Pole, who must, long since, have considered the bitterness of death as past, was summoned to his fate and fell under the stroke of the executioner!

At length the expedition set sail, and on the The King fourth of August, the army invested Terouenne. sails for France The King's pavilion was of the most sumptuous description, and in the midst of martial array, he failed not to discover his taste for magnificence and display. The Emperor too, condescended to serve under him, an honor for the first time conferred upon a King; and which no doubt, was highly flattering to the lofty and aspiring temper of Henry. After the "Battle of the Spurs," a name which it acquired, from the rapidity of the flight of the French horse. Terouenne despairing of effectual relief, surrendered; and on enter-

A. D. 1513.

SECTION ing the city, the King took precedence of the Emperor. Every thing indeed was propitious. Tournay was next invested, and in a short time, compelled to surrender. It was here, as if he had been on a royal progress, that Henry established his court. He invited the young Prince Charles of Spain, to a splendid entertainment, and celebrated solemn jousts and tournaments, in which himself and Sir Charles Brandon answered all comers, performing prodigies of valor. But these feats of arms and chivalry, have nothing to do with the solemn facts of history, further than they can be shewn to exert an influence upon those In this case, it is evident, that in the education of Henry VIII. these gay and splendid exercises gained the ascendant; and that when he came to the throne he exerted all his influence. to establish them on their ancient foundations; and to obtain for them, a portion of their ancient But the day of chivalry was gone; and splendor. his attempt was preposterous. Another era had burst upon the world; knowledge and science, navigation and commerce, the discovery of new worlds and the pervading light of truth, had given a new impulse to the human mind; and an expansion of thought, which looked with contempt on the display of mere physical strength and dexterity. Certainly, Henry, for a time, conducted these games with great spirit, and greater magnificence; but, it was their expiring blaze: for,

Rise of Wol-

shortly they were totally extinguished by the in- SECTION creasing light of learning and Christianity. III. Снар. І.

But Tournay, was the scene of a much greater event, than the festive entertainments of Henryan event, which opened a new scene in the history sey. of his reign, and introduces to us a person of high genius, upon whose commanding energies, the history of England, is for a season, to depend. This was Thomas Wolsey, a person of unknown origin, but who, by his abilities and the instrumentality of the Grammar school of his native town, had passed through the University with honour, and accompanied the King in this expedition as Almoner, in the train of Fox, Bishop of Winchester. Whatever advances in the King's favor, this individual might, previously, have made, he was now suddenly exalted to honor, and appointed Bishop of Tournay, by the King: and in virtue of that office, administered to the citizens, the oath of fealty to their new Sovereign.

In the mean time, England itself is made the theatre of war. James IV. of Scotland, hurried Flodden Field, on by his restless impatience for revenge, invades the borders of England with a formidable army of fifty thousand. But the project was to end in his dishonor and distruction. He was encountered by the Earl of Surrey, at Flodden, where after a desperate fight of three hours, the King was slain, with a vast number of his chief nobility and about ten thousand men. The events connected with

Battle of A. D. 1513.

III. CHAP. 11.

SECTION this defeat belong to the History of Scotland; but in this brief episode of our history, we may trace the fatal effects of revenge, which like every other inordinate passion, ends in its own overthrow.*

> Nothing further is transacted in France; and the King leaving his new acquisitions in that country, under the government of Sir Edward Poynings, returned to England.

> Although nothing of very great importance to this country, appears to depend upon this gorgeous expedition into France; and though the conquest of Terouenne and Tournay, appear but a very indifferent equivalent for the wealth and treasure expended upon the expedition; yet it must not be admitted that it was nothing more than an empty show of kingly pride and magnificence.

> A little reflection will tell us, that such an expedition, and attended with such success, must have had a very decisive effect in establishing amongst foreign nations the reputation of England. The courage and enterprize of her soldiers—the skill and hardihood of her sailors—the prowess and chivalry of her nobility, had a tendency to inspire that respect for her naval and military glory, which the country at that time certainly obtained, and which it has never relinquished.

In celebration of his late successes, the King Honors conferred on the determined to confer signal honors, upon the Leaders.

A. D. 1514.

^{*} Apostle James, Epis. i. 15.

CHAP. II.

distinguished men, who had graced the expedition SECTION by their courage and abilities. Accordingly, on the second of February, Thomas, Earl of Surrey, was created Duke of Norfolk. Sir Charles Somerset. Earl of Worcester; Sir Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk; and Sir Edward Stanley, Lord Monteagle. Nor was Bishop Wolsey forgotten: the aspiring almoner was made Bishop of Lincoln. and to crown the whole, the King himself received; a cap of maintenance and a sword, from Pope Leo X. who had now succeeded to Julius II. And that the gift might want nothing to render it acceptable, it was accompanied with a decree of the Lateran Council, which transferred the title of "Most Christian King" from the French Monarch, and conferred it upon Henry.

The scene now suddenly changes: and an Marriage of incident occurred of a more romantic and tender the Princess Mary. character; but as it was in reality, no romance, but exercised an influence on the aspect of public events, it must not be omitted in this history. was the marriage of the Princess Mary, the King's sister. It will be remembered, that Henry VII. solemnly contracted this Princess, when very young, to Prince Charles of Spain. The parties had now arrived at the appointed age; and the King sent an embassy to the Court of Flanders, to make arrangements for the completion of the treaty. But he soon found there was no intention on the part of that Court to fulfil the contract,

III. Снар. 11.

SECTION and, he was more disgusted with their frivolous excuses and unnecessary delays, then he would have been with an open and determined refusal. The King of France, wearied with the fatigues of war, thought this a favorable opportunity of making up the breach between himself and Henry, and having gained the mediation of the Pope, he sued for the hand of the illustrious Princess. affections had long been placed upon Brandon. Duke of Suffolk, the most princely and accomplished nobleman of his day; but the suit of Lewis prevailed, and she was doomed to be immolated as another victim on the altar of political expediency. But it would ill suit the character of this work to enter into the details of this event, suffice it to say, that Lewis, worn out with age and sickness, did not long survive. In three months the Queen of France was a widow; and shortly after, with the full consent of her brother, bestowed her hand on the Duke of Suffolk, from this union descended the Lady Jane Gray, who is afterwards to act a brief and mournful part in our history.

Reputation of England. A. D. 1515.

At this period by the success which attended their arms; and the splendor and influence of their government, the English people had acquired in a very great degree, the respect and admiration of the world, in which their generous and accomplished King justly obtained an ample share. But unfortunately for himself, he found in Wolsey

Bishop of Lincoln, a man, whose abilities enabled him to manage the most difficult affairs of state with wisdom and prudence; and to him, the King consigned the chief management of public affairs. We must now follow the acts of this extraordinary individual, under whose conduct, the kingdom advanced in its course.

SECTION
III.
CHAP. II.

We have already noticed his appointment to the Bishopricks of Tournay and Lincoln. now succeeds on the death of Bambridge, to the Archbishoprick of York, whilst through the influence of the Kings of France and England, he was raised to the dignity of Cardinal, appointed Legate to the Pope, and armed with such peculiar authority, that his power was superior to that of the Archbishop of Canterbury. And to render his dignity and authority complete, he was made Lord High Chancellor. His ecclesiastical preferments were so rich, and the sources of wealth at his command, so many, that his annual income equalled, if it did not exceed the revenues of the crown. His state and magnificence were equal to his rank and dignity. His household consisted of eight hundred persons; among whom were ten Lords, fifteen Baronets, and fifty Esquires; and when he made his appearance in public, he affected the greatest pomp and splendor-riding on a mule nobly caparisoned.

Wolsey's

Henry, having thus found a person upon whom he might devolve the cares of government, gave

SECTION himself up to the more splendid exercises of the joust and tournament, and to the pomp and pleasures of his court. His tried and prudent ministers remonstrated with him, on the fatal tendency of his conduct: and exhorted him to attend to the business of the nation. But in vain. Wolsev it is to be feared, acted in this, a treacherous part; and for the purpose of securing his own advancement, encouraged the King in his pernicious course, and in every possible way, administered to his luxurious ease, magnificent pursuits, and licentious pleasures. This may be considered as the period of the King's moral ruin, engulphed, as he was, in pleasure and enslaved by passion.

> The whole power and patronage of the state were now engrossed by Wolsey; and the old and prudent ministers of the King began to retire from their attendance at the council table, where their presence had become unnecessary. the Duke of Suffolk, who of all Henry's friends, never lost his confidence, through the influence of the Cardinal, was an exile from court. Notwithstanding, such was the versatile talent, princely generosity, and firm bearing of the Cardinal, that if he had been left to himself without injudicious interference, and if he had not set his heart on the Papal chair, in all probability, the King might have lived and died in peace. But this was not to be. Great events were to be accomplished, in which, both were to be actors against

III. Снар. II.

their will. The King was to be roused from the SECTION luxurious and dignified repose in which he vainly thought to consume his days; whilst the Cardinal by his intricate policy, wrought out that, which, beyond all things, he would have deprecated; and in which he was at last ensnared and destroyed. But many a step was yet to be taken. The unravelling of the divine plan was as slow as it was sure; and we have before us, two men, of elevated minds and noble character, ruined by the prosperity of their situation. Their unbounded means allowed full scope for the natural bias of the heart, to display itself without control; and whilst they were both fitted by the powers of their understanding to elevate and advance the interests of their country, yet all the good that was accomplished, resulted from the overruling of their licentiousness. A phenomenon, in the moral government of the world, divinely announced by the Sacred Penman. Book of Psalms lxxvi. 10.

The Cardinal's superior abilities, as a ruler, Able adminwere soon developed in the administration of the istration of the Commonwealth. He was indefatigable in business, and vigorous in the execution of the laws. Nothing escaped his vigilance. His scrutiny extended to ecclesiastical as well as civil affairs. He brought all public extortioners to a severe account. He visited perjury with condign punishment; and established courts for the purpose of defending the poor against the oppression of

SECTION the rich. In short, he was a determined reformer: and wherever disorders existed, his powerful mind was always prepared to apply a remedy. But he was not popular; and this, perhaps, may be a proof of his impartiality and sincerity. During an insurrection in London, which was caused by the jealousy of the citizens against the Foreign mechanics and artizans; the all-powerful Cardinal, instead of hastening to the place of tumult as the first magistrate under the King, was glad to shut himself up in his palace, and to fortify it with cannon, A fact sufficient in itself; to convey to us a distinct idea, of the barbarous arrangement, of the civil power, at that time.

The great begins to unfold:

The REFORMATION! the most important and purpose of God glorious event of this or any other age, since the promulgation of christianity, is now before us. It is the great object which is to guide our inquiries, and to which, for a long time, we have seen every event in our history tending; and it is in the sudden and effectual deliverance from the usurpations of Popery, fraught with such inconceivable blessings to millions of the human race, that we are to look for the manifest finger of God. Had we been following the rise of the Popedom, we should have found at this time, that the Popish church had arrived at the "ne plus ultra" of error in doctrine—superstition in worship, and viciousness in practice; and that the measure of her iniquities was full; whilst her Lords, the

Popes, had arrived at a most prodigious height of pride, presumption and impiety. Indeed, nothing can more fully discover the truth of these imputations, than the open and profligate sale of what were termed "Indulgences;" the conditions of which were: "That without distinction of persons or sins, whoever performed certain religious rites, and paid certain sums of money, should obtain a full remission of their sins." The agents employed in the transfer of these indulgences, carried on their infamous traffic, in a manner the most undisguised; and opened their courts or shops even in taverns, brothels, and gaming houses. Such open licentiousness and blasphemy could not escape general observation. Discussions on the lawfulness of such extraordinary assumptions, were excited throughout Europe. The flagitious lives of the clergy—the increase of learning, and the discovery of printing, gave strength and vigour and extension to the inquiry. The immortal name of Luther is well known in conjunction with this subject, and indeed, is closely connected with the whole of this extraordinary ecclesiastical revolution, as it respects the Continent of Europe.

But our design is to trace the progress of the Reformation in England, which did not depend upon the same causes, nor the same persons—was more slowly developed, and thus providentially escaped those innovations which characterized the Lutheran and Genevese Reformation. And

SECTION III.

SECTION it will appear, not a little remarkable that, the Cardinal himself was the first great Instrument. He had been appointed as we have seen, the Pope's legate plenipotentiary, with full power to inquire into, and correct all ecclesiastical abuses. He exerted this authority with such vigour and dispatch, that he became extremely odious with all ranks of the Clergy. Loud complaints were made against the rigorous severity and exactions of the Cardinal, which at length, through the Archbishop, reached the ears of the King, who so far interfered, as to rebuke the severity of his Minister.

> It is well known that the Cardinal's ambition had, for a long time, been placed on the dignity of the Popedom, and this object he steadily pursued through all his course. He never lost sight of the dazzling prize, night or day. It was the keystone of all his policy, and was mixed up with all the national treaties which he had power to control. He courted the favour of foreign Princes, whose influence could avail, and especially at this time, of Francis King of France, for whom he obtained the restoration of Tournay; on which occasion also the Princess Mary, not one year old, was affianced to the infant Dauphin of France.

Charles V. Emperor, A. D. 1519.

Another eminent personage, whose actions had a powerful influence on the future events of this reign, must now be introduced to the reader. This was Charles V. of Spain, who was elected Emperor, in the room of Maximillian. This sagacious Prince, whose mind was occupied with the SECTION splendid schemes of an unbounded ambition, soon perceived that it was his interest to stand well with the prime minister of England. With this great man, to resolve and to act, were the same thing. He lost no time, but though somewhat behind his rival, yet, by munificent presents and well-timed flattery, he contended successfully with Francis for the post of favour.

III. CHAP. II.

The Cardinal cautiously weighing the balance, of things—perceived that the Emperor was the more potent Monarch, and reflecting, that in case of a rupture between him and Francis, the power of the King of England must decide the contest, resolved to give all his influence to the Emperor; in ratification of which, he sent him more valuable presents than he had received. This deep policy, by which he rejected the interest of the French party, although it is said, France had promised him the votes of thirteen Cardinals, was as unsuccessful as it was dishonest. It was, as we shall see, a false step for his own interests, and could never be retrieved.

An interlude now occurs in the political drama, with the details of which, I must forbear to embla-tween the zon my pages, as I do not find that it bears any France and reference to the course of events. It was a long- England. projected interview between the Kings of France and England; and conducted on such a scale of expensive magnificence, that it defies all compari-

Interview be-King's of

III. Снар. 11.

SECTION son with similar displays, whether ancient or modern, and acquired for the plains of Ardres, where the interview took place, the name of "the field of the cloth of gold".

The King immediately on his return, not content with the honors he had gained on the plains of Ardres, determined to display his learning; and entered into a theological dispute with the celebrated Luther, whose writings had now acquired great celebrity. The King, it is said, was more induced to undertake the work, because Luther had attacked his favorite author. Thomas Aquinas, with great asperity. Be this as it may, the work entitled "De septem Sacramentis" was accomplished, and in a splendid dress, was presented to the Pope, by Doctor John Clark, dean of Windsor; and was received with the greatest demonstrations of joy and triumph: and there is nothing, if succeeding events would have allowed, which Henry might not have obtained from the See of Rome. His writings were compared to those of Saint Austin and Jerome: and in the very next consistory, the high and honorable title of "DEFENDER OF THE FAITH" was conferred upon him. Nor was this all—the fame of his scholarship resounded through all the states of Christendom. Innumerable authors dedicated their works to him, as the first in rank and letters; and his name was everywhere lauded by sages, reverenced by saints, and celebrated by poets. Nor must

all this be considered as empty flattery. The SECTION work had real merit.—It was superior to that of his learned antagonist in propriety of language, in the force of his reasoning, and the learning of its citations: but as the learned Collier says of it.— "It is true he leans too much upon his character, argues in his garter-robes, and writes as it were, with his sceptre.*

III. CHAP. II.

But alas! a tragical event which now happened threw a gloom over these innocent employments. The House of Buckingham had not yet expiated the guilt of their fathers, and Edward the present accomplished Duke, was destined to fall a victim to unerring justice. His high and haughty bearing towards the Cardinal, had provoked his resentment, and from secret intelligence, he was made acquainted with certain expressions which had been uttered, in private, by the Duke, which when brought into light, seemed to bear the construction of treason. He was, in consequence, apprehended and tried; and, on very slight grounds, condemned to die. He refused to sue for pardon, and was beheaded in the Tower; and whatever portion of guilt may attach to his character, it is manifest his life was in the power of the Cardinal, and it is to be feared, that he was instigated to destroy him, through the influence of revenge.

At length the war which had long been foreseen, broke out between the Emperor and the King of

^{*} Curiosities of Literature.

III. Снар. II.

SECTION France, and which continued, with partial interruptions, to devastate the fairest portion of Southern Europe for the space of forty years. Wolsey, with a splendid retinue, was sent as ambassador and umpire, to settle the dispute. Great preparations were made by all parties to give solemnity and importance to the embassy. The Cardinal, at first, appears honestly intent on fulfilling the object of his mission, and of bringing the war to But in the midst of the negocia conclusion. ations, a private interview with the Emperor, changed his purposes; and after forming a private treaty with the Emperor, by which he lost the confidence and friendship of the French Monarch, he returned to England.

> But this deceitful policy whilst it ended in his own disappointment, was one of those necessary links in the course of events, which led to the Reformation in England. But no doubt it had a still more striking influence in the affairs transacted on the Continent, but which belong to another portion of history.

Vacancy in the Papacy, A. D. 1522.

At this very juncture, the heart stirring ambition of the Cardinal was awakened in all its intensity by the death of Leo X. The Cardinal had certainly laid his plans with great care, and no person on public grounds, could have higher pretensions to the Popedom. But his ambitious hopes were to meet with a severe check. very King whom he had selected as his patron,

CHAP. II.

and in whom he had reposed his confidence, failed SECTION him. Wolsey lost no time, but before his envoy could even arrive at Rome, Adrian, who had been tutor to the Emperor, wes elected to the Papal chair. No doubt as we have hinted above, this failure may be traced in a great measure, to the alienation of the French Monarch from Wolsey, on account of his private treaty with the Emperor, and which soon after led him to declare war against England. But the conduct of the Emperor inflicted a deep wound on the mind of the Cardinal, which he did not fail to resent; and which led to a new course of policy, on which great events are made to depend!

But whatever might be the feelings of Wolsey, he is obliged to dissemble; for one part of the visits England. private Treaty, was to secure an interview between the Emperor and the King of England—one principal reason of which was, to treat of a marriage between him and the Princess Mary. The Marquess of Dorset and the Cardinal with a noble retinue, met the Emperor at Calais. He was received in London by the King with great pomp and rejoicings, and on the nineteenth of June was installed a Knight of the Garter, with great magnificence. But nothing surpassed the dignity and splendor of Wolsey. In all things he affected the ceremonial and dignity of the Pope. On Whitsunday the King and Emperor, rode in great state, to St. Paul's Cathedral; where the Cardinal

The Emperor A. D 1522.

SECTION performed high mass, with unusual pomp. At the commencement of the service, two Barons presented him with the bason and water; after the Gospels, the ceremony was performed by two Earls; and at the last lavatory, by two Dukes: a priestly state, which it is said, raised the indignation even of some of the Spaniards. But what ought chiefly to be remarked is, that, the two Monarchs, received the Sacrament together, and swore upon the holy gospel to observe the league concluded between them-to unite their forces against Francis, and to marry the Princess Mary, when of a proper age to the Emperor—we shall see how remarkably these solemn engagements were frustrated, affording high proof of the vanity of human wisdom, and a striking illustration of the truth of Holy Writ.*

> The Emperor departed under the convoy of the Earl of Surrey, the English Admiral, who carried on a desultory and merciless warfare on the coast of France, whilst the Marquess of Dorset, enacts the same predatory scenes on the borders of Scot-The amount of private suffering inflicted on families, villages, and towns, by these torturing expeditions must have been fearful. But preparations were making on a more extensive scale, and to raise the necessary supplies, the King caused a survey of the whole kingdom to be made, which, manifested the rapidly increasing wealth

^{*} Prophecy of Isaiah liv. 24, 25.

of the nation; and induced the King by the exer- SECTION cise of his own authority, to command loans of his richer subjects. But this method was utterly insufficient, and the King and his Minister were obliged to summon a Parliament. The arbitrary authority, and munificent disposition of the Cardinal, were unfriendly to these popular assemblies. He knew their power, and disliked to encounter them. He had carried on the government for seven years without their assistance; and nothing but a sense of necessity could have induced him to wolsey and assemble them. The Cardinal exerted all his the house of eloquence to induce the House of Commons, to grant a liberal supply; but when that failed, he attempted to overawe their deliberations. entered the House with great warmth, and told them "that he desired to reason with those who opposed his demands," to which he received in answer, "It was the order of that House, to hear, and not to reason, but among themselves." With this rebuke the Cardinal departed, resolving no doubt, to have as little, as possible, to do with such refractory materials; nor did he court another interview with them of seven years.

This line of policy was most injurious to the commonwealth. There was wealth in the country, and ability in the people, which might have been College of turned to great advantage; but these, by not being Physicians founded. called into exercise, were in a great measure lost, to the community. In this Parliament, the College

CHAP. II.

III. CHAP. 11.

SECTION of Physicians was instituted; and important privileges granted to its members. An act was also passed to enable the King by his letters patent to annul all attainders of High Treason, and to restore their heirs; and the subsidies being granted, this septennial session ended.

> In the mean time the Duke of Suffolk with a train of the first nobility, entered France at the head of thirteen thousand well disciplined and effective troops, and having formed a junction with the forces of the Emperor, they were victorious, and advanced within a few miles of Paris; but from the extreme coldness of the weather, by which it is said, all the corn in France * was frozen and destroyed, they were compelled to put an end to the campaign. It would be useless and tedious to enter into a minute detail of the military exploits of this period. But it should be remarked, that during this inroad of the English into France, their King, Francis, was conducting his forces into Italy; and that in the midst of his successes, his arms received a temporary check by the death of Pope Adrian VI.

Wolsey arrives A. D. 1523.

Wolsey's ambition was again roused. at great power, possible effort was made, and at the intercession of Wolsey, the King with his own hand, wrote in his favor, to the Emperor. Notwithstanding, the Emperor again failed him, and Julio dé Medici was made Pope by the name of Clement VII.

^{*} Echard.

Wolsey though greatly mortified, still concealed SECTION his resentment, and endeavoured to make the best terms he could with the new Pope. Nothing that he asked was denied; and his powers in Ecclesiastical matters, were increased to the authority of a Pope, in England. At this juncture, the mind of Wolsey appears to have contemplated great designs; and his first object was, to build two colleges, one at his native town Ipswich; and the other, at Oxford. And in order to fulfil his designs, he readily obtained a license from the Pope, to suppress some of the lesser monasteries, and to apply their revenues to these important institutions. But he had more difficulty with the King, who, for some time, refused to give his consent. This may be considered as the first invasion of the Papal superstition in England; and, we may well stop to admire the conscientious scruples of a Monarch, who, led on by circumstances, and taught by this example, afterwards, and in a few short years from the time of which we are speaking, destroyed every vestige of the Monastic institutions in England! How little was any thing of the kind contemplated by him at this time! How little could he have imagined, that he, should be guilty of such excesses! and that he, the "Defender of the Faith," should be the greatest enemy the Papal church ever had, in England! Had such things then been proposed to him, would he not have answered in the words

III. Снар. И. SECTION of Hazael: "But what! Is thy servant a dog that he should do this great thing?" III. CHAP. II.

Whilst these projects were entertained by the Cardinal, the Scots, at the instigation of France, under the Duke of Albany, invaded the English frontiers. The Earl of Surrey, now Duke of Norfolk, at the head of a formidable army, repelled the invasion. The Scots shortly after, made overtures of peace, and stipulated to give up the French interest, on condition, that the King would consent to contract a marriage, between the Princess Mary and their young Monarch. It will be remembered, that the Princess had been solemnly affianced to the Emperor; and this offer, afforded an opportunity of putting the intentions of the Emperor to the test. He did not wait for a formal communication on the subject, but hearing of the treaty, he was the first to despatch an embassy to require, that the Princess should immediately be delivered into his hands, promising to proclaim her Empress, and to appoint her Regent of the Low Countries. But this negociation which would have changed the whole complexion of English affairs, and might have proved fatal, as we shall see, to the English Reformation, was suddenly interrupted, and never renewed, by an event, which filled all Europe with surprise and astonishment!

King of France taken prisoner.

The war between the King of France and the A D. 1525. Emperor was vigorously carried on in Italy, and

Francis after a series of brilliant exploits, closely SECTION pursued the forces of the Duke of Bourbon, the Emperor's General; and was now besieging him in the town of Pavia. The vigour of the French King afforded slender hope, that the city would be able, long to sustain the siege; and the Duke was dubious what course to adopt. But a singular circumstance decided the fate of the contest. Wolsey ever vigilant for an occasion to gratify his smothered resentment, thought this a favourable opportunity, by an unexpected stroke, to throw the affairs of the Emperor, into embarrassment. Accordingly, he suddenly stopped the pay of the Duke of Bourbon's soldiers, which depended upon the English treasury. This "untoward" affair, exasperated the Duke, and drove him to utter despair; and he resolved to attempt the most desperate measures. On a dark night, he ordered part of his men, to attack the besiegers on the worst defended part of the town; whilst he himself, with a select body, issued from a postern gate, which by a circuitous path brought him into the rear of the enemy. Every thing succeeded to his wishes. The watch was slender and the soldiers being suddenly awoke out of sleep, were seized with fear; and whilst their whole attention was directed to that part of the town, from which the assault was made, and the Duke of Bourbon attacking them at the same time in the rear, the terror was greatly increased. The moment was

CHAP. II.

SECTION III. Снар. И.

favorable for the Duke, nor did he neglect it. He seized their artillery, and discharged it upon the confused camp. Great numbers of the enemy were slain, whilst to complete their overthrow, the French King, himself, bravely fighting with his own hand, and endeavouring to restorc courage to his men, was taken prisoner in the field. remarkable event happened on the 24th day of February, A. D. 1525.

States of Euthe success of the Emperor.

This surprising change, when the tide of vicrope alarmed at tory seemed to be on the point of declaring for Francis, threw the King of England and his Prime Minister into great perplexity. Nor indeed, Henry and Wolsey alone. Every Monarch and Prime Minister in Europe were alarmed at the gigantic power, which this turn of fortune had placed in the hands of the Emperor. The balance of power was in imminent danger of being destroyed, and the independence of their several kingdoms and states threatened with destruction. Henry, by a tacit consent, without a formal recognition of his title, assumed, that it was his duty to come forward on this emergency, as the Arbiter of Europe. A council was summoned, in which it was determined, that Henry, as an ally in chief, should claim a share in the success of their arms, and demand the restoration of his inheritance in France: and stipulate, that when the Princess Mary should be delivered into the hands of the Emperor, Francis should be set at liberty, under the auspices of the King of England. But late events had en- SECTION larged the views of the Emperor; and the prospect of universal Monarchy now opened before CHAP. 11. him. The embassy of the King of England met with a very cold reception in Spain; and to discover more effectually his intentions, and how little he regarded his long contemplated alliance with England, he married the Infanta of Portugal, as more in unison with his ambitious views. From this moment we may date the separation between the Emperor and the King of England. Their solemn vows and engagements came to an end.— Even their private friendship ceased, and the English ambassadors were recalled.

In the mean time, every effort was made by Henry and the other Princes of Europe, to obtain the release of the King of France. But in vain: the Emperor remained inflexible, and made such exorbitant demands, that the King of France though cruelly suffering under his confinement, could not, in honor, accede to them. At length, however, after a year's painful captivity, the French Monarch was released; and to secure the stipulation of the treaty concluded at Madrid, Francis was required to deliver up his two sons as hostages. The exchange was made on the borders of France, with great formality. It was on this occasion, after fulfilling the agreement and delivering up his sons—the Dauphin and the Duke of Orleans—the chivalrous and impatient Monarch

III.

SECTION mounted a spirited charger, and giving him the reins, galloped off exclaiming "I am King! "I III. CHAP. II. am King!"

departs from his engage. ments. A. D. 1526.

The interpretation of this brief but emphatic King Francis declaration, soon made itself manifest; we have already remarked, that the conduct and success of the Emperor, had alarmed the fears of the European States; and the Pope and Venetians and Princes of Italy, had combined for their mutual safety and independence; nor did the King of France hesitate to unite with them in a treaty, which is celebrated under the name of the "Clementine League." But how, we ask in astonishment, could Francis be a party to such a League, in contradiction to his most solemn oaths and engagements? Undoubtedly, Francis was a man of high honor, and would not for his crown, have been thought guilty of a breach of his word, much less of his oath. Upon what principles then, are we to account for a line of conduct, which, to all unsophisticated minds, must expose him to a charge of the blackest perjury?

The cause of it.

By a stipulation of the "Clementine League," that iniquitous Power, which arrogates to itself a supremacy in impiety, undertook to absolve him from his oath. The Pope discharged him from the obligation of an oath, which had been taken in the name of God, and ratified in Heaven! Unhappy Monarch! still more unhappy Pontiff, thus to dispense with the immutable laws of morality and religion, and to fasten the impiety on the SECTION Son of God, by violating them, as his vicegerent, in his Name!

Снар. II.

The King of England was honored with the title of "Protector" of this famous league. the King stood out upon his prerogative of Arbiter, and refused to become a party where he was competent to act as judge. Francis however, lost no time in acknowledging the friendship of Henry in promoting his deliverance from prison, and honored him with every mark of respect and affection; and never, afterwards, seemed to forget the obligation he was under to his generous sympathy, and unwearied exertions in his favor.

Indeed, such was now the good-will manifested First causes of towards each other by these two Monarchs, that the Reformaa treaty of peace and alliance was entered into, in which it was stipulated that the Princess Mary, should be given in marriage either to Francis himself, or to his second son the Duke of Orleans; and that Henry should unite with him for the purpose of compelling the Emperor to reasonable conditions, in the restoration of his children. how little of all this was to be accomplished! and how different from that contemplated in this treaty, was to be the destiny of the august parties concerned! Nay such is the obscurity and darkness which cloud, in human minds, the vision of the future, that in the settlement of this treaty, the first hint was thrown out; and the first seeds

SECTION 111. CHAP. II.

of that prolifie harvest of good and evil were sown, which changed the whole face of civil society. I mean the illegitimacy of the Princess Mary, which was suggested, during this negotiation, by the Bishop of Tarbe, as a question which might admit of doubt!

Other events were also transacting essentially connected with the approaching crisis, which was now fast hastening to its accomplishment, in which we shall perceive the overruling hand of a BENEVOLENT PROVIDENCE, inasmuch as not one of the happy results, was contemplated by the actors in the preparatory causes. So far from it, the events themselves being so entirely different from the intentions of the parties, by whose instrumentality they were accomplished, that it would be absurd to suppose them the results of their contrivance. Yet it would be still greater folly, to suppose events of such magnitude, and fraught with such inconceivable blessings to mankind, not to be the result of contrivance:—The contrivance, doubtless, of that Almighty Being, who is "excellent in Power;" and "worketh all things after the counsel of his own will."

Dreadful vis-

itation on the in Italy; and the Pope made heavy complaints Pope. to Henry, and sought his immediate assistance. A. D. 1527. The King like a faithful son of the church, answered the appeal of the Pontiff, by sending

But to proceed. Dreadful disorders continued

^{*} Book of Job xxxvii. 23.

him a sum of money, upon the receipt of which the SECTION Pope, at the head of a great army, took the field against the Imperialists. For a time he was successful; but Heaven was preparing a dreadful punishment for this perfidious man. trigues, treachery, and resources were boundless; but, at length all failed him; and the wily plotter was besieged in the city of Rome itself, by the Duke of Bourbon. An assault was made, the Duke in the moment of attack, received a mortal wound, but the city was carried by storm. That proud city never saw a more calamitous day, no, not even when sacked by the barbarous Goths. The churches and monasteries were spoiled—the palaces of the Pope and Cardinals ransacked—the warehouses of the merchants plundered. Heaps of wealth and riches were piled in the streets, and the spoil was increased to a vast amount from the ransom of innumerable prisoners, whilst the slaughter was immense, and the streets flowed To increase the indignity, the Prewith blood. lates and Ecclesiastics of rank, were placed on mules and asses, and led in procession, through the miserable streets, and, to complete the overthrow, the Pope was taken prisoner.

Nothing could exceed the excitement caused throughout Europe, by the capture of the Pope. The Emperor himself was almost alarmed at the success of his own arms, and in answer to the representations of Henry VIII. condescended to SECTION
III.
CHAP. II.

apologize for the unexampled ruin which had But the Emperor temporized, which been caused. roused the indignation of the King of England, and he resolved to enter into a stricter alliance with Francis, which was accomplished under the auspices of Wolsey. The Emperor somewhat alarmed by these new treaties, came to the resolution of making peace, and allowing the claims of the two Kings, with respect to the Pope, and the two sons of Francis. But whilst the terms were preparing, the Emperor determined on new projects; and in order that he might divide the counsels of the two Kings, he once more tempted the Cardinal by an offer of an extravagant bribe. But it was now too late, the settled wrath of Wolsey was not to be moved, and he remained inexorable; whilst the Emperor was obliged to encounter the united power and resentment of the kings of France and England.

Brilliant period of the Reign.

A. D 1528.

This was a memorable period of English history. Under the wise and vigorous policy of the Cardinal, the country had rapidly increased in wealth and dignity. In all transactions with Foreign powers, England was regarded as the Head of the balance of Power. The King was justly considered as the most powerful Monarch in Europe. The Emperor courted his approval as the Arbiter of Christendom. The Pontiff acknowledged him to be the bulwark of the Papal throne. Francis embraced him as his deliverer and ally. His own

kingdoms were in great peace and prosperity; and had he died at this time, in the nineteenth year of his reign, he would have been considered, a most fortunate Monarch; and in all probability, would have been canonized by the Church of But he was yet to live, to develope his own character, and to disclose those hidden evils of his heart, which were to be visited with great personal calamity and anguish to himself, but providentially overruled, in their ultimate effects, to great national advantages.

SECTION III. CHAP. II.

We are now approaching the era of the Refor- The question mation, which was wrought out of circumstances of the King's marriage. not in the remotest degree, connected with it-nay, which arose out of a circumstance connected with and recognizing the Sovereign Authority of THE PAPAL CHURCH; and which in its carrying out, shewed a retributory providence on that profane and impious power.

It will be remembered that Henry VII. on the death of his son Arthur, obtained a dispensation from the Pope to overrule the law of nature and God: and to contract his son's widow to his next son, Henry VIII. Nor was this flagrant violation of the divine law, the only evil connected with this ill-omened alliance with the Princess of Spain. Her first marriage with Arthur was propitiated by the sacrifice of an innocent victim, the unfortunate Earl of Warwick; and her nuptials, as she herself represented, solemnized in blood.

SECTION she herself, as far as we can learn from history, was an amiable and excellent person, and won the esteem of all who approached her. band too, to whom she had now been married eighteen years, could find no fault in her. But none of these things prevailed to avert the blow which was now impending; and which every circumstance declared to be from Heaven.

The King's divorce.

We should not be justified from the facts of history, to admit the suggestion for a moment, that the King's latent affection for Anne Boleyn, made him resolve to divorce his Queen-at the same time, that it confirmed and strengthed his resolve, will not admit of dispute. But for some time, foreigners had suggested that the King's marriage was illegitimate; and that the authority of the Pope had not power to render it lawful. This suggestion, no doubt, had a powerful effect on the haughty spirit of the King, in whose mind there was a peculiarly ardent desire to live in his posterity. Besides, at a very early period, when the divorce was only in contemplation, Wolsey had proposed a marriage with the sister of the King of France,* a very improbable circumstance, had the King's affections been prepossessed; and of which, Wolsey could not have been ignorant. But be this as it may, the King determined upon a divorce, as the only satisfactory redress, and formally propounded the question to

^{*} Echard.

the Bishops of England. These with one excep- SECTION tion, Fisher, of Rochester, pronounced the marriage unlawful. By this decision, the King's mind, was confirmed in all its fears, respecting the succession to the crown; which indeed, as appears from the annals of the time, became a matter of interest to the whole nation.

III. Снар. 11.

An embassy was immediately dispatched to Rome, to obtain a divorce; and nothing could surpass the desire of the Pope, to gratify the wishes of the King. In this he was heartily sincere, and longed for nothing so much, as such an opportunity of shewing his gratitude to Henry. But his hands were tied! He was in captivity; and at the mercy of the Emperor, and it was this eireumstance alone, which prevented him from immediately granting the divorce. He promised the ambassador, that as soon as he was at liberty, he would grant the dispensation; and to shew that he was sincere, he gave them such advice, that if it had been followed, the whole complexion of this affair would have been changed. He advised the King to cause judgment to be passed in England, and on authority of that sentence, contract another marriage, and afterwards send to Rome for a confirmation, which must, of necessity, be granted.

But the King's councillors saw that, if by any possibility this confirmation should be denied, the nation would be plunged into all the evils of a III.

SECTION disputed succession. This decision of the council was followed by endless discussions and delays, CHAP. II. upon which were suspened events of signal importance to the nation!

> Another embassy was now sent to Rome for Legantine authority, to try the cause in England; and a Legate was desired, who should be armed with a decretal Bull, to confirm his authority on passing judgment for the divorce. In answer to this request, Campeggio was sent to England, with the authority required. But he was strictly charged, not to allow the Bull to go out of his hands. It was at first, the policy of the Pope to temporize, in order that Henry might be induced to use his influence more effectually with the Emperor, to obtain his release. By this delay, England was lost to the Papacy. At last, however, the Pope's self-interest prevailed over every other consideration; and he devoted himself entirely to the wishes of the Emperor, as the only means by which himself and his family, could be restored to their estates and dignity.

From this moment, the King's suit became entangled with inextricable difficulties. The Pope had resolved to establish himself in the Imperial favour, the Emperor was bound in honor to defend the cause of the Queen of England, not only as being her kinsman, but as having been solemnly appealed to, by herself.

The Popes

The Pope meantime, with all the subtilty and SECTION craft, for which he was notorious, sent Campana, one of his most faithful and honored adherents to England, who might, in the most flattering manner, assure the King of his unshaken friendship deceit. and devoted service; and openly command his Legates to expedite the business of their commission: but he had sent instructions for Campeggio, who was ordered to burn the decretal Bull, with which he had been entrusted, and to delay the adjudication by every possible expedient. He also pledged himself to Henry's ambassadors, who had been sent to Rome, that he would confirm the sentence of the court in England, whilst at the same time he was bound by strict engagements to the Emperor, not to confirm it! Indeed, the Imperial party at Rome, became stronger every day: and at alists demand that the suit at length, they demanded an avocation of the suit. should be tried But this was a bold step; and one for which the at Rome. Pope was not yet prepared: and he determined, for the present, till his treaty with the Emperor was completed, to uphold the authority of his Legantine Court in England.

This Court was formally opened with great pomp and ceremony at the great hall, Blackfriars, formally open. on the thirty-first of May, by Cardinal Wolsey in A. D. 1529. conjunction with Campeggio. Citations were immediately issued for the appearance of the parties in the suit, on the eighteenth day of June following. The Queen twice appeared before this Tri-

The process

III. Снар. II.

SECTION bunal; and, both times, solemnly protested against the Place, the Judges, and the Lawyers; and appealed to the Pope and the Emperor. The Court pronounced the Queen contumacious. and proceeded to examine witnesses, and to debate the subject of the divorce; and, in a few days, they might have determined this important affair. the Pope's treaty with the Emperor was nearly concluded, and on the Emperor's stipulating to restore the family of the Pope to the government of Florence, the Pope agreed to the "Avocation" which was proclaimed in England, on the nineteenth of July. Campeggio having now played his part, abruptly broke up the Court, and left the English Cardinal to the tender mercies of his enraged Monarch. The King, however, delayed the execution of his wrath, till he could take a review of his situation. Every evil seemed to crowd upon him, at once. The political sky was black with His future policy seemed to be involved in impenetrable darkness. The Emperor and Pope were in firm alliance, and the Pope's nephew married to the Emperor's daughter. Through the interest of the Lady Margaret of Flanders, a peace had been concluded between the Emperor and the King of France; and to complete his difficulties, he was deprived of the counsels of his sagacious Minister.

In this dilemma he determined to throw himself The King's wise determin- upon the good-will of his people, and to summon

a Parliament. In the mean time, to punish the SECTION Cardinal, not with a view of utterly destroying him, but chiefly to strike a wholesome terror into the see of Rome, he was commanded to give up the Great Seal, which was immediately transferred to Sir Thomas More, the greatest lawyer of his age, and remarkable for his piety and learning. The Attorney General was next ordered to file an information against him, because he had, contrary to the statute of Richard II., procured Bulls from Rome. To this he pleaded guilty, through ignorance of the Statute; upon which he was sentenced, according to the law, to forfeit all his possessions to the King. These proceedings produced a very unhappy effect upon the mind of Wolsey; and he began to sink under the pressure of his past labours and his threatened fall. But the affection of the King for his long-tried and devoted Minister, still lingered, and he frequently sent him messages, with assurances of his protection, and promises of pardon. But his enemies were on the alert, and found means to have him impeached of high crimes and misdemeanors.-The articles of impeachment passed the upper house; but were rejected by the house of Commons, through the strenuous exertions of his faithful secretary, Thomas Cromwell, whose name must ever stand high in the annals of his country.

The King finding that the court of Rome took Fall and death of Wolsey. little concern in the calamities of the Cardinal, A. D. 1530.

SECTION ceased to punish him; and he was permitted to retire to his Archiepiscopal palace at York. spirit was now broken, and he appeared humble and submissive; but the very ruins of his greatness were considerable.—In this journey he travelled with a hundred and sixty horses in his train, followed by seventy-two waggons. In his retirement he spent some months in acts of religion and charity. But it was too peaceful and honorable a conclusion for such a career as his. Perhaps his pride and ostentation might have been sufficiently visited by such a change of fortune; but he had a principal share in the death of Buckingham, whom he had sacrificed to his pride and revenge. The divine chastisement pursued him to his retreat. enemies again conspire, and accuse him of treason, and he was arrested by the Earl of Northumberland, who had authority to convey him to the The Cardinal now saw that his end was near; and he was seized with deep remorse for the evils of his eventful life. A consciousness of guilt depressed his spirit. His religion offered him no consolation, and he rapidly declined, under the agonizing tortures of his mind. shattered frame could not sustain the fatigues of his journey. He sickened on his arrival at Sheffield, and with the greatest difficulty, reached the town of Leicester. After his arrival at the Abbey, where he was hospitably received by the Monks, his illness rapidly increased, and with it,

his remorse for the past. He expired on the SECTION twenty-eighth day of November, and with his latest breath shewed how deeply he felt, when it was, too late to rectify it, the whole error of his life. "Had I" said he, "served my God as zealously as I have served my King, He would not have forsaken me in my grey hairs."

Thus died this extraordinary man, who, with His character. all his advantages of mind and station, left the world, without establishing for himself the regard of posterity. In council, he was more cunning than wise, more temporizing than prudent. prosperity, he was ostentatious and haughty. adversity, abject and dispirited. In morals, he was licentious and base. In religion, INFIDEL. his judgments, he was stern and inflexible. reforms were dictated by his extravagances. He was adulatory and subservient, where his interests could be served; proud and disdainful where his influence could be serviceable. And to conclude, he was effeminate in parade, pusillanimous in

danger, and revengeful of injuries.

Notwithstanding this almost total absence of moral excellency from his character, his memory has been preserved from utter contempt and execration, by his more than princely munificence and endowments; and amongst others, Christ Church, tions. Oxford, will testify to a late period, the extent of his power, and the capaciousness of his mind.

His founda-

SECTION III. CHAP. II.

What he might have been, had he not been a Romanist and a Cardinal, it is impossible to say: as it was, his unwearied ambition in pursuit of the Papacy, gave a direction to the whole external policy of his country. The course which he pursued, as we have seen, brought the whole power of the Emperor, to act in opposition to the wishes of the King his master—a circumstance which eventually hastened his own destruction, and gave an extraordinary impulse to the destinies of England!

The Reform-

The scene now changed: Wolsey had run his ation proceeds. course, and disappeared. He had brought the Church, his Country, and the King's suit, exactly to that point, which it is evident, his talents, his prejudices, and his connexion with the Popedom, permitted him. We are now, to follow the rise and advancement of another remarkable individual, under whose auspices, a new era was to This was Doctor Thomas Cranmer, commence. Fellow of Jesus College, Cambridge, whom the famous divorce case of the unhappy Catharine, was destined to bring into public view. Cranmer being in the company of Bishop Fox and Gardiner, at Waltham, he gave it as his opinion, that the King should obtain the judgment of the principal Universities and Divines of Europe; and, that if they declared against the lawfulness of the marriage, it must necessarily be void, inasmuch as the Pope's dispensation could not derogate from the laws of God. The novelty and reasonableness of this judgment pleased the King, and he desired to see the person who had spoken, with such penetration and wisdom. Cranmer appeared at Court, and conducted himself with such candour and modesty, that the King conceived an high opinion of his learning and probity, which he could never be induced, by the artifices and calumnies of his enemies, to alter.

SECTION III. CHAP. II.

In accordance with the suggestion of Cranmer, the case of the King's divorce was propounded to the chief Universities and Divines, who declared the King's marriage unlawful. An earnest appeal was now made to Rome, seconded by the remonstrance of the Bishops and the chief Nobility of the realm: but to no purpose, the Pope was now obliged to conform to his treaty with the Emperor, and to insist upon an "avocation" of the suit, in order that it might be determined in the supreme court at Rome.

But a Power was at hand, more irresistible than that of Kings and Cardinals—a POWER which ment and Conwas to lay the deep foundations of the Reforma-TION, the most striking event that ever occurred in the annals of mankind—this was the BRITISH PARLIAMENT. Happily, after the death of Wolsey whose mind fertile in expedients, had rendered his Master independent of every power but his own, the King was obliged to have recourse to Parliaments: and nothing will tend to shew more

III. Снар. II.

SECTION forcibly the strength of mind and freedom of thought, to which the body of the nation had attained, than the energy and wisdom displayed by these assemblies. There had been but two parliaments summoned in fourteen years. Their dispatch of business could not arise from exercise or skill in debate. Their decisions and enactments discover the mind of the people. It is said that the parliaments of that day were obsequious to the will of the Monarch. I can discern no reasonable ground for this calumny. If by obsequiousness, is meant a compliance, which involved the sacrifice of their independence, I can find no attempt, on the part of the King, to overawe their deliberations; nor can I perceive any symptoms in them, of a spirit, that would have submitted to such a dictation. Their decisions, therefore, were independent; and if the King and his Parliament willingly concurred in their enactments—the circumstance cannot be imputed as a reproach to either party. It is an important and interesting fact to discover, that the Reformation proceeded from the Nation; and that their representatives in parliament, were made the grand instrument of recovering the nation from the ignominious bondage of Papal usurpation: and of restoring to our forefathers, their lost rights of civil and religious liberty. But at that period, there was another constituent, if I may so express myself, in parliament—the Convocation of the Clergy: - and it is not a little remarkable, that the

very first act of the Reformation; and that too, SECTION in which its essential principle was involved, was passed by the Convocation of the Church of England.

CHAP. 11.

It will be remembered, that Cardinal Wolsey, 'The constituwas found guilty of a "Premunire" under statutes, tion was always and anti-Papal. which had been enacted in the reign of Richard II. against all persons who should execute any constitution from the court of Rome, without a Royal license. The matter was debated in Convocation, and it was clearly perceived, that the whole body of the Clergy were guilty of a breach of the same Statutes. The Convocation agreed to submit their case to the King's clemency: and in their address he was styled, "Protector and supreme head of the Church of England," to which however, was added on the representation of certain scrupulous members, "as far as is agreeable to the law of

tion was always

If any thing can place in a strong and overwhelming light, the fact, that the exercise of the Papal authority in England, was a usurpation, both in Church and State, and directly at variance with the spirit and letter of the constitution, it is, that the whole authority of the Pope was destroyed, at one blow, by the revival of statutes, which had been in slumbering existence for two hundred years! So that through that long period, at least, the constitution of England had been PROTESTANT. It might be shown that it existed

Christ."

SECTION at a period long antecedent.* But this is not the Suffice it to say, that what occurred in the place. reign of Henry VIII. was only a revival of Protestanism which slumbered in the constitution; and Englishmen will deserve to lose their liberty, when they passively submit, and allow the Pope of Rome to exercise any Jurisdiction, whether temporal or spiritual, within the boundaries of their dominions. But I must not enlarge; my object is now to trace the rise and full development of this great principle in the history of our Country. I have elsewhere expounded the reasons, upon which we ought, at present, to be determined in our adherence to this inherent principle of our constitution. †

Important act of the Legislature. A. D. 1531.

In this new Session of Parliament, loud complaints were made against the usages of the Ecclesiastical court; and the parliament vigorously pursuing their object, passed an act which was the foundation of the national protest against the Papal supremacy. This was an act for restraining the payment of annates, or first fruits, to the Court of Rome. It is important to observe, as it corroborates the observations which I have just offered, that respecting these first fruits, it was observed in the Act-"that they were founded on NO LAW, but being first granted to defend Christendom against the infidels, they had since been kept up as a revenue to the Papacy."

^{*} Elements of the British Constitution, by the Author. † Catechism of the Constitution of England.-" Whittaker."

Снар. 11.

These proceedings in England, caused great SECTION anxiety at Rome; and a correspondence ensued between the Pope and the King, which ended in a formal citation of the King to appear in person at Rome, or by proxy, to answer to the appeal of the Queen of England; Sir Robert Carne was despatched as the King's excusator. The Imperialists arged an immediate sentence in favor of the Queen; but the wiser Cardinals, fearful of an entire breach with England, advised caution. The King's agents made use of every expedient, and bribes and promises gained many of the Cardinals to the King's interest, and especially the Cardinal of Ravenna, the great oracle of Rome and of the Consistory. But still nothing was done. Endless debate and contention arose in the Court; and they concluded, by advising the King to send a proxy to Rome to answer to the merits of the cause.

But in the mean time, another session of Par- Principles of liament was opened in England; and from the Protestantism unfold. delays and confusions which attended the discussion of this matter at Rome, the King and the people clearly perceived, that in case of any difference between the Pope and the King, the Clergy must necessarily, on account of their oath, coincide with the former, against their lawful Monarch. This result of a Foreign jurisdiction within the Realm, was then too palpable not to be discovered; and in an interview which the King desired with

Ш. CHAP. II.

SECTION the Speaker of the House of Commons, his Majesty addressing him, said, "that he had found that the chief Clergy, were but half subjects, or something less, for that every Bishop and Abbot on entering upon his dignity took an oath to the Pope, inconsistent with that of his fidelity to their King, a contradiction which he desired might be remedied by Parliament." This matter was thus seriously debated in Parliament and so treated, that shortly afterwards, it led to the final renunciation of the Pope's authority. Towards the end of this session, the Lord Chancellor More, who deprecated these innovations on the Papal Supremacy laid down his office, and retired into private life. seals were immediately conferred on Sir Thomas Audley.

Church of England always independent.

In answer to the citation from Rome, for the King of England to appear in person or by proxy, the King's agents were instructed to refuse obedience, on the grounds—that it would be inconsistent with his Coronation Oath, by which he was bound to maintain the dignity of the Crown, and the rights of his subjects. A Protest was subsequently made in the King's name: to the effect, "that as He was a Sovereign Prince, so the Church of England was a free and independent Church over which the Pope had no just authority!"

I mention this for the purpose of shewing that, the Church of England was never, in reality, an integral portion of the Church of Rome; that is, legally subjected to the Pope of Rome; and that, SECTION whatever power he claimed or exercised, was by usurpation, allowance, or the force of circumstan-But we shall perceive more of this at every step, which will serve to demonstrate that the Church of England, was always a free and independent branch of "the Holy Catholic Church."

III. CHAP. II.

The King had now been harrassed for five years in the toils and perplexities of his divorce, and it Catharine. was now evident to him and the nation, that no decision ever could be expected, from the Roman court; and it was determined that he should proceed under the sanction of his own authority. had now for a considerable time, separated from the company of his discarded Queen, who, conscious of her own integrity, resisted all persuasions and threats, and determined to rest her cause on the decision of the Pope. But the hour of her degradation was at hand; and her share of that throne which she had never tarnished, was to be given to another, in her very presence, and at a moment, when she was persuaded it was her own indisputable right: and this was true as far as Catharine herself, was concerned. She was the lawfully married and long recognized wife of the King; and she had done nothing to forfeit the But it was an evil project from the begintitle. She ought never to have been the wife of her husband's brother: and the crime, as we have shewn, rests with those who contracted the mar-

III. Снар. II.

SECTION riage. Nor was she guilty of the blood of Warwick.—The same parties must account for that bloody deed. But the punishment fell upon her comparatively innocent head; and she was visited for the sins of her fathers. In the midst of her indignities, she acknowledged the hand of Heaven in her affliction, and submitted.

The King marries, during his visit at the French Court. A. D. 1532.

The King was married to her rival, the celebrated Anne Boleyn, on the fourteenth of November, at Calais; a lady of extraordinary beauty, great abilities, and dazzling accomplishments.— Anne Boleyn had attained by this union, the full accomplishment of her ambitious wishes; and like all simply ambitious persons, in the pursuit of their object, she was not over scrupulous in the manner by which it was obtained. It is recorded, that she lived in the court of Queen Catharine, and openly received in her very presence, the attentions of the King, during the process of the divorce. From her earliest infancy she was instructed to please and dazzle, and to make the best advantage of those exterior graces, with which she was adorned by nature. Wealth, alliance, and distinction, were the grand and exclusive objects pointed out to her aspiring mind, as worthy of her pursuit. The lessons inculcated, she learnt to perfection—and they had their reward. family were enriched—they received titles and honors, and she became Queen of England. it was a short lived splender—a brief carreer of

glory; she was soon called to experience greater calamity, than the unfortunate Queen whom she had supplanted!

SECTION III. CHAP. II.

We are now entering upon a most important Political Properiod of our history, full of great and striking testantism ad-This year began with an act of Parlia- A. D. 1533. ment, which shewed the steady progress of the Reformation. All appeals to Rome were strictly prohibited by statute; and it was enacted that all who attempted to execute censures from Rome, should incur a premunire. And what is chiefly worthy of remark is, that the act itself observes, that the statute proceeded on the ground, that all former Kings had asserted the independence, and defended the liberty of the Kingdom against the usurpations of Rome, and that the state of England was a complete body, and competent within itself of dispatching all suits, whether ecclesiastical or civil.*

In this manner, POLITICAL PROTESTANTISM was advancing to occupy its legitimate and lasting position in the constitution, when the see of Canterbury became vacant, by the death of Archbishop Wareham. He was a man of great attainments as a canonist, a clever statesman and a patron of men of letters, but he was credulous, superstitious and persecuting. The person who succeeded him in his high and responsible office, was Thomas Cranmer, a person who has been already introduced to the reader, -a man eminent-

* Echard.

SECTION ly fitted by his learning and temper, and religion, for the work to which he was appointed. It was to be his distinguished lot as the instrument of God, to lay the still more imperishable foundations of RELIGIOUS PROTESTANTISM, in our favored Little did Fox and Gardiner, those wary land. politicians imagine, that such an elevation awaited the retired and humble fellow of Jesus College, when they had condescended to mention his name before the King.—Least of all, did Cranmer himself entertain such ambitious thoughts. first interview with the King had made such a favorable impression upon the Royal mind, that without hesitation, a messenger was dispatched to Germany, where Cranmer then was, to announce to him his appointment to the Archiepiscopate. He was astonished and confounded at the intelligence; and with characteristic humility and modesty, shrunk from the responsibility of such an office; and declined to accept it. He used every endeavour to be excused; but by the command of his Sovereign, he gave way and was, at length, consecrated to his high functions.

Archbishop Cranmer gives sentence, father to the Princess Elizabeth.

The first judicial act of the Archbishop, under the recent act of Parliament, was to give sentence and stands God- in the case of the King's divorce, which was declared null and void from the beginning. took place in May, and on the thirteenth of September, the Princess Elizabeth was born, destined, after many vicissitudes, to be the future

Queen of England; and Cranmer had the peculiar SECTION honor of standing her Godfather.

These were the events transpiring in England; CHAP. II. and, which created, as might be expected, great The Pope med-The itates a reconciliation. sensation in the different courts of Europe. Emperor was filled with resentment—the King of France received the Ambassadors of Henry, with greater coldness than he had a right to expect ;whilst the Pope and his Conclave were both indignant and alarmed. The Imperial Cardinals were extremely violent, and urged the Pope to inflict immediate censure and excommunication upon the contumacious King. But the Pope was too subtle a politician, to enter rashly upon such violent measures; and, shortly after, in an interview which he had with the King of France, he entered into a secret treaty with that Monarch, to give Henry every satisfaction if he would return to his obedience to the Church, and place matters in the same condition in which they were, prior to the sentence of Archbishop Cranmer. This proposition of the Pope was made in earnest. There was nothing he desired so much as a reconciliation with England. Henry also, received the overture with evident satisfaction; and, the Bishop of Paris, although it was winter, undertook a journey to Rome with a message from the King, that he would consent to the conditions. The matter appeared now to be finally settled; and the Consistory appointed a day, within which time, Henry was to certify his intentions

SECTION in writing. The King lost no time; and dispatched a messenger with the required document, signed by himself. Reconciliation between England and the Papacy, now appeared inevitable, and the steps of the Reformation seemed as if they must be retraced. But the Providence of God, frustrated the designs of all parties.

His intention strangely frustrated.

The King's messenger who had to encounter seas, and mountains, and tempestuous weather, was delayed considerably beyond the appointed day.— The Imperialists seized the opportunity of inflaming the mind of the Pope against King Henry, whom they accused of dishonest intentions; and of seeking delays and concessions for the purpose of deluding him; and urged him to take immediate steps for pronouncing sentence against a person, who set at nought their authority, and treated his kindness, with contempt. They succeeded: and the Pope, forgetting to consult his ordinary prudence, brought the whole subject of the divorce before the Consistory. The cause was hurried through the court with such precipitancy, that a final sentence was passed; and, in one session, the work of three was accomplished. It was declared that the King's marriage with his brother's widow was good, and he was required, on pain of censure, to live with her, as his wife. Two days after this sentence, the messenger arrived. But it was now too late! The die was cast. The Pope and some of the wiser Cardinals wished, if possible, to retrace their steps; and another Consistory was SECTION called: but they were now infatuated.—Their pride overcame their discretion; and it was resolved, that their former sentence should be confirmed; and the execution of it, by the temporal sword, was confided to the hands of the Emperor.

III. CHAP. II.

Upon what a slender thread, appear, sometimes, to hang the destinies of States and Kingdoms!-Had the messenger of Henry VIII, arrived at Rome at the time appointed,—in all human probability, reconciliation would have ensued. Almighty Ruler had benevolent purposes in view, for this Country; and those great and beneficial changes which were in progress, might have been prevented by such an occurrence. But by the simplest means, over which, neither the King nor his messenger could exercise any control, the artifices of the Pope and the desires of the King were frustrated; and when, on the arrival of the messenger, the mistake appeared, and the matter once more placed within their own power, their pride was made the means of their own overthrow, and the advancement of the Divine purposes!

The breach as might be expected, was final; and the REFORMATION rapidly advanced. have seen how steadily and firmly, the Parliament proceeded, step by step, to break down the towering fabric of Papal authority, which had been erected in this Kingdom. Other important acts quickly followed: forbidding all appeals to the

Reformation We proceeds. A. D. 1534.

SECTION court of Rome, on the alleged ground, that no power could dispense with the law of the land, except the King and Parliament-confirming the King's divorce—settling the succession to the heirs of Queen Ann—and transferring to the King, the power of appointing Bishops. The Clergy also in Convocation, were most explicit on all these important topics. They acknowledged that the Convocation was of right to be summoned by the King, and that no Canons should be enacted or executed, without his assent, and formally condemned all appeals to the Court of Rome.

> These proceedings became deeply interesting to the whole nation. The authority of the Pope was made the common subject of conversation in public, of argument in books, and, of long debates in Parliament; while great preparations were making to strike the final blow. But there were some dissentients of high rank, whose character and conduct we must notice, in order to shew the true grounds upon which they suffered.—For as yet, scarcely a single step was taken for the establishment of RELIGIOUS PROTESTANTISM.

Sir Thomas er, Bishop of Rochester. A. D 1535.

Sir Thomas More, the late Chancellor, who More and Fish- had retired into private life, and Fisher, Bishop of Rochester; both men of learning, and of unblemished character, obstinately refused to concur with the nation's will in these legislative enactments; and even went so far as to encourage, by their sanction, the plot of the maid of Kent, which

was set on foot by some of the intriguing dissatis- SECTION fied Monks. These eminent individuals were committed to the Tower, for refusing to take the oath of succession, because it implied, that the King's former marriage was unlawful, to which they would not assent, inasmuch as it was an attack upon the Pope's authority: and shortly after, the Parliament passed the Act which placed the topstone on the pinnacle of Political Protestantism, by transferring the usurped authority of the Pope to the Sovereign; and adding to his other titles-"Supreme Head on earth, of the Church of Eng-This, if any thing, was a still greater stumbling-block in the way of More and Fisher. They adhered to the lawfulness of the King's former marriage, and to the supremacy of the Pope, and died on the scaffold as traitors to the laws of their country. They were certainly, in every respect, the Martyrs of the Pope-for his authority, they contended, and died. It is lamentable, that such Englishmen should ever have died in such a cause, and against the independence of their country. Their courage and firmness in suffering, were worthy of a better service. And if their sentence should now be deemed severe, it will be sufficient to observe, that it is almost impossible for us to judge, with accuracy, on that question.

The Parliament of that day, had to contend Jurisdictional with great difficulties in breaking down the bar- authority of the riers of a powerful usurpation, which had been the King.

III. CHAP. II.

III. Снар. П.

SECTION long exercised over the Church and Kingdom of England. Their measures were not hasty and violent; but sure and effectual; and, such were the evils they discovered to exist in that system, which had become interwoven with all parts of our polity —that they determined to crush for ever, that monstrous power which had, for so long a time, preyed upon the vitals of the country: and finding it necessary to establish some order in ecclesiastical affairs, they transferred the authority of the Pope to the Monarch. A most happy change! and as much as it could be expected they should accomplish at that period. Indeed, with all our enlightened views on civil and ecclesiastical polity, I know not that we can arrive at any other conclu-What was intended, and only intended, was "supreme head" in temporal affairs. In any other sense it has never been assumed: and in this point of view the title is certainly correct.*

Thomas Cromwell succeeds Wolsey.

Great events and changes were now at hand. Light broke in upon the darkness and superstition of ages, and laid the foundation of the transcendant principle of Religious Protestantism; and, it is now time to introduce to the notice of the reader, an individual, who had the principal share in these, and future transactions of vast importance; this was Thomas Cromwell, whose name deserves a

^{* &}quot;Elements of the British Constitution," by the Author. Vide "Ecclesiastical Power" Brown, Leicester, Whittaker and Co. London.

very high place in the annals of his country. He was of humble birth, the son of a blacksmith; but a person of enlarged mind, and shining talents; and at the time of Wolsey's death he had advanced himself to the rank of secretary to that practiced The Cardinal's degradation, brought Statesman. him into public notice—not by a base desertion of his patron—but from a noble ingenuousness of mind, which led him to use all his powers of eloquence, in defence of the fallen Premier, against the accusations of his enemies. Besides, his great qualifications, and knowledge of public affairs, pointed him out to the King, as a most suitable successor to his late minister; and in promoting those well directed Acts of the legislature which we have recapitulated, he no doubt, was the chief instrument. He was accordingly raised to the highest honors in the State, created a Baron and Lord Privy Seal; and appointed visitor, by delegation from the King, of all the monasteries in England. He was also constituted the King's Vice-gerent in Ecclesiastical matters, and took precedence of all subjects, next to the members of the Royal Family. Vigour despatch and integrity marked his proceedings.

He was not long in making use of the power Inquiry into vested in him, and issued commissions to enquire Religious houses. into the state of the religious houses. There were at this time more than six hundred monasteries in England, possessing immense wealth and influ-

SECTION III. Снар. II.

SECTION ence in the country. Their enormous power and pride, with their accompanying vices, were at their height; and the Divine Judgments, even now impended over their heads. The most monstrous impieties and disorders were discovered. Their iniquities reached to Heaven, and cried for ven-They were the strong-holds of crime and imposture.—Dens of profligacy. Some were the abodes of luxurious ease and debauchery. Others were the seats of factious contentions and angry resentments. Some were the habitations of cruelty, whilst in others, were found instruments for the coining of money. These were the off-shoots of Popery and its legitimate productions! For it ought to be observed, that these institutions were really the Pope's own children; and not under the jurisdiction of the Bishops—a circumstance which, in some measure, accounts for this strict and searching investigation under the sole authority of the King.

Wales annex-A. D. 1536.

The report of the Commissioners was laid beed to England fore Parliament, which was followed by an act for the suppression of all the lesser monasteries, amounting in number, to three hundred and seventy-two. It may be observed, that in the same session, an act was passed for the incorporation of the Principality of Wales with the Kingdom of England.

Translation of the BIBLE first proposed

But we are now approaching an event of superlative importance, which was to lay the chief corby convocation, ner stone in the foundation of Religious ProTESTANTISM—the translation of the BIBLE; and SECTION I rejoice to find, that it sprung from the same source as that, which gave rise to the first act of, political Protestantism—the Convocation THE CLERGY.

Nor must Anne Boleyn lose her share in the Queen Anne, glory of this work, She forwarded the advance-favors Protest-antism. ment of the project at Court, with all her power, and prevailed upon the King to give his consent. Insuperable would have been the prejudices of the King to such an innovation, had it not been for the judicious management and eloquence of this accomplished Queen. And we may remark, that had she been elevated to her high dignity for the accomplishment of this one object, such a result would have been sufficient. Soon after her marriage with the King, she became strongly attached to the doctrines of the Reformation; which, indeed, she openly avowed by appointing Latimer and Shaxton as her Chaplains, and procuring their appointment to the Bishopricks of Worcester and Salisbury. Through her influence, Latimer was rescued from very imminent danger, into which he had been brought by his bold and uncompromising language. The Queen even committed her household to his management, and listened with great attention and delight to his discourses. Indeed, her conduct was most exemplary. She was constantly employed in doing good; and expended great sums in acts of charity and beneSECTION III. CHAP. II. volence. But her career had been ambitious. Her path like the brief splendour of a shooting star, was short, and she fell, an early victim to the malignant spirit of revenge and faction.

It would not be necessary to say more upon this subject were it not the design of this work to search into the moral causes of things; and to shew the results of the actions of intelligent agents, under the superintendance of an All-wise and Almighty Being. It is in such transactions as these, which stand out so prominently in history, that we are to find materials for our inquiry, and which must be lighted up as beacons to warn, or as stars, to direct our course.

The Queen's disgrace and fall.

These great and important changes in the civil and ecclesiastical management of affairs, did not take place without great opposition from the Popish party in the nation: add to which, that these discontents were fomented by the unceasing efforts of the agents employed by the Pope and the Emperor. Every artifice was made use of, to instigate the minds of the people against the Queen, the Archbishop, and the Secretary Cromwell. The Queen was the first victim. ruin was effected through the machinations of the most artful and infamous of women, assisted by the power of the Duke of Norfolk. This degraded woman, was Lady Guilford and wife to the brother of the Queen. Her mind was inflamed with jealousy and hatred against her husband,

and, to gratify her malignity and resentment, she SECTION filled the King's mind with representations of the Queen's indiscretions and infidelity, and even implicated her own husband, the Queen's brother, in the guilt! The King was completely entangled in the toils of this artful female. The Queen The inhuman Duke of Norfolk was arrested. presided at her trial. The result had been determined and is well known. She was beheaded on Tower Hill, after she had shared the throne of England nearly five years.

Of her innocence there cannot exist the sha-Her innocence. Posterity, in this respect, have dow of a doubt. awarded a just sentence.

But is there no clue by which we may be enabled to trace the progress of this fatal dispensation? of her ruin. There is no doubt, as we have shown, that Queen Anne was instructed in, and was too much actuated with, the spirit of ambition, and that she sought her elevation, by an abandonment of that decorum and propriety by which true moral integrity is always directed. She not only permitted the marked attentions of the King, whilst maid of honor to the Queen; but consented to marry him before his divorce had been legally pronounced; and consequently, whilst he had yet a wife. To some, this may appear drawing the bonds of morality too strictly; but it is Christian morality; and which none ever yet transgressed with impunity. Some persons consider such frailty pardon-

CHAP. II.

III.

SECTION
III.
CHAP. II.

able in a woman.—But the same inflexible law of morality holds its authority over women as well as men: and the frailties of Anne Boleyn, met with a severe and fearful retribution. Under the preaching of Latimer, both her moral and religious views were enlightened and improved; and she died politically and religiously, a Protestant. Her last words were: "To Christ I commend my soul."—And she has the singular honor of being the first English Protestant, whose death is recorded in history!

The King marries.

The marriage of the King with Jane Seymour, two days after the execution of his Queen, does by no means, shew that this new passion was the cause of her death. I do not suppose that it hastened it a single hour, except that it served to estrange the King's mind, and overthrow this barrier to her protection. But wicked and licentious men often burst through the hallowed bonds of marriage, to indulge a wayward and capricious fancy, without contemplating a divorce. No—her doom arose from other causes, the King was fully influenced with a persuasion of her guilt, and infuriated with anger and jealousy; and his early marriage with Jane Seymour, was to testify his abhorrence of her conduct and memory. His violent and unbridled passions were his tormentors.

Princess Mary makes a solemn avowal.

These transactions were followed by a change of counsel. The Emperor again appears on the scene of English history; and seizes the opportunity, for bringing about a reconciliation between SECTION the King and the Princess Mary, who was now about twenty years of age: this was accomplished, CHAP. II. on the condition that she would make a full submission in writing, which she did to the following effect—' She acknowledged the King to be Head of the Church of England, under Christ—utterly renounced the authority of the Bishop of Rome-promised to be obedient to the laws then made:—all which she declared to flow from her inward belief and judgement, in which she would ever continue.*

III.

The greatest vigour prevailed in the councils of the nation, and the Convocation proceeded to ex-sets. amine many points of religion, and to inquire into various corruptions and abuses; and in the midst of their deliberations, Cromwell conveyed to them a Royal message-"That they should re-form the rites and ceremonies of the Church, according to the rule of Scripture, which ought to be preferred to all glosses and decrees of Popes." This message was followed by long and strenuous debates in that learned body, the result of which was, that they established the Authority of Scripture—the three creeds—the first four general Councils, and three of the seven Sacraments-Baptism, Eucharist and Penance. These were great and decided inroads upon the darkness and superstition of Popery, and were generally approved by the higher and middle classes of society. But great discon-

Convocation

SECTION tent prevailed amongst the lower orders, which was instigated by the Monks and Friars, and at length broke out into serious rebellion.

Rebellion of the lower orders.

A. D. 1537.

It is unnecessary to enter into a detail of these rebellions. They were so formidable that if the Emperor had been at liberty to land his forces in England, for the purpose of executing the Pope's commission, it is impossible to say what might have been the consequences. But as it was, it rather furthered the Reformation: for the complete triumph of the King, destroyed all hope of resistance and enabled his Commissioners to proceed to the destruction of the remaining Monasteries. The infatuated people however, still vented their murmurs and complaints against such wholesale extirpation of establishments, which they had regarded with veneration. The Council at length had recourse to a method, which tended, in some measure, to weaken the prepossessions of the people. They brought to light several of the impostors which had been practiced by the Monks, amongst these, was the "Rood of Grace" at Boxley in Kent. This image had been the resort of multiudes. It was observed to bow its head to roll its eyes—and by its countenance, to shew satisfaction or displeasure, to the astonishment of the credulous people. This abominable imposture was exhibited at Saint Paul's cross, where all the secret springs which governed its motions, were openly shewn and explained. But it would require

a volume to tell of all the cheats and impositions, which were brought to light, but with which my design has nothing to do, except to shew the depth, of ignorance and superstition into which the nation was sunk, prior to the Reformation.

SECTION III. CHAP. II.

But these proceedings ereated at Rome, the most lively indignation against the King and his Pope and publication of the ministers: and Paul III, who had succeeded Cle-Bible. ment, issued a fearful Bull against them: enumerating all their erimes, and commanding the King and his accomplices to appear at Rome, within sixty days: declaring, on refusal, that the King had fallen from his erown, and they from their estates; and requiring all Christians to make war upon them, and to seize their goods, and even all the subjects of the King, and make slaves of them!

Wrath of the Pope and pub-

A. D. 1538.

But the Clergy were now too far advanced with the changes of the times, to attempt to give effect to the Pope's injunctions. They declared against his authority to wield the temporal sword; and to erown the triumph of the Reformation at this period, the BIBLE was completed; and the unwearied Cromwell issued injunctions to the Clergy, to provide Bibles in all the Churches, and to eneourage the people to read them. Cranmer was so delighted at this event, that he wrote a letter of eongratulation to the Secretary, in which he says: "I rejoice to see the day of the Reformation now risen in England, since the word of God doth shine over it, without a cloud."

III. Снар. 11. Flames of Martyrdom rekindled.

SECTION

But this bright day was soon to be overcast, to the great grief of the Archbishop and his friends. Through the influence of Bishop Gardiner, to whom the King was personally indebted—he was persuaded to believe, that a little severity exercised against Heretics, would have a tendency to establish his cause over all Europe; and advised him to begin with those who denied the "Real Presence" in the Sacrament, especially, as that point had also been declared upon, by the reforming Princes of Germany. The King listened to the insidious counsel, and the horrid lot fell on an individual of the name of Lambert, a Divine of considerable eminence, who was tried in the presence of the King, and condemned to be burnt. And as Queen Anne Boleyn was the first Protestant after the Reformation who met a public death so, Lambert has the honor of being the first Protestant martyr. He was miserably tormented in the fire—but his patience and resignation never forsook him for a moment. Nothing could tend more forcibly to shew the bent and purpose of his mind, than his conduct in the midst of his tortures: and with his expiring breath, his brief but emphatic cry was: "None but Christ! none but Christ!"

Parliament Protestant.

His martyrdom was followed by the enactment only politically by Parliament, of the six bloody Statutes,* as they have been justly denominated; which show how deeply the King and the Country, generally, were

^{*} Echard.

embued with the doctrines of Popery; and how SECTION much was yet to be done, before the nation could be expurgated from the deadly errors with which, it had been so fatally infected. After all, it does not appear that it was ever sincerely intended to carry this act of the six Articles into execution. It seems to have been more a state expedient, resorted to for the purpose of deceiving the world; for, although more than five hundred persons were presented under the provisions of this bill, they were all discharged; and during the authority of Cromwell the act was never enforced.

Cromwell's

But this great man, through too great obsequiousness to his master, fell into grievous error, in errors. counselling Parliament to pass one Act for giving to the King's proclamations, the force of law; and another, for enabling the court, to pass sentence of attainder, in the absence of the attainted persons, -a law opposed to every principle of nature and justice; but this breach on humanity and the acknowledged rights of Englishmen, whilst it throws a dark shade upon his political integrity, was dearly exacted of him, as we shall see, by the just Arbiter of human actions.

The monastic institutions of England had now ceased to exist. Under the vigorous administra-suppressed. tion of the King's vice-gerent, six hundred and forty-five monasteries were utterly extirpated. And whilst one cannot but deeply lament, that such magnificent fabrics, upreared with immense

Monasteries A. D. 1539.

SECTION labour and expense, should be totally annihilated, and wishing as we do, that the advice of Bishop Latimer had been followed, and one or more of these institutions had been left in each County, for Collegiate establishments—yet as a necessary measure, to secure the full tide of prosperity which was to flow in upon the country, we cannot but rejoice in their destruction.—It was a necessary link in the series of events, which, under the Divine Conduct, was to introduce the full unfettered Monastic in- liberty of the "everlasting gospel." It is not

Christianity.

consistent with indeed, easy to conceive, how the true profession of Christianity could have existed, whilst these strong-holds of licentiousness, indolence, and superstition remained, and under the sanction of its vencrable name, exhibiting every feature which was inconsistent with its character. What has Christianity to do with such mock exhibitions of pietyconcealing the desperate wickedness of the human heart, under the garb of its holy profession?-Dreadful enormity! Sufficient to cover the heavens with perpetual storms, and to turn the sun into sackcloth of hair! But had these institutions been as pure as their founders intended they should be—had the secluded fathers of the cloister, been as holy, as humble, as temperate, as prayerful as their vows professed them to be-what connexion would these abodes have had, with Christianity? None whatever. They would even then, have been entirely inconsistent with the spirit and character of true Religion. Can the wearing of sack- SECTION cloth and wallowing in ashes-can the spending of days and nights in prayer and abstinence, be an acceptable sacrifice in the sight of the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of Mercy? Mistaken folly, which could only tend to destroy every vestige of that holy religion which the Son of God came to establish. Christianity, indeed, demands all the moderation, all the humility, all the devotion of the heart, which monastic institutions were intended to cultivate—but Christianity demands all these sacrifices to be offered in the midst of our active duties; and in the diligent exercise of all our mental and bodily faculties; and it may be laid down as an incontrovertible maxim —that no duty can be pleasing to the Author of Christianity, which is abstracted from, or inconsistent with the personal and relative duties, connected with our station in society; and that, whoever places himself without the pale of the duties which he owes to his fellow-men, is guilty of treason against the Author of his being. I can not, therefore, see how Christianity could have flourished in connexion with these institutions, even at their best estate; but as they had been degraded, it was utterly impossible. There was also a great political reason.—They were a dead weight upon the community. Their revenues were immense,—one million five hundred thousand pounds a year-a sum which would now equal six times

In short, I consider their extirpa-SECTION that amount. tion, in order to make way for the plans of the Divine Benevolence to have been as necessary for our country, as the destruction of Druidism.—I scarcely know which stood most in the way of the advance of Christianity. Both were remarkably destroyed, not gradually and slowly, but by a sudden and irresistible blow. They were not suffered to fall by decay.—They were blotted out, not by the workings of a long conducted design, but by the force of circumstances, and by instruments suddenly raised up, and eminently fitted for the work.

Results not contemplated by the agents employed.

What did the King of England intend of all this, when he commenced the suit of his divorce, which was really the source of all the changes of that period? What did the Emperor intend, when he opposed the Kings suit and prevented the Pope from granting his request, which laid the foundation for these innovtions on the Papal authority? What did the Pope and his Cardinals intend of all this, when he condemned the proceedings of the King of England? What of all this did the Messenger intend, who conveyed the King's submission and desire of reconciliation, when his arrival at the City of Rome had been delayed? did Wolsey intend of all this, when he selected Cromwell as his Secretary, instructed and honored him? Yet all these circumstances were necessary links in the chain of events which, necessarily, led

Снар. II.

to the accomplishment of the changes which we SECTION have briefly recorded. The agents employed in conducting these transactions, were utterly blind, as to their real bearing and ultimate direction.— Was the divorce of Henry permitted merely to satisfy his scruples or to gratify his licentious passions? Was the opposition of the Emperor merely to exercise his own ambitious designs ?-Or, was the impetuosity of the Pope in passing a hasty sentence intended, merely to shew the pride and arrogance of that impious power? impossible to indulge the supposition for a moment; because we see they were steps of a series which were overruled by an Almighty Power, and led to the accomplishment of events, at the bare contemplation of which, the actors themselves would have turned pale with grief and shame.

The principal business of the reign had now, in a great measure, been accomplished: the ACTION rapidly advances, and the scene hastens to its close.

The King had been deeply afflicted by the death of his Queen, Jane Seymour, who expired negociates a after giving birth to a Prince, afterwards, Edward the King. VI,—the Josiah of England. His wise and sagacious minister, Cromwell, saw the vast importance of gaining a Queen who should strengthen his councils, and afford her influence to promote the Reformation. Circumstances favoured the projects of the Minister, and he was allowed to

A. D. 1540.

III. Снар. II.

SECTION make enquiries among the Princes of Germanythe pillars of the Reformation. Anne of Cleves, sister of the Duke of that name, and related by marriage, with the Duke of Saxony, was selected by him as the most suitable match. The beauty of her portrait by Holbein, was satisfactory: nor was it exaggerated. But she was unaccomplished: her manners were so ungainly, and her carriage so inelegant, that the King took an insuperable dislike to her: and although he suffered the solemnization of the marriage to take place, out of respect to her illustrious relatives, yet he determined not to proceed beyond the formal celebration of the nuptials. He never took her to wife, nor rested till the marriage was annulled by his Parliament.

The fall of Cromwell.

It has generally been stated, that the King's personal displeasure with Cromwell, on account of the trouble and vexation which accrued to him from this match, was the cause of the downfall and ruin of that eminent minister. But this was not the case, although it formed a plea for the designs of his enemies. The King was on the most friendly terms with him, and shortly after, exalted him to higher honors; for he was created Earl of Essex, which however was the summit of his greatness. His career was run. and powerful reason gave his enemies an advantage. The popular cry was against him for what had been transacted under his administrationall who opposed the Reformation hated him, the

principal of whom were the persecuting Gardiner, SECTION Bishop of Winchester, and the treacherous Duke of Norfolk. This latter person, at this fatal moment, possessed a powerful influence from the circumstance, that the King determining to choose his own wife, had fixed his affections on the accomplished Catharine Howard, niece to the Duke At his instigation and by his hand, of Norfolk. Cromwell was arrested for high treason, and committed to the Tower. From those dungeons he never came forth: for he was attainted without being heard,—the very ground on which he had counselled the condemnation of others; which, as it was a most unjust and unconstitutional procedure; so he was made to experience all its bitterness in his own case. He was executed on Tower Hill, just three months after he was created Earl of Essex. But a heavier retribution was preparing for his implacable and unrelenting persecutors.

After the death of Cromwell, which happened so unexpectedly, the Reformation received a sudden tion suffers. check; and the Romish party, at the head of which was the Duke of Norfolk, obtained a signal triumph. From this moment, the King's councils became unsteady, and for the seven remaining years of his reign, he found no Minister upon whose faithfulness or ability he could rely. deeply lamented, when it was too late, the loss of that celebrated statesman, Cromwell. the judgments of God, were now about to be

SECTION visited upon his own head for the evils which he had committed. Others had served as instruments; he was the great actor. But, great as he was, and, he was great indeed, there was one on high, that was mightier; and who in this world, brought him to a severe account.

Divine inflictions on the King, and the murderers of Queen Anne Boleyn.

A. D. 1542.

The first blow he received, fell where he was most deeply sensible. He was so charmed with the conversation, beauty, and accomplishments of his Queen, that in the ardour and generosity of his feelings, he ordered public thanksgiving to be offered in Saint Paul's church, for the perfect happiness which it had pleased God to bestow upon But alas! what is man in his best estate? The heaven which appeared to him in all its brightness and without a cloud, was quickly shrouded in blackest storms and night. His Queen whom he had regarded as an angel of light, was exhibited to his astonished eyes, defiled with the darkest stains of sin and guilt; and, as her accomplice in crime, the Lady Rochford, the chief murderer of the unfortunate and innocent Anne Boleyn!

Who can tell the agonies of the King's mind? He alternated for some time, between grief and rage—between affection for his Queen, and vengeance against her accusers. But he was, length, compelled to believe his own dishonor, by the most overwhelming evidence; and he was justly punished where he had so signally offended. He had before punished the innocent; it is now

retributed upon him, to the full; and he was SECTION called upon, under trying circumstances, to punish the guilty, in whose condemnation the innocence of the former was vindicated. Not only the Queen and the Lady Rochford were executed; but the whole House of Norfolk were implicated in the The Duke of Norfolk himself, for the present escaped; and was employed by the King in offices of trust and command.—But his punishment only slumbered, it was not reversed.

III. CHAP. II.

. In the mean time the sanguinary Gardiner, seizes the opportunity, whilst no firm hand was at the of Gardiner. helm, to light up the fires of Martyrdom. six statutes were put in force, and Barnes, Gerrard and Jerome, were condemned and burnt.-Cranmer himself was fearfully assailed by the Romish party. Their utmost strength was put forth to extinguish that burning and shining light.-The plot was deeply laid by Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, and a long paper containing an account of his heretical principles and practices was delivered to the King. But their malice failed of its object. The unwavering esteem and attachment of the King for this most exemplary Prelate, assisted and aided by the influence of Catharine Parr, whom the King had married, overcame the solicitations of his enemies.

A. D. 1543.

At length towards the evening of this busy and Reconciliamemorable reign, a reconciliation was effected tion of the between Henry and the Emperor Charles V. and peror.

SECTION a league was entered into, in which it was agreed

that the Princess Mary should succeed next to III. CHAP. II. turn of events.

Prince Edward, and in connexion with this, a Extraordinary circumstance took place of a most extraordinary nature, because it confounds all human foresight, and shews how ardently men engage in the accomplishment of an object which is to end in their own destruction. The Earl of Arran was, at that time, Regent of Scotland, during the minority of the unfortunate Mary Queen of Scots. sent an embassy to the Regent, to project a marriage between the young Queen and Prince Edward: and to offer the Princess Elizabeth to Arran's eldest Son. The King's offers were so agreeable to the Earl of Arran and the Scotch nobility, that they were immediately agreed to, and confirmed by Parliament. But all the Clergy, headed by Cardinal Beaton, assisted by the Queen mother, and aided by every kind of influence from France, frustrated the design. How steadily do the purposes of God march to their destination over the counsels of men! What Englishman, without intuitive horror, can contemplate Queen Elizabeth as the unknown wife of an Highland What Papist does not deplore the course adopted by his party, which prevented the banishment of the Great Protestant Queen-who expelled Popery from her isle? But I forbear to enlarge, the sacred oracle comes to my aid, "the counsel of the Lord standeth for ever-the thoughts of his heart to all generations."-Ps. xxxiii. 11.

Events, important events now crowd upon one SECTION another as the reign hastens to its close. The King was obliged by his league with the Emperor, to engage in a war with France. He discovered Policy of the to the last, the energy and love of display which Emperor. were inherent in his character. The sails which wafted him, for the last time, to the coast of France, were of cloth of gold; and he marched in sovereign pomp at the head of his army, to lay seige to Boulogne, which after six weeks was obliged to surrender. Nothing was gained by this enterprize. But a deeper policy was playing elsewhere. The Council of Trent was then sitting, and every effort was made by the Pope and Emperor to assemble sufficient force to procure obedience to its Canons and Decrees. It was the policy therefore of the Emperor, to beguile the King of England, and to protract this war, in order to divide the power of these Monarchs, and to prevent them from rendering assistance to the Princes of Germany.

The extraordinary part acted by the Emperor on this occasion, and, indeed, throughout this Instrument whole reign, over the destinies of which, he exer-in the Hand of God. cised a powerful influence, marks him out as an extraordinary man, and an eminent instrument in furthering the plans of Divine wisdom. Of course it is not within the design of this work, to follow his career, when unconnected with our own Country. On the present occasion how clever, how

SECTION
III.
CHAP. II.

remarkable his policy! His design was to hold sufficient power in Europe, at that critical moment, to enforce the decisions of the Council of Trent. For this purpose he had collected an immense army; whilst by his treaty with Henry, and the consequent French war, he brought the two Kings of England and France, under his mediation and control!

Cranmer's designs frustrated by Gar diner.

Cranmer in the mean time, had made considerable advances with the King; and was on the point of accomplishing some substantial plans of Reformation. But the ever watchful Gardiner, who was Ambassador at the Court of the Emperor, hearing of these intended innovations, wrote to the King in strong terms, assuring him, that the Emperor was so affected by these changes, that if he persevered, he would unite with the King of France against him. The Archbishop was obliged to desist; and to add to his grief, the illustrious Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, his friend and ally on all occasions; and who, like himself had never suffered the loss of the King's favor, was at this juncture removed by death. By this bereavement he was left without a friend, and almost the only individual of eminence, who had courage and ability to carry out the principles of Religious But he had little opportunity. Protestantism. The King's days were numbered; and his own too, had his enemies obtained their wishes.

The flames of Martyrdom again ascended, to defile the pure canopy of Heaven, and to demand vengeance from the insulted Power above, Ann Aiscough, a gentlewoman, was barbarously racked, and afterwards burnt in Smithfield, with two party engage in persecution. others, for denying the corporeal presence in the Others were also immolated: and Sacrament. the fury of the Romish party raged. They made another assault upon the Archbishop, the circumstances of which are so remarkable, that they must not be omitted in this work.

The nobles of the Romish faith, assembled and accused Cranmer, before the King, as being the extraordinary grand source of all the heresy in the kingdom; a. D. but alleged, that no person dared to give evidence because he stood so high in the King's favor. But they affirmed, that if the King, would once allow the Council to commit him to the Tower, he would then see, how many would appear to inform against him. The King consented; and it was resolved that it should be put into execution the following day. But the King, like Darius, on a similar occasion, set his heart to deliver Cranmer. He sent for him to the palace, and disclosed to him the whole design. The Archbishop thanked the King for not allowing him to be surprised; and submitted himself to the King's pleasure, only making one request, that he might be allowed to answer for himself before judges, who were capable of forming a correct judgment on

SECTION III. CHAP. II. The Romish

The King astonished at his com-SECTION such matters. posure, and utter disregard of the fatal consequences generously said, that he saw he must take care of him, since he took so little care of himself. King then instructed him when he appeared before the Council, to demand to see his accusers, before he was committed to the Tower; and to desire the members to be treated by them, as they would desire to be, under similar circumstances.—" And if," said the King, "they will not listen to the force of reason, shew them this ring, and appeal to me in person." The King then took off his seal-ring, and delivering it to the Archbishop, dismissed him. Next morning according to expectation, he received a summons to attend the Council at Whitehall. Even in the lobby of the council chamber, the venerable Prelate received such treatment, as fully shewed him what he was likely to expect in the presence of the Council. When admitted, all the King had told him, was verified. The force of reason had no effect upon his judges; till at length the Archbishop shewing the ring, appealed to the King-immediately, the members of the Council rose up in great confusion and hastened to the King, who severely rebuked them; and expressed his esteem and kindness for the Archbishop, in such terms as fully convinced them, that all attempts against his personal safety were utterly hopeless.

The King's mind was daily perplexed and harrassed with the dissensions and animosities which every where prevailed; and to add to his calamities, he was afflicted with a grievous ulcer in his leg, from the pains of which he suffered exceed-narrowly escapes. ingly. His temper was greatly affected, and he became peevish and fretful; and a circumstance happened, which gave the unrelenting Gardiner, in concert with the Lord Chancellor Wriothesley, an opportunity of attempting to sacrifice the life of the Queen, to the interests of the Romish party. She was strongly attached to the doctrines of the Reformation, and encouraged its professors with all her influence. One day conversing with the King, his displeasure was aroused by the freedom of her remarks; Gardiner seized the opportunity of inflaming his mind against the Queen. hesley joined him; and they possessed the King's mind with the idea that heresies would be interminable, unless the Queen received a severe check which might prove a warning to others. King was prevailed upon by their representations and artifices, and actually signed the articles upon which she was to be impeached. But she was also to be delivered out of their atrocious hands.— The Lord Chancellor on his departure, accidentally dropped the paper, which was found by one of the Queen's attendants and conveyed to her. saw the danger and immediately hastened to the King's apartment, and after a little discussion with

SECTION III. CHAP. II. The Queen

SECTION him, pleasantly said—'that her object in holding these little disputes with him, was for instruction. and to divert his mind from his many cares and Next day whilst the Royal pair were solicitudes. walking in the garden, Wriothesley came with the intention of conveying her to the Tower: but the King calling him aside, rebuked him sharply; and when the Queen interposed to mitigate his resentment, he told her, that of all persons in the world, she had the least occasion to plead in his behalf. Gardiner he never afterwards restored to favor: and erased his name from his Will, where it had been placed as one of his Executors.

Visitations Norfolk.

A. D 1547.

But the Duke of Norfolk, and his son the Earl on the house of of Surrey, a young nobleman of aspiring temper, and great abilities, the acknowledged head of the Romish party, did not so easily escape. The father it will be remembered was particularly implicated in the execution of Queen Ann Boleyn; and both, in that of the Secretary Cromwell. They had assumed some part of the royal arms, and it was intimated they were meditating ambitious designs in case of the King's death. their ruin was thought to have been effected, chiefly through the influence of the Seymours to whom they were obnoxious. The Earl of Surrey was tried at Common Law, condemned and executed. The process of the father's trial occupied more time—he was only saved at length by the King's death, which happened the night before

his intended execution! But he was severely pun- SECTION ished in the death of his beloved and accomplished son, affording us an example that there is ONE who seeth and judgeth, and who suffers none to commit injustice with impunity!

III. Снар. П.

In the mean time, the King's malady increased The King's to a most afflicting degree, and his pains and suf- personal afflicferings were intolerable. His manly and majestic form became bloated with disease; his fine and symmetrical limbs, swollen and deformed; his activity and vigour, consumed by wasting humours, and his mind tortured with pain and anxiety. In a word he became a loathsome spectacle to others, and a burden to himself. Behold! the mighty and puissant Henry VIII.—first, in the joust and tournament-first, in splendour of the embattled field -first, amongst Princes-suffering under the retributory hand of a just and righteous God, who, in this world, will in no wise spare the guilty.-How justly applicable to his situation, are the words of the inspired Asaph; "When Thou with rebukes dost chasten man, for sin: Thou makest his beauty to consume away like as it were a moth fretting a garment. Every man, at his best estate is altogether vanity!*"

During the short time that his wasting life lingered in its socket, he finished his noble foun-death. dation of Trinity College, Cambridge, one of the finest institutions in Europe. His Will was signed

^{*} Psalm xxxix.—Burial Service.

SECTION on the thirtieth of December, in which he fixed the succession in Edward, Mary, and Elizabeth: and preferred the children of his second sister by Charles Brandon, to those of his eldest sister the Queen of Scotland. On the twenty-seventh of January his strength and spirits failed him, and it was manifest that his end was approaching.-But none would dare to announce to him the unwelcome tidings. Sir Anthony Denis was the only one who had sufficient courage to warn him of his approaching fate. The King with great humility received the communication, expressed his sorrow for the sins of his life, and, though multiplied and heinous in the sight of God, yet, he said: that he trusted in Christ whose mercies were greater than his sins: and when asked by his friendly monitor, whether a Churchman should be sent for, he answered; "If any, let it be Cranmer."

"If any,"-what! was this a suitable expression from the lips of him, who was "Defender of the Faith" and "Most Christian King? Unfortunately for Henry, he had been placed in an unfavourable position for himself; and had too many opportunities of witnessing the duplicity, treachery, and perjury, and ambition of Churchmen, to entertain the hope of receiving any benefit from their advice or prayers—affording another signal proof, that whatever may be the pretensions of the Ministers of the Gospel, a practice at variance with such pretensions, will not only repel

mankind from embracing its doctrines, but drive SECTION them into infidelity. Happily, Henry had no desire to take refuge in such an expedient; but with a knowledge and perception which would have done honor to a better creed; and might have been the source of better fruits, he expressed his unshaken faith and confidence in the Author of Christianity. In his professed ministers, with the Pope at their head, he had no confidence; but he doubted not of the Divine power and beneficence of the Son of God. If there were any of his Ministers in whom he could place any reliance—but he was reputed an heretic-it was "Cranmer." It was a high and memorable testimony to the true principles of Christianity. Cranmer was not only a minister of Christianity, but a Christian altogether; and though the circumstances of the times were against him, yet his character prevailed in the King's mind, over almost insurmountable prejudices. The Archbishop was summoned; but did not arrive till the Monarch was speechless, and desiring him to give some sign whether he died in the faith of Christ; he tenderly pressed his hand, and, soon after expired, on the twenty-eighth of January, in the fifty-sixth year of his age, and thirty-eighth of his reign.

He was fond of martial and chivalrous exploits, but still more addicted to pleasure. He was generous, and capable of friendship, but this was counterbalanced, by being quick in his resentments

III.

Character.

SECTION and capricious in his attachments. He was profound and penetrating as a politician, and, generally prudent in the methods he adopted, for securing If he was imperious and, sometimes, his ends. cruel, we shall find that he was forced into it, by the peculiarity of his situation. With all his endowments as a warrior, and with all his love of show, his wars were generally just, and his treaties with foreign countries faithfully kept, for the honor of his Country. He was eminently the instrument of Providence, and endued with great zeal; which by the infirmity of human nature was defaced with striking defects. But I need not enlarge, the history I have written, is the record of his character. The great event of his reign, was the establishment of Political Protestantism, of which he must be considered the founder.

Church of England exemplar.

But the religious or doctrinal parts of the Reformation, were delayed, from the inflexibility of the King, and his determination not to open the door to what was esteemed, heresy; and, from the intolerance and ignorance of the Parliament. King too, was afraid to bring a reproach upon his Supremacy, and thus afford a ground for triumph to the Romish party. But it was well. It served to check that precipitancy, which too often attends great changes, if they become popular; and was intended, we may hope, to preserve the Church of England as an EXEMPLAR CHURCH in Christendom. It was evident to the humblest capacity,

that Henry and his Parliament, were incapable of conducting the Reformation beyond the limits which it had attained, at the time of his removal; and other instruments better adapted to its further progress, were about to be called into action.

SECTION III. CHAP. II.

Vigorous efforts had been made in the body politic, for its future extension and prosperity. ring this reign, the Constitution had been far from slumbering: the feudal system, which had been broken down by the civil wars, into fitting materials for the foundation of a flourishing republic, had received their direction through the wise policy of Henry VII, and under the sway of Henry VIII, became entirely subject to the Sovereign authority. It was necessary, before the Constitution could be consolidated, that the chief power should become permanent, and free from all control, except that of Law. The nobility at this period, shorn of their feudal power were left defenceless, and at the mercy of the Monarch; whilst the commons unsupported by their ancient and natural leaders, were utterly unable to wield the power which had been placed at their command.

Had a powerful Aristocracy existed at this time, acting under legal forms, it would have been im-ly in the Reign possible to have accomplished the changes which took place during this reign. They were carried by the kingly power, aided and sanctioned by the good common-sense of the lower House, who placed no opposition in the way of transactions which

Began to ralof James I.

SECTION concurred with their own wishes. It is true, if the Aristocratic power had possessed its legitimate authority, the Sovereign power would not have been able to have acted independent of law, and committed so many acts of tyranny and oppression. The elements of government were acquiring a new form and character; and time and experience were wanting, to consolidate them. In order to this, they were to pass through periods of trial and purgation. But every rank in the state was awakening to new energy, from the long night of ignorance. Learning began to revive, and the greatest men of the age thought it no degradation, to give their aid in preparing the rudiments of education. Henry VIII, with a versatility of talent for which he was remarkable, wrote an introduction to grammar; and Wolsey, besides writing an introduction to Lilly's grammar, drew up a system of instructions to be used in the school which he founded at Ipswich.

Erasmus comes into England.

The celebrated Erasmus found great encouragement, he was patronized not only by the King and his Ministers, but by the Nobility and Gentry in The foundations were laid deep and general. broad, and adapted to receive the superstructure, which has since been raised upon it. The boundaries of commerce were enlarged, and what was of more consequence to the state, the English began to apply themselves to the arts of industry and trade. Hitherto, these mechanical and fine

arts, had been carried on in England by foreigners, SECTION of whom, by an order in council, fifteen thousand were obliged to leave the Metropolis at one time; improvements also, were introduced in gardening and agriculture, and the whole nation appeared to rouse itself to vigorous and successful exertion, which is now to be taken up under new auspices, and to be conducted to new achievements.

CHAPTER III.

EDWARD VI .- ESTABLISHMENT OF RELIGIOUS PROTES-TANTISM.

SECTION III. CHAP. III. ward VI. A. D. 1547.

The son of Henry VIII, who was destined to fill the high station which had just been vacated, was only nine years of age, when he was crowned Reign of Ed by the name of Edward VI. But he was endued with extraordinary qualifications; and though so young, he was one of the most remarkable Kings that ever graced the English throne: and it is observable, that the influence of his character, aided by circumstances, produced more signal and efficient changes for his country, than any Monarch that ever swayed the British Sceptre. He manifested early indications of a superior understanding, of high integrity, and supreme veneration for Religion. He was endued with a quick apprehension and great desire for learning; and was so proficient in the Languages, that at eight years of age

he was in the habit of writing letters in latin, to SECTION the King and the Archbishop of Canterbury. six years of age, he had been placed by his father under two of the most celebrated scholars of their day; Doctor Cox, as his preceptor in Philosophy, Morality and Divinity; and Mr. Cheke, as his tutor in Language and Mathematics. Under their wise management, with the assistance of his Godfather, Archbishop Cranmer, his rapidly expanding mind, was trained in the exercise of just and holy principles, drawn from the fountain of Eternal Truth—the BIBLE itself. Thus it was, that at the age of nine years when he came to the Throne, he appeared almost a miracle amongst men, for the soundness of his judgement-the generosity of his sentiments—the enlightened vigour of his mind, and the chastened fervor of his piety.

On his father's death, the young King was received by the Council, in the Council-chamber at the Tower, with great respect. The late King's will was read, which was drawn up with that wisdom and sagacity, for which he was so remarkable. Sixteen of the most noble and eminent persons in the kingdom, were appointed with equal powers, as executors of his Will, and to act as a Council of Regency to his son, till he should attain the age of eighteen. But unfortunately, this disposition of affairs was departed from, through the foolish ambition of the Earl of Hertford, uncle to the King, who prevailed upon the majority of

III. CHAP. III.

SECTION the Council, to give him a pre-eminence, and confer upon him the title of Protector of the realm. He was a person of many virtues, enlightened principles and unaffected piety.-But he was too much exposed, through a candid and easy disposition, to the artifices of the designing; and his undue elevation, laid the foundation of many troubles to himself and others. From the first moment, a party in opposition, was formed in the Council, at the head of which, was the Lord Chancellor Wriothesley,

The Corona. tion.

To grace the solemnity of the coronation, several titles of honor were conferred upon the chief nobility. These it will be necessary to mention, in order to introduce to the reader, the names of those persons, who are to be the most distinguished actors in this reign. The Protector was made Duke of Somerset; the Earl of Essex, Marquis of Northampton; Lord Lisle was created Earl of Warwick; Wriothesley Lord Chancellor, Earl of Southampton; and Seymour, Rich, Willoughby and Sheffield, were made Barons. We are assured that during the ceremony, this youthful Sovereign when he was presented with the three swords, as King of England, France and Ireland, with a nobleness of mind, which was only equalled by its simplicity, said—Another sword is yet wanting, the Holy Bible—the sword of the Spirit, without which, they could all do nothing. This declaration was a presage of the great and mighty

work to be achieved during this reign, and of the in- SECTION strument through which it was to be accomplished. Whilst the elevation of the Duke of Somerset, was productive of various private and public evils, that will speedily unfold themselves, yet it was overruled, and proved favourable to the Reformation.

III. CHAP. III.

The Duke of Somerset gave all his influence to Cranmer, who was now left unshackled, to pursue qualifications. the great work which he had at heart. He had. hitherto waited upon the Reformation, and had effected little more, than securing the outworks of the citadel of Religious Liberty. But he had been waiting and learning in the school of trial and experience; and by unwearied application and research, he had acquired vast stores of knowledge human and divine, which were now about to be dedicated, with singular wisdom and moderation, to fulfil the beneficent purposes of God towards this favoured land. Never was an instrument more eminently fitted for such a stupendous work. He was endued with every virtue, which moralists have enumerated, and every grace which divines have applauded. He was patient, gentle, persevering, and courageous. His integrity, sincerity, and fidelity, were unimpeachable. He was a faithful friend, a zealous servant, and an indulgent master. He was charitable, generous, and forgiving. In a word, he was HUMBLE; never haughty, never abject. He never courted those in prosperity, nor forsook a friend in adversity. In real learn-

Cranmer's

SECTION ing and acquirement he was the most solid man of his day, or, perhaps of any day, before, or since.— Henry VIII, with his usual penetrating judgment, contrasted him with Cardinal Wolsey, in a just and striking manner.—"The one," he used to say, "lost his friends by his pride and ostentatiousness; the other, gained his enemies by his humility and mildness."

His infirmi. ties.

Yet Archbishop Cranmer was but man, as the sequel of this history will painfully illustrate. Whilst therefore as Englishmen, we hold him high in admiration, as, perhaps, the greatest benefactor, England ever had; we must learn by his infirmities, to look beyond the instrunent, to the HAND that fashioned and prepared him for the unparalleled work.

State of Europe.

Every thing was now ready for the ACTION of this Reign: But before we enter upon the general affairs of the kingdom, it will be necessary to afford the reader a brief view of the posture of affairs in Europe at this juncture; and to introduce to his notice, the great leaders of the historical epoch. Charles V. the Emperor, was yet in the height of his prosperity; and was, at this time, by his consummate policy, endeavouring to divide the Lutheran Princes of Germany, for the purpose of destroying the Reformation. Francis, the King of France, is said never to have looked up after the death of Henry VIII; and in the short space of three months, followed him to the grave.

He was succeeded by his son, Henry II. The SECTION Pope, Paul, like all his predecessors, was engaged in dissimulation and intrigue; endeavouring by the alternate use of his temporal and spiritual power, to thwart and overreach the Emperor. England was appealed to, by the Duke of Saxony, and the other Princes of Germany. But in the present nascent state of affairs, nothing could be done but to offer a pecuniary aid.

CHAP. III.

The war against Scotland, which had been war with entered into by Henry, for their breach of contract, Scotland. respecting the marriage of his son with the Princess Mary, had never been settled; and the Scots emboldened by the death of Henry, and haughty, from their alliance with the French, had made frequent incursions into England. The Protector however, with great prudence and moderation, endeavoured to persuade them, to agree to the marriage, and to refrain from war. But in vain. The more he attempted to reason with them, the more insolent they became, and the more determined to persevere in their invasions of the English borders. At length he put himself at the head of an army of eighteen thousand men, and marched for Scotland. In ten days he came in sight of the Scotch army, thirty thousand strong, drawn up near Musselburgh. With singular moderation, the Protector still endeavoured to negotiate. To the most reasonable and favorable terms, they would not condescend an answer; but sent him an im-

SECTION pertinent message. Alas! they were verifying the truth of that Divine Oracle:-" Pride goeth before destruction, and a haughty spirit before a fall." An engagement ensued, in which the Scots were routed with dreadful slaughter: more than ten thousand men being left dead in the field; and, what makes this victory more signal, is the almost, incredible fact, that the English lost only sixty men! and there can be no doubt, that if the Protector had followed up his success, he might have dictated his own terms; and the great Elizabeth, after all, would have become the wife of the Earl of Arran! But the simple news from Court that his Brother, was acting an unusual part, Extravagant hastened his return. This was Thomas, Lord thoughts, violent and impetuous in temper, pre-

Lord admiral.

conduct of the Seymour, Lord High Admiral, a man of aspiring sumptuous and arrogant in his manners, and obstinate and revengeful in his disposition. This man, elated with the exaltation of his family, presumed to solicit the hand of the Princess Elizabeth; but finding no encouragement in that quarter, he formed the design of marrying the widow of Henry VIII, Queen Catharine Parr, in which, he, at last, succeeded. Still more elated, he became extravagant in his pretensions to power. His Brother, the Protector, was mild and forbearing towards him, but at length—for the detail is unconnected with English History, he was condemned and executed for High Treason.

III.

CHAP. III.

Homilies

The cup, in

The great work of Reformation proceeded: The SECTION Archbishop whose efforts had been restrained during the last reign, favoured by the young King, the Protector, and the majority of the Council, lost no time in carrying out the principles which published. had been established. Under their sanction, a the Lord's supcommission was issued for a general visitation of per restored to the people. the churches. When this Commission arrived in the dioceses of Gardiner and Bonner, they refused submission to its authority; and were imprisoned for a short time. An English Bible was ordered to be kept in every Church; and to supply the deficiency of well-instructed teachers, the twelve first Homilies were now published. The same subject engaged the attention of Parliament. Many of the arbitrary and unconstitutional acts which had been passed, during the last reign, were rescinded—such as giving the authority of law to the King's Proclamation, and the statute of the six articles. It was established also as unlawful to prohibit the laity, from communicating in both kinds: and the revenues of the chantries were granted to the King.

Whilst things were thus progressing in England, the Reformation in Germany was nearly extinguished, by the power and artifice of the Emperor; and many eminent Reformers of the Continent, took refuge in England; amongst whom, were Peter Martyr, Bucer, and Fagius. These eminent persons were hospitably entertained by SECTION Cranmer, and afterwards honorably employed in III. the Universities

CHAP. 111. Prayer.

Many foolish and absurd practices such as car-Eucharistical rying candles on Candlemas day, ashes on Ashservice. Book Wednesday, and palms on Palm Sunday were forbidden. By a general order, all images, some of which were of the grossest character, were removed out of the Churches, and Auricular Confession was abolished.

> Whilst the greatest activity prevailed, wisdom and prudence presided in the councils of the Reformation. Nothing was innovated for the sake of change. The primitive usages of the Church were brought under examination, and delivered from the inventions and superstitions of later ages, and it was this steady resolution of our Reformers adhering to the primitive model, which has given to the English Reformation such a peculiar solidity and consistency with Truth. Eighteen Bishops, and many Divines were employed to examine into the Eucharistical service; and such was the diligence and research with which they pursued their inquiry, that their labours were crowned with great success, and the Communion Service was restored, nearly to its present primitive form; whilst the whole Liturgy which came next under their review, happily resulted in the "Book of Common Prayer" nearly in its present state.

It has been, indeed, a matter of astonishment Origin of the English Liturto all who have considered the admirable form of gy.

our National Church, that a work so near perfec- SECTION tion, could have been produced at such a time and under such circumstances; and some have not, scrupled to affirm, that its framers, if not inspired, must have been under a peculiar and Divine superintendence. But without having recourse to any miraculous interference to account for the majesty, simplicity, and purity of such a work, it will be sufficient to observe, that its Compilers did not invent nor innovate: they had recourse to the ancient Christian records—Not the Records of the Roman Catholic Church—but the Catholic Church as it existed long before the usurpations of the Bishop of Rome. This, and this alone, accounts for the extraordinary character of the English Liturgy. The Reformers, exercising a sound and enlightened judgment upon these ancient writings, produced a work, which at this day, is the delight and solace of millions; and as a religious formulary, stands next to the Bible, in the general esteem of mankind.

Nor must this searching into antiquity be confounded with "the traditionary unwritten verities" for which authority is claimed by the Church of Rome. Nor must it be imagined that any thing was rejected, merely because it had been handed down in the written records of the Roman Church. By no means. The Reformers consulted all the ancient Liturgies and Records; but they had also

SECTION "a more sure word of Prophecy," in the shining lamp of Truth itself. To its all-discerning, allcorrecting influence, they exposed these human records. Hence they were enabled to detect their errors, and to rectify their mistakes. Indeed, it has been ascertained, by actual investigation, that three fourths of the English Prayer Book are expressed in the language of Scripture.+

Heretical sects. A. D. 1549.

But this bright day of the Reformation was darkened by a passing cloud, which, in some measure, eclipsed its glory and tarnished the reputation of its promoters. At the period under review, unknown sects sprung up in Christendom; and strange opinions were promulgated by men of ardent dispositions and inquiring minds. It would indeed have been strange had it been otherwise, and utterly inconsistent with the acknowledged principles of human nature. It was necessary to expect, that when the human mind delivered from the bondage of centuries, began to exert its energies, it should entirely reject the authority of its ancient instructor, whom it had found to be the Demon of oppression. Such was the result. Men of "corrupt minds and destitute of the truth," plunged into every species of error. Perhaps the worst of these sects were the Anabaptists of Germany, who not only denied the authority of Infant baptism, but impugned the doctrine of the Trinity,

* II Pet. i. 19.

+ British Reformation, Note p. 12.

and entertained infamous notions on the subject SECTION of morals. The Gospellers, also were another similar sect, who entertained hideous notions of the character of God, as the author of evil. Many of these had found their way into England. A commission was appointed to examine these enthusiasts, and they were generally reclaimed by reasoning and instruction, from their absurdities and impieties.

III. Снар. III.

Joan Bocher.

But there was one unfortunate woman of the name of Joan Bocher, a wild fanatic, who denied the Incarnation of Christ, and so vain was she of her notions, and so resolute in maintaining them, that she scorned all attempts to instruct her. She was summoned before the council, and condemned in the absence of Archbishop Cranmer, as an obstinate blasphemer, and delivered over to the secular power, for punishment. But the young King with a firmness and wisdom above his years, could not perceive that it was consistent with justice or humanity, to deliver up to death an unfortunate being, whose wild ravings, pointed her out as a fitting inmate for an asylum. council employed Archbishop Cranmer to obtain from the King, the execution of their sentence. Cranmer represented to the King, that in punishing this woman they were not acting after the example of the Romanists, who punished men for not believing their traditions, however wicked, and unreasonable—but that he, as God's viceIII.

SECTION gerent, was bound to punish all open blasphemy, against the plain, fundamental and acknowledged CHAP. III. doctrines of Holy Writ. The King it is said, was silenced, but not satisfied, and with tears, he signed the warrant for her execution, adding at the same time, "That since he resigned himself to his judgment, if he sinned, it should lie at his door."* It ought to be observed, that every effort was made for twelve months, by the Archbishop and many others, to recal this wretched woman to a right judgment, but in vain; she grew more insolent; and at length, died at the stake, making use of indecent jeers and reproaches.

early instruction in the Holy Scriptures.

Advantage of In this matter the young King was more enlightened than his wisest counsellors. He had been educated in a better school. The pure principles of Christianity were laid, at the commencement, as the foundation of his judgment. true, as alleged by Archbishop Cranmer, that the Law of God, by Moses, does grant authority to put open blasphemers to death, and we may, therefore, conclude that such a punishment is a just reward for their crime; but the author of Christianity who established the law on "better promises," so far from giving his sanction to that part of the old dispensation, has excluded it, as well by many declarations, as by the whole tenor and spirit of the gospel.

But this was not the only solitary instance in SECTION which our reformers offended in punishing blasphemy with death. There was one other case, that of a Dutchman, George Van Parre, who de- Death is the nied the Divinity of Jesus Christ, He was a desert of Blasphemy, but the person of unblemished character, and suffered with author of great composure. His blasphemy, and that of Christianity, Joan Bocher were of equal turpitude; and under it. the Jewish dispensation, would have been justly visited by death, because the judges, under that dispensation, acted by a direct prescript from Him who is the Arbiter of life and death; but our Reformers in carrying this practice into execution under the Christian dispensation, acted without warrant, and were guilty of invading the Divine prerogative. But we do not presumptously condemn them. Far from it. When their situation is considered, their forbearance and gentleness, and their conscientious regard to principle, were admirable; and we never find them imagining the death of an individual for simple speculative opinions, which had not in them, the character of blasphemy. This appears to have been their distinction, and affords no handle whatever to the persecutions of Popery. But it must also be remembered that Religious Protestantism was not yet fully developed, nor established—that it was still as it were in its infancy, and that this distinction, strong as it might appear to them, has long since been blotted out from the Statute Book of Protestantism.

CHAP. III.

SECTION III. CHAP. III.

During the important transactions which had carried forward the Reformation with such rapidity, its enemies were not idle. The laity, who had gained possession of the Church lands, on condition of paying annuities to its former possessors, used their influence, to obtain for the disbanded Monks, preferment in the Church, for which they were eminently unfitted. They became so many firebrands in the villages and retired parts of the country; whilst the emissaries of the Pope, were scattering sedition throughout the land. The people roused by these efforts, at length broke out into open rebellion, which for nearly a twelvemonth filled the country with rapine, confusion, and bloodshed. Devonshire, Norfolk, and Yorkconduct of the shire, were the principal scenes of these disturbances, but by the singular prudence and temper of the Protector, tranquillity was at length restored. It would not forward our undertaking to enter into a detail of these violent transactions.— The demands of the rebels were most exorbitant. and serve to shew how easily the people are roused by designing men, who appeal to their passions, to demand changes, which, in the end, would be destructive to their own welfare and the prosperity of their country. They demanded that the old service and ceremonies should be restored—the act of the six articles enforced—the English Bible be called in, and the doctrine of Purgatory be reestablished!

The good Protector.

But another thing arose out of these Rebellions SECTION connected with the progress of the national History—the advancement of the Earl of Warwick, to reputation. He had accompanied the Protector in the Scotch war, and obtained a great share in Earl of Warthe honor of the victory of Musselburgh. He was now employed in the suppression of the rebellions, and by his courage and superior conduct, brought them to a happy termination, Ambition had entered into his soul, from the first.—It had been nurtured by the open and generous temper of the Protector, and encouraged by his subsequent success. He was the son of the Dudley, who had been executed with Empson, in the commencement of the last reign, and was a person of great abilities and noble qualities; but his understanding, humanity, and generosity, were sacrificed at the altar of insatiate ambition. At this unholy shrine all the vices found admission; and dissimulation and artifice, expelled morality and religion from his breast. Thus he stood a moral wreck within, but dazzling with external splendor, and destined to act a conspicuous part in the History of his Country.

There was another evil spirit, united with him in council, who was ready for any wicked design, against the Protector. which might have a tendency to restore the Romish Supremacy. This was Wriothesley, who had been Lord Chancellor under Henry VIII, and had been created Earl of Southampton at the cor-

III. CHAP. III. Rise of the

III. CHAP. III.

SECTION onation of Edward VI. This man, who was of a violent and determined spirit, had sold himself, body and soul, to the cause of Popery, and in the hope of securing his object, combined with the Earl of Warwick and other members of the Council, to effect the destruction of the Protector. would be useless to follow the details of their plot. They prevented the Protector from making peace with France and Scotland, which would have restored stability to the English affairs. Their country, their honor, were forgotten; and after many intrigues and much difficulty, they accomplished their purpose, and he was committed to the Tower. Yet they could produce nothing against him, that was worthy of death. He was deprived of all his offices, laid under a severe fine, and after a few months, discharged from prison. This was sufficient for the present, and placed the Earls of Southampton and Warwick, at the helm of the It was now fully expected both by the Papists abroad and at home, that their affairs would be restored. But the Earl of Warwick finding the young King peremptorily opposed to any attempt of that kind. and perceiving that nothing would sooner establish him in the King's favour, than zeal for the Reformation, he forsook the Popish party, and affected to be a great promoter of the Reformation. Lord Southampton, stung with rage and disappointment, retired from Court, and went and poisoned himself. Arundel, who was

another of the Earl of Warwick's associates, was SECTION shortly after fined in a very large sum for embez-III. CHAP. III. zlement; and the third, Sir Richard Southwell, imprisoned for seditious practices.

The important business of this reign, received Reformation no check from this change of masters in the under the Earl King's Council Chamber. The REFORMATION A.D 1550. advanced, and that great work the "Ordination Service" was given to the Church—a work of extraordinary merit, and which must be classed amongst the first of uninspired compositions. At the same time Ridley, one of the most learned and zealous Prelates of his day, was appointed Bishop of London, in the place of Bonner who had been deprived. Hooper was made Bishop of Gloucester, whose labours and bright example were of great advantage to the awakening Church; whilst the admirable young King, now thirteen years of age, displayed every virtue which can adorn the human mind. His industry and abilities were above his years. He kept a journal with his own hand, of all the events of his reign. He drew up a scheme for the improvement of the government; and composed a discourse, in French, against idolatry, which he dedicated to his uncle, the Protector.

The councils of the Reformers were conducted with great moderation, which did not so much the Reformers. arise from their perceiving the value and importance of the doctrines they inculcated, as from

SECTION their sincerity in believing them. In the midst III. CHAP. III.

of all the opprobrium and vexation to which they were exposed, Bonner and Gardiner, were the only two persons of eminence, who felt the exercise of their power. The violence and opposition of these Prelates were such, that they could not be restrained; and in consequence, they were deprived of their bishopricks. But the Princess Mary gave them the greatest uneasiness. hatred to the Reformation was profound, and in opposition to the law, mass was constantly said in her chapel. This open breach of the law, was the source of unmeasured grief to the King; and he feared, that by permitting its continuance, he was giving his countenance to idolatry. King's council endeavoured to restrain her to its private observance—but the Emperor Charles V. still exercising an influence over English politics, encouraged her in her opposition. A remarkable project also was entertained of conveying her, suddenly, to the Netherlands, at that time under the government of Philip, who was afterwards her husband. But this project, which if carried into effect, would undoubtedly have excluded her Signs of the from the throne, was not to be permitted. A dreadful chastisement was even now impending over our country; and the selfishness and hypocrisy; the licentiousness and folly; the infidelity and sectarianism, which prevailed, were to pass

through a bloody sea of purgation, before the

Designs of the Emperor.

times.

Almighty Ruler, would permit a permanent state SECTION of prosperity to be established. It is melancholy to remark, that instead of the blessings of the Reformation, creating that gratitude which, they so eminently demanded—instead of manifesting that piety and disinterestedness which ought to have been inspired-men discovered the most selfish and mercenary views, thought more of the plunder they could obtain, than of the more exalted blessings which were placed within their reach. They rejoiced more in their exemption from the superstitious inconveniences of Popery, than in the possession of a purer creed, and more elevated worship; and, thus, released from the hard restraints of their old religion—they rushed into the contrary extreme. In a word, the nation was ignorant, sordid, infidel, and selfish; and with a blind and obstinate perverseness hated the light, and rejected with contempt, the offered boon of restored Christianity. Was it possible, that such degraded selfishness and wilful obstinacy, could escape the avenging hand of the most high? The Avenger, indeed, was near; and all attempts to avert the threatened indignation were in vain. The young King himself, would fain have done it; and when he continued to lament the obstinacy of the Princess Mary, and said, that he ought not to consent to Idolatry, Cranmer, Ridley, and Poinet, were deputed by the Council, to endeavour to reconcile his mind. They argued, That though he ought

CHAP. III.

III. Снар. III.

SECTION not to consent to sin, yet he was not always obliged to punish it. The King burst into tears, and lamented his sister's obstinacy, and the hard circumstances of his situation, which obliged him to give a tacit consent to such an impious mode of worship.*

Designs of Warwick. A. D. 1551

The aspiring mind of the Earl of Warwick, ever watching its opportunity, seized hold of this disposition of the King, and attempted to turn it to his own advantage. He perceived the extreme dislike of the King to the Princess, whose bigotted attachment to Popery, made him apprehensive in the event of her succession, of all the evils which afterwards occurred.

The mind of the ambitious Earl now aimed at great things, and he indulged the prospect of securing the succession of the Crown in his own The Council, he knew, entertained the same apprehensions as the King; and he laid his plan on the ground of the illegitimacy of the Princess Mary. If this were entertained as sufficient, the Princess Elizabeth must be involved in the same sentence, as her illegitimacy was confirmed by a similar act of the Legislature. It was true, indeed, that the succession had been secured by the Will of King Henry VIII, in the Princesses Mary and Elizabeth,—but he proposed that, that Will should be counteracted by the Will of the present King. And as Elizabeth would be more likely to be an obstacle in the way than Mary, he proposed

to marry her to the King of Denmark. The next SECTION in succession was Lady Jane Grey, granddaughter to King Henry's sister Mary and Brandon, Duke CHAP. III. of Suffolk, and with her, he projected a marriage with his youngest son Guilford, and he himself was created Duke of Northumberland.

But the late Protector, the Duke of Somerset, Circumvents was in his way, and he lost no time in seeking the Duke of Somerset. an opportunity to destroy him. He placed a spy in his family, and from some unguarded expressions of indignation, which this infamous person had urged him to make against the Earl, he was arrested for conspiring against the life of a privy councillor, and for entertaining treasonable designs. He was brought to trial and accused further by the infamous informer, of a conspiracy, to assassinate certain members of the council. He was acquitted of the crime of treason, and found guilty of felony, for expressing an intention of imprisoning a Privy councillor. But the circumstances of the intended assassination were aggravated to the King, who was struck with horror at the thought of such heinous guilt, and he delivered the Duke to the will of his enemies. He was soon brought to the scaffold, and never did an execution create such universal interest and regret. The people, indeed, would have risen to his rescue, had he not intreated them to submit to the execution of the law. His end was not the composure of the philosopher, but the patience

CHAP. III.

SECTION and resignation of the advanced christian. The hour of affliction had been to him a season of improvement. In his address to the people, he declared he had acted with sincerity, in all the Religious changes which had been effected during his government; and expressed his satisfaction in having been instrumental in such a work. He exhorted them to live consistently with the doctrines which had been promulgated amongst them, otherwise, he observed, they were to expect signal judgments from Heaven. He continued his speech for some time, with great presence of mind, and taking leave of those around him, without the least change of countenance, he undressed himself for the block, and saying, "Lord Jesus, save me," the executioner severed his head from his body.

> Thus fell this excellent man and benefactor to his country—a person of singular candour, generosity, and piety—the friend of the poor and the oppressed, and the promoter of justice. He was not ambitious; but he had the weakness to be vain of his exalted station and dignity, as Governor to the King, and Protector to the Realm. The chief blot which rests upon his memory, is the pulling down St. Mary's Church and the houses of three Bishops, for the purpose of erecting the magnificent building of Somerset house, in the Strand. I am not his apologist; but I cannot think such a man would be guilty of sacrilege; and I must yet think that there was some

thing peculiar in the case, to which the histories SECTION I have seen, do not afford a clue. Peace to the memory of the Duke of Somerset! If Cranmer was the Luther—he was the Duke of Saxony, of England. Indeed, the Reformation seemed to come to a close with the life of this nobleman; for the topstone of Religious Protestantism was laid in the promulgation of the ever justly celebrated XXXIX Articles of Religion.*

CHAP. III.

By the death of Somerset, the King was entirely thrown into the hands of Northumberland, and wick supreme. he determined to make use of his power to secure the purposes of his ambition, under the cloak of regard for the Reformation.

Earl of War-A. D. 1552.

He had concluded a peace with France; and allied himself, by inter-marriages, with the most powerful families in the kingdom; and, as we have seen, married his son to the Lady Jane Grev, whom he had determined to raise to the throne. His arrangements having been completed, and the King's health beginning rapidly to decline, it was not difficult to persuade him, from his extreme desire of securing the stability of the Reformation, to alter the succession which had been established by the Will of his father, and confirmed by Act of Parliament. The Judges were consulted, and gave their opinion unanimously, against the legality of any settlement they could draw up, with-

^{*} They were in reality 42 at this time, but they were reduced to xxxix in the reign of Elizabeth.

III. CHAP. III.

SECTION out the sanction of Parliament. The King removed their objection by promising to call a Parliament which should ratify the settlement. There was still another difficulty. It had been made Treason, to alter in this reign, the succession to the Crown. This was overruled by obtaining the King's pardon for what they should draw up.-Hales, who was a zealous protestant, was the only Judge who ultimately refused to act. Archbishop Cranmer refused to consent, till he was personally solicited by the young King; and, assured by the Judges, that he might legally subscribe it. Every thing was now ready, and to complete his design, he prevailed upon the King to command the presence of his sisters, to be a solace to him in his sickness. The Princesses not having the slightest idea of these changes, or of any alteration in the succession, immediately obeyed the King's injunction, and commenced their journey. Had Mary reached London before the King's death—she had never ascended the throne of England! But it was ordered otherwise.—The Country was not so easily to escape the avenging scourge prepared for it, nor the Duke of Northumberland the retribution which his crimes deserved.

Shameful peculations of the times.

We have already remarked how little the spirit of religion actuated a vast number of those, who in appearance, were the most active promoters of the Reformation. During the King's decline, when he was incapable of bestowing an accurate

attention to business. In the hands of Northum- SECTION berland, every thing became venal. The voracious Courtiers systematically assailed the Revenues of CHAP. III. the Church. A Court of lay-delegates was appointed, under whose sanction, great evils were perpetrated. Even Bishops were deprived by their authority: and in every See, as it fell vacant, the best manors belonging to them, were seized by such as had sufficient interest with the Court to obtain the grant. The sons of the chief Nobility and Gentry were frequently presented to Prebendal stalls, under the pretence of being enabled to pursue their studies, preparatory to taking Holy Orders. Northumberland himself, the foremost Reformer, was the greatest plunderer. And one circumstance connected with the sacrilegious robbery of these times must be mentioned, not only to shew the daring extent to which the Duke carried his peculations, but, also, to illustrate the Christian integrity of Archbishop Cranmer. Duke had a design of erecting a Principality in the North, by the possession of which he intended to exalt his family. Tonstal the Bishop of Durham, was at that time in confinement, under a suspicion of treasonable practices. To forward his scheme of aggrandisement. he fixed his eyes upon the jurisdiction of the county Palatine, lodged in that See; and determined, at once, to annex it to his Principality. For this purpose he resolved to ruin the Bishop, and a Bill of Attainder was

III. Снар. III.

SECTION brought against him in the House of Lords. Tonstall, was a man of candour and moderation, but a strenuous opposer of the Reformation, Cranmer however, with his characteristic love of truth and justice, resolutely opposed the Attainder; yet all the Popish Lords and Bishops concurred with it: but it was rejected in the Commons, and the King's approaching dissolution put an end to the design.

The Piety of the King.

The deep unfeigned piety of this young Prince, was more strongly marked as he approached the end of his brief, but illustrious career. During his sickness, Bishop Ridley preached before him, on the subject of Christian charity, and shewed under what peculiar obligations, men of eminent station were, to exercise it. The King afterwards desired the Bishop to sit down, and with a reverence for his office, which Popery never taught, desired the holy man to be covered. He then resumed the heads of his discourse; and said, that he looked upon himself in his station, to be principally concerned in the exercise of the duty, and desired the Bishop, as he had pointed out to him the duty generally, so he would also direct him how to perform it in particular. The Bishop, it is said, was so delighted and overcome with such noble and generous indications of the Christian temper, that he burst into tears of joy. We need not enlarge. The result of this conference was the foundation of three of the noblest institutions in the Country,

Saint Bartholomew's Hospital-the Bridewell and SECTION Christ Church, Newgate Street-and the enlargement of Saint Thomas's Hospital, Southwark. He, set his hand to these foundations on the twentysixth day of June. His time on earth was now drawing to a close, and the few remaining days of his life, were spent in solemn preparations for death. His mind was wholly exercised in offering up prayers and ejaculations; and a few moments before his dismissal, he was heard with great earnestness to pray, that God to whom he committed his soul, would quickly deliver him out of this miserable and sinful life. He then interceded fervently for his subjects, and prayed that God would preserve England from Popery, and maintain his true Religion amongst the people. Immediately the pangs of death fell upon him, and yielding up his soul, he said to Sir Henry Sidney, who tenderly embraced him in his arms, "I am faint."-"Lord have mercy upon me and receive my spirit." Thus died the Josiah of England-anointed by God to a high and transcending station, that under his auspices, the Church of God, might be delivered from the yoke of the oppressor and restored to its primitive position as a Witness for the Truth.

His mind and body were adjusted in the nicest mould, and united with peculiar harmony. In his and character. person he was straight and well proportioned .-He had great vivacity in his looks.—His eye was

III. CHAP. III. His death.

III. Снар. 111.

SECTION marked with peculiar lustre, and his aspect was benign and princely. His mind was of a superior order; his attainments incomparable for his age: his exactitude in arranging his studies, and storing up his knowledge, surprising; whilst his judgment was clear, and his perceptions just. Christian integrity, charity, and holiness were unblemished. In short, he was the perfect model of what a Christian Prince should be. He was just and merciful, and attentive and compassionate to the poor. His zeal for Religion was attended with great moderation and temper; actuated with love to God, and extensive benevolence towards man. The work of the REFORMATION, which was completed in his reign, partakes of this character; and established the Church of England on a model, nearer to the primitive Form and Government, than was attained elsewhere at that eventful period. This was the great event intended by the Almighty Disposer of things, to be achieved in this reign, and for which he prepared the most fitting instruments. How little did Henry VIII, contemplate the establishment of Religious Protestantism under his son's administration, when he appointed the Reverend Doctor Cox and Sir John Cheke, as his tutors! How little he contemplated such an issue, when he formed the Council that should take the Government of the kingdom, during the minority of his son-the chief person in which was Wriothesley, the Lord Chan-

cellor, a violent and bitter opponent of the Refor- SECTION mation! We perceive how every thing was made to succeed this great enterprise—even the pride and ambition of the unworthy Northumberland! The hand of an overruling Providence, directed every event through this short and turbulent reign, to determine towards the grand point.

CHAP. III.

Progress of

Nor was this all: the whole body of the nation received fresh impulses, which were about to be the Nation. brought into action. The poor were patronised and raised by the King and his Council.-It was the prevailing policy under the administration of the Duke of Somerset. The order of the Nobility which had sunk too low, was strengthened and invigorated. Trade and commerce were extended, particularly by the abolition of the Charter which had been granted to the Merchants of Antwerp, and Hamburgh, whose agents were established as a Corporation, in the Still Yard, London Bridge. This society of foreigners, had monopolized almost all the trade and energy of the Country, and exported forty times as much as all the English merchants together. The abolition of this Company, gave the greatest possible impulse to the English commerce. Nor must it be omitted as a remarkable fact, that the FIRST POOR LAW, in England was framed in this reign, by the House OF LORDS. It was to be collected by the Churchwardens, and its collection legally enforced by the Bishop.

SECTION
III.
CHAP. III.

But the whole scene now changed, and with a mournful hand we are about to pourtray the savage bigotry—the ferocious cruelty—the furious intolerance which are inherent in human nature; and which only require a suitable opportunity to bring them into action. Such an opportunity was now afforded to the adherents of Popery, whose inflexible attachment to their religion, and unceasing efforts to support it, would demand our admiration, did we not know that their zeal was founded in the grossest ignorance of the first principles of Christianity, and is exercised to perpetrate the grossest libel on its Divine Author. In asserting this, there is no intention to convey an idea that Romanists are worse than other men—that they are more cruel, more vindictive, more intolerant.—But the SYSTEM in which they are educated and brought up, has a direct tendency, when the occasion offers, of making them the worst example of the worst passions On this ground, I consider the system of Popery one of the greatest evils, that ever afflicted the human race. It is an outrage and blasphemy on the Character of God; for it multiplies and commits its impieties under the sanction of His Holy religion. It is also the greatest outrage upon human nature, for it covers him with moral turpitude and disgrace, under the pretence of carrying out the most sublime principle of his nature. It has, in enforcing the unity of the Church by penal Statutes, been the greatest enemy to the unity of

the Church; because, when its usurpation was SECTION removed as too intolerable to endure, it caused the human mind to draw back with horror from a religion so monstrous and offensive to humanity: But it has still more effectually destroyed the unity of the Church, as it has enforced by the most deadly persecution, not only opposed to Scripture, and to the general voice of the Church, but to reason; so that men have been led to conclude, that no consistent and genuine standard of Christian verity and discipline does exist, to which a rational and confident appeal may be made. In short, the system is not only unchristian, but inhuman. is the natural offspring of man's fallen and corrupt nature, instigated by Satanic influence. can have no other origin. No individual human being, could ever have contemplated such a complex and vicious system. It has been generated by degrees, through generations of time, and gathered strength as it advanced from the depths of moral corruption.

"The corruptions of the Romish Church" says Doctor Whateley in his 'Errors of Romanism,' "crept in one by one, originating for the most part, with an ignorant and depraved people; but connived at, cherished, consecrated, and successfully established, by a debased worldly minded ministry; and modified by them just so far, as might best favour the views of their profligate ambition."

SECTION
III.
CHAP. III.

But we must not enlarge. The following pages will confirm what we have written respecting the System of Popery, and will shew that it had its commission, for a season, as the scourge of the Almighty, to chastise and punish the sins of a "disobedient and gainsaying people;" whilst, at the same time, they will afford an awful exhibition of the anti-Christian character of the Apostate Church of Rome.

"AND I SAW THE WOMAN DRUNKEN WITH THE BLOOD OF THE SAINTS, AND WITH THE BLOOD OF THE MARTYRS OF JESUS, AND WHEN I SAW HER I WONDERED WITH GREAT ADMIRATION!*"

^{*} Revelation, xvii. 6

CHAPTER IV.

MARY I .- RE-ESTABLISHMENT OF POPERY .- FEARFUL PERSECUTION OF THE PROTESTANTS.

MARY, justly surnamed the "Bloody," on the death SECTION of Edward VI. in obedience, as we have shewn, to his wishes, was on her way to London, and within half a day's journey of that Metropolis, Mary succeeds her bro. when she received a private communication from the Edward. the Earl of Arundel, acquainting her with the King's death and advising her to provide for her personal safety. With that promptness, which characterized her family, she resolved to hasten into the county of Suffolk, where she recollected the people were peculiarly hostile to the Duke of Northumberland, for the slaughters he had occasioned in the late rebellions. She fixed her head quarters at Framlingham Castle, which was a place, not only of great strength, but situated near the Sea, from whence, in case of failure, she could easily escape to the Continent.

A. D. 1553.

SECTION
III.
CHAP. 1V.

At the same time she wrote to the Council, apprising them that she was fully aware of the King's v. death, and of their designs in favour of a rival Candidate; but that she was ready to pardon what was past, if they would now return to a scnse of their duty and allegiance. This communication convinced the Council that the King's death could no longer be concealed; and they hastened without delay to proclaim Queen Jane, who had been nominated by the late King, as his successor; but the King's act had not been confirmed by Parliament, otherwise, her succession would have stood on better grounds than that of Mary or Elizabeth. With respect to the interesting individual, a wiser choice could not have been made. She was a person endowed with many excellencies, and adorned with great accomplishments both of body and She was only sixteen years of age, but possessed of wisdom and prudence far above her years. When the deputation waited upon her with the offer of the Crown, she steadily refused it, alleging that she would not invade the right of the late King's sister. But at length, overcome by the entreatics of her father and her husband, she suffered herself to be proclaimed.

Queen Jane's Proclamation.

But the Proclamation was coldly responded to, by the people. They affirmed that Parliament had reposed in Henry VIII. the power of appointing the succession by testament; but that this prerogative did not descend to his heirs, unless

empowered by the same authority. Besides, they SECTION agreed, that if the succession of the King's sisters CHAP. IV. was set aside on the ground of illegitimacy, why was not the strict Law of Inheritance recognized in the person of Mary Queen of Scots? But the chief aversion of the people to the succession of the Lady Jane, arose from their hatred to Northumberland, whose ambition they feared, and whom they had never forgiven for his share in the death of the Duke of Somerset, whose blood was about to be required at his hands.

engaged in proclaiming Queen Jane, Mary, at at Framling-Framlingham Castle, had declared herself Queen of England; and directed letters to the Nobility, Gentry, and official personages to join her standard. Many from the surrounding country resorted to her; but her affairs were most unpromising, till a body of the Nobility and Gentry from Suffolk who were all attached to the Reformation, waited upon her, and urged her to declare whether she would alter the form of Religion which had been established in the late King's reign. To their application she gave a full and explicit answer, attended with the most solemn assurances -that she would make no innovation or change whatever, but would be satisfied with the private exercise of her own religion. The Gentlemen who

waited upon her, having received that promise, were possessed with such a firm belief of her sin-

In the mean time, whilst the Council was thus Queen Mary

III. CHAP. IV.

SECTION cerity, that they hesitated not another moment, to hazard their lives and fortunes in her cause.— The Earls of Bath and Sussex-the sons of Lord Wharton and Mordaunt—and many others immediately raised considerable forces, and with unsuspecting confidence, joined her standard. But to their mortification, they were about to receive a severe and practical lesson of the treachery of Popery!

Duke of Northumberland and the Council.

Nor was the Council of the Duke of Northumberland inactive. One of their number, Sir Edward Hastings, was dispatched into Buckinghamshire, to levy recruits: whilst Northumberland at the head of eight thousand men, marched out of London, intending at one blow to settle the contending claims: But his courage and ability were all in vain. A dark and gloomy cloud impended over his head, and the avenger of blood, seemed to attend him at every step. The silence of the grave prevailed, as he passed through the streets of the Metropolis. Not a cheer saluted his ear: not a single blessing was invoked upon his enterprize.

Every thing favors Mary.

Every attempt to frustrate the accession of Queen Mary came to nothing, in the most extraordinary manner; and, as it were without human intervention.

The Duke of Northumberland when he arrived at Cambridge, where he expected to meet Sir Edward Hastings, with his auxiliary forces, found he had passed over to the Queen with four thous-The naval force which had been staand men. tioned on the coast, to intercept her flight, espoused her cause. Many of the chief Nobility followed The Council itself felt the univerin their train. sal influence, and struck with fear, proclaimed Mary at Saint Paul's Cross; and at last, the Duke of Northumberland himself, smitten with the general infatuation, proclaimed Mary at Cambridge, and shouted 'Long live Queen Mary!' But it delayed not his own fate; next day he was arrested, and committed to the Tower, with three of his sons, and the iniquitious Sir Thomas Palmer, who was his perjured accompliee, in the murder of the Duke of Somerset.

All opposition being at an end, the Queen made her entry into London, with great pomp and so-enters London. lemnity, and proceeded to the Tower. Her first act was to set at liberty several eminent individuals, confined within its walls, amongst whom was Gardiner, the Bishop of Woreester, a man, who, through a series of years, had experienced every change of human fortune. He, was now destined to aet a principal part in the government of his country. He was endued with great quickness of apprehension, and of insinuating manners. Throughout the long reign of Henry VIII, he had been constantly employed by the King, in the most difficult State transactions of the period; and had become deeply versed in all the arts of

SECTION III. CHAP. IV.

The Queen

SECTION
III.
CHAP. IV.

dissimulation, and political stratagem. He was a respectable scholar, skilful in the Canon and the Civil laws, but no Theologian. His powers and attainments of mind, were now to find ample scope for their exercise. He was delivered from confinement in the Tower, and created Lord High Chancellor of England; and the change he shortly effected, displayed the energy of his mind, the boldness of his spirit—the sagacity of his movements—the cruelty of his disposition; or, rather, exhibited the inherent cruelty of that religion which urged him to the commission of barbarities which have stigmatised his administration, with the title "of the Reign of Terror."

The Queen and Popery.

The Queen herself, from her earliest years, had undoubtedly suffered much, from the circumstances of her Mother's divorce, and from her obstinacy in adhering to the supremacy of the Pope, in contradiction to the will of her imperious Father. Under this persecution she had learnt to dissemble, and throughout the reign of her brother, she discovered a stern and conscientious adherence to the principles of Popery, which, from the extent of the innovations carried on under his rule, settled into a kind of melancholy despair; and from the moment she ascended the throne, she felt it to be her most sacred duty, under the most awful sanctions of her religion, to restore her country to its former position with the Church of Rome. not intended by this remark, to palliate the crimes

CHAP. IV.

of which she was afterwards guilty; but to lay SECTION opon the true cause of her actions. Her guilt in the light of the Supreme Being will be measured, by the opportunities she had of knowing better; and by the obstinacy with which she adhered to her old prejudices, when the light of Truth discovered their inconsistency with reason, humanity and the first principles of the Gospel of Christ.— Nay, what appears most to perplex all enquiry into her character is, that the best historians say, that she was naturally, of a generous and obliging temper! But it matters not. She was faithless. and cruel, and arbitrary in her zeal for her religion, which has an inherent tendency to destroy every just and virtuous sentiment of the human heart; and which, if she had been an angel, would have produced the same effects in her character.

These are the two personages we are now to Leading acfollow in the history of our Country. The Queen tors in the was an uncompromising bigot, and thoroughly a Romanist. Gardiner was a Political Protestant, but a Religious Papist, and willing to give way to his Mistress to the fullest extent of her wishes. Yet it is a remarkable fact, that this very man, who was signally an instrument in the hands of God, for punishing a guilty nation, was also the instrument of rescuing it from becoming a Province and dependency of Spain!

The machinery of the State was now prepared The Duke of to commence its operations. But before any thing Norfolk.

III. CHAP. IV.

SECTION could be transacted for the development of the great designs of the reign—the Duke of Northumberland must suffer the penalty of his ambition and many crimes. For the occasion of his trial, the aged Duke of Norfolk was created Lord High Steward. The reader will recollect that this Nobleman with his son, was condemned to die, during the reign of Henry VII, that his son was executed, and that he was rescued from the same fate, by the death of the King, which happened a few hours before the time appointed for his execution. He had, since that time, been confined in the Tower; and Heaven now, in compassion to his accumulated sufferings, or for some wise and benevolent purpose, raised his head once more among The Duke of his Peers. Before him was now arraigned the

Northumber-land arraigned. once proud and ambitious Northumberland. trial was brief-His respite short. On the twenty second of August, he was brought to the scaffold, with his son and the Marquess of Northampton, He declared that, he had always been of the Old religion, and exhorted the people to stand by it to the last. What a display of the hypocrisy of his character! But through all the transactions connected with his death, it was abundantly manifest that the blood of the Duke of Somerset was required of him. As he was led through the City, a Lady held up before him a bloody handkerchief, which had been dipped in the blood of that innocent Nobleman, saving to him "Behold the blood

CHAP. IV.

of that worthy man, the great Uncle of that excel- SECTION lent King, which shed by thy malicious hands, does now manifestly revenge itself upon thee." And afterwards, when his head was severed from his body, it was on the same block on which the Protector had suffered, and to complete the retributory vengeance, his body was thrown into the same grave and covered with the same stone.

Thus perished the Duke of Northumberland, whose pride and ambition became formidable to the State, but more so to himself; inasmuch as they destroyed in his bosom every vestige of humanity and religion, and brought him to an untimely and ignominious end.

The funeral rites of the late King were per- Funeral of formed by Archbishop Cranmer with unfeigned the late King, and hypocrisy sorrow, not only on account of the love he bore to of the Queen. him and the Reformation, but as considering his death as the certain forerunner of his own. Yet the Queen to pave the way for her designs declared in Council, that though she was herself firmly fixed in her religion, yet she would not compel others to the exercise of it, only as they should be moved by the motions of God's Spirit, and the labours of faithful preachers: Scarcely had these words passed her lips when a circumstance occurred, which dis-interdicted. played her true intentions, and shewed that it was but a covering of falsehood and deceit. The next day Bonner, the Bishop of London, went to Saint Paul's, when his Chaplain preached the sermon,

III. CHAP. IV.

SECTION and took occasion to extol his Patron and to condemn the hardships he had suffered. The people were indignant at this charge against the memory of their late beloved King, and a riot ensued. Stones were thrown at the preacher and a dagger hurled with such violence, that it entered the side of the pulpit. Rogers and Bradford two eminent ministers greatly beloved by the people, interfered and allayed the disorder. This event hurried the measures of the Queen and her Chancellor. preaching was prohibited, except by those who were licensed by Gardiner. Rogers and Bradford on account of their influence with the people, were imprisoned, and the work of persecution and death now began in earnest.

Arbitrary conduct.

By this arbitrary edict and the still more arbitrary authority given to the Lord Chancellor Gardiner, not only were the Protestant Clergy silenced, but their Churches and pulpits were thrown open to the advocates of Popery. Every thing began to be carried with a high hand: the Queen felt her power; and no longer thought it necessary to act under a mask. The Nobility and Gentry of Suffolk, by whose zeal and loyalty she had been seated upon the throne, relying with confidence, upon her solemn declarations, thought themselves entitled not to obey these injunctions: but orders were immediately sent to the Bishop of Norwich, to enforce the regulations, and to take care that none should preach without a special license.

tonished at such a breach of faith, some of the SECTION most influential persons who had been foremost in her cause, waited upon the Queen to remind her, of her promises. But she sent them an answer, more imperious than her father would have used, -That the members ought not to rule the head, but they were to learn to obey, and not to govern. when one of the number, not satisfied with this arbitrary answer, continued to insist upon the fulfilment of her engagements; he was condemned, as pertinacious, to stand three hours in the pillory. The Bishops of Exeter and Gloucester, Coverdale and Hooper, for not acting up to the injunctions, were imprisoned. Images were set up in many of the Churches! and the old rites performed, by order of the Government, contrary to the existing laws. That upright Judge, Hales, the only one on the Bench who had not concurred in the Letters Patent, for the exclusion of the Queen, when he had on his circuit at Kent, charged the Justices to see the Laws put into execution, on his return was committed to the Marshalsea. this satisfy their unrelenting bigotry.—He was dragged from one prison to another, worn out with privations and hardship, and so terrified with unknown apprehensions, that he lost his senses. He was then set at liberty, but his insanity increased and he perished miserably by drowning! this just and honorable man been burnt at the stake, it would have been a merciful and honor-

CHAP. IV.

SECTION
III.
CHAP. IV.

able dismissal for him, but to have his life and senses drained from him by slow cruelty and torment, and thus degraded and despoiled of every thing that distinguished him as a man, to be cast forth a miserable spectacle to his fellows, was a martyrdom indeed! Whilst to mark more strongly, the spirit which actuated this barbarity, one Bromley who made no scruple in giving his name for the Queen's exclusion, was preferred, because he professed himself a Papist, to be Lord Chief Justice! At the same time Judge Montague who had yielded with great reluctance to the Law-advisers of King Edward, although he had sent his son, with a body of men to declare for the Queen, and had a large family of six sons and eleven daughters, was imprisoned and heavily fined. Perhaps it would be impossible, in the records of any Country to find, in so short a space of time, or under any Government, at any period, such a display of perjury, ingratitude, falsehood, and tyranny, as that contained in this one paragraph.

Cranmer refuses to fly.

Cranmer still escaped, but he was marked out for peculiar vengcance. But it was a bold and difficult task to assail so great a man, who by his Christian deportment and the amiableness of his disposition, had won the esteem and veneration of all men. But nothing could deter the Queen from seeking his life. He was cited before the Council but set at liberty through the influence of Gardiner! who was jealous of Cardinal Pole whom the

CHAP. IV.

Queen wished to recall and to place in the See of SECTION Canterbury. The friends of Cranmer, who now saw the gathering storm, advised him to fly; but he steadily refused, saying—that he would not dissuade others from flying in such a threatning storm, but that it was unbecoming a man in his station, who had been so deeply concerned in the changes which had been made in the last reign. Fortunately many obeyed the monitory voice in time, and fled. An order was issued for strangers to leave the kingdom, and more than a thousand Englishmen escaped, before it was discovered and checked.— Amongst these were Coxe, Sandys, Grindall and Horne, all destined to hold high places in the Church in happier days.

But the Queen's desire for Cranmer's ruin could not be stayed; and by her command he was com-imprisonedmitted to prison in company with Bishop Latimer, the most sincere and simple hearted of men.

To engage the minds of the people, and to call away their thoughts from dwelling too much upon the severity of her measures, she gave orders for her coronation. She raised her friends to high offices of trust and honor; and to gain the minds of the Commons, she granted a largess of all the taxes which were due to the Treasury-declared her intention of paying both her father's and brother's debts; and that she desired nothing so much as the hearts of her subjects, and wished them earnestly to pray for her.

SECTION III. CHAP. IV. of her conduct.

What are we to say to all this? Was it altogether a political stratagem and sheer hypocrisy, intended to blind and delude the nation? Or was Examination it a generous effort to induce the people to enter into her plans for restoring the Country to its former position as it respected religion? That she intended by this munificent act of bounty to secure the good-will and affection of her subjects, there can be no reasonable doubt: nay, we may infer, without difficulty, that she intended it to act as a bribe to gain their compliance with her wishes, and if her wishes were honorable, the act would still continue an act of bounty. But were not her wishes honorable? Her great object was to secure the honor of God and the salvation of her people. She cannot be regarded as acting the part of a hypocrite. She firmly believed in the authority of the Pope and his Church, as much as any Protestant believed in the authority of Jesus Christ and his Church. She acted up to the principles of her creed, and nothing more. She bribed, she flattered, she deceived, she persecuted, all in good Whatever tended to secure the eternal salvation of her subjects, whether, imprisonment, or torture, or burning, she considered as lawful, nay, meritorious. The imperious dictates then, of her religion, made her deceitful, treacherous, cruel, vindictive and bloody. This consideration unlocks the mystery, not only of the character of Mary, but of every other Papist. As a woman she might

be just and merciful and generous, but as a Papist SECTION when her religion was concerned, it would be her duty to cast away every kind sentiment and generous emotion, and to hack and torture the human body without pity or remorse. Would to God, that mankind would agree, Papists themselves included, to banish such a detestable system from the earth!

Conduct of

CHAP. III.

It has often been wondered how the Parliaments of that period, could be so easily influenced to give examined. their consent to the restoration of the Romish re- A.D. 1553. ligion. But let the wonder hereafter cease; and let it be remembered, that every art, and every crime for such a desirable end was considered a virtue by the Queen! In many places the Members were returned by violence and threats. some, the freeholders were prevented by persons employed by the Court, from proceeding to the poll: whilst in others, false returns were made; and to crown the whole, many members who were zealous for the Reformation, were forcibly ejected from the House. Indeed, so notorious was all this, that their Acts were afterwards repealed, on this very ground.

With this House, of her own returning, the Queen immediately went to work to accomplish her designs, a Bill was immediately passed to repeal the divorce of her mother. It was succeeded by another, which annulled all the Acts made in King Edward's reign, empowering the Queen to SECTION
III.
CHAP. IV.

restore religious worship to that state in which it existed, before the breach her father made with the See of Rome. Next followed an Act against all assemblages of persons on the subject of religion; and to complete the Session, the Lady Jane Grey, Lord Guilford Dudley and Archbishop Cranmer, were tried for high treason and condemned, and their attainder confirmed by this Parliament.

Cranmer deprived.

The venerable Archbishop, was now legally deprived of his Archbishoprick; but as he had been invested by the Pope, it was determined to degrade him by the same authority, according to the Canon Law; and he was reserved, amidst daily privation and apprehensions, for severer punishment.

Secret negotiations with Rome.

In the mean time, the Queen was in secret communication with the Court of Rome, through Commendine, the Pope's legate at Brussels, who had been sent over in the disguise of a merchant, and under that character, obtained an interview with the Queen. With him she consulted on restoring the Pope's supremacy, and sending Cardinal Pole as Legate plenipotentiary to England.—But Gardiner, the Lord Chancellor, was jealous of this Cardinal Pole—a man of high integrity, singular candour, and inflexible fidelity to the Pope; and he determined if possible, to retard his arrival in England. For this purpose, he wrote to the Emperor, who had projected a marriage between his son Philip and the Queen, inti-

mating that his Mistress indulged an affection for SECTION the Cardinal and entertained the idea of marrying him, which is probably the truth. However, after some difficulty, the Queen was induced to write to the Cardinal, to delay his journey for a time, and she consented to marry Philip, without whose power, she saw the difficulties in her way would be insurmountable.

Снар. 1V.

When the rumour of the Queen's marriage be-Public discame known to the Public, it excited universal content.

alarm; even the energies of the miserable Parliament were roused, and they sent a deputation of their House to the Queen, with the Speaker at their head, with an address, not to marry a stran-The penetrating mind of the Chancellor saw that the Lion of England was awakened. found the marriage was loudly protested against, throughout the nation; and that it was in every man's mouth that England must now preserve itself, or be for ever in bondage. Every precaution was therefore taken. The Articles of Marriage were drawn up on the most favourable terms; but nothing would satisfy the people. They took up arms under the Duke of Suffolk and Sir Thomas Wyatt; and if their first leader had not been pusillanimous, and their second, rash and imprudent, so formidable were the materials for supporting the Rebellion, that Mary must have been hurled from the throne. But her hour was not yet come;

SECTION the Rebellion was crushed and the projects of Government advanced. CHAP. IV.

Execution of Lady Janc Grey and her husband Lord Guilford the Lady Jane. Dudley; and was followed by that of her father, the Duke of Suffolk, whose weak ambition and incapacity, had in a great measure, brought this ruin upon the family. The same event was also made a plea for the imprisonment of the Princess Elizabeth.

This insurrection hastened the execution of the

The storm Clergy.

The lingering storm now burst upon the nation bursts upon the with tenfold violence. The overthrow of her enemies fortified the Queen with new strength. She issued a commission to proceed against the Archbishop of York, the Bishops of Saint David's, Bristol, and Chester, and to deprive them of their Bishopricks, for having contracted marriage. The Bishopricks of Lincoln, Hereford, and Gloucester, were also declared void. And thus, were seven of the Protestant Bishops deprived at once, without any form or legal process, by an arbitrary exertion of power. Scory, Bishop of Chichester, and Barlow, Bishop of Bath and Wells, left the country and fled. Craumer, Ridley, Hooper, and Latimer, were in prison. Vast numbers of the Clergy were deprived in the most summary manner, on various pretences; and it is said, that out of sixtcen thousand Clergy, then in the kingdom, twelve thousand were ejected from their ecclesiastical functions! These unheard of severities

caused great disquietude in the nation, induced SECTION loud complaints, and provoked great opposition amongst all ranks of people; and a new Parlia- CHAP. IV. ment was now to be assembled.

But Gardiner was prepared. He had obtained great supplies of money from the Emperor, whose desire to carry his measures, had made him listen to the suggestions of the crafty Englishman; and he not only agreed to whatever marriage articles Gardiner might draw up, but was induced to send four hundred thousand pounds, to enable him to carry the elections against all opposition.

Gardiner

Not only was this effected, but the leading men in Parliament, were pensioned and their votes se-patriotic. cured, to second the plans of Government. must however, be acknowledged, to the honor of Gardiner, and as affording, at least, one redeeming trait in his character, that it was due to his vigilance and wisdom, that the nation was saved out of the hands of the Spaniards. This was the great good effected by him, during his administration. He acted the Englishman. The integrity and independence of the country was preserved, which enabled it immediately to collect its strength after it was freed from the oppression of this sanguinary reign. Such are the instruments, sometimes made use of by God, for securing his designs. The Almighty Governor, did not intend the destruction, but the punishment of the distracted country. So strong indeed were the articles of

III. CHAP. IV.

SECTION the marriage, the ratification of which Gardiner obtained in this Parliament, that Philip was entirely excluded from all participation whatever, in the authority of the Crown of England. both the Emperor and his Son relied on the goodness of her cause, and in the opportunities which would arise of exerting their wealth and influence.

Arrival of Philip. A. D. 1554.

In the mean time Prince Philip landed at Southampton on the twentieth of July, from whence he proceeded with great pomp to Winchester, where his marriage with the Queen was solemnized; and on the ninth of August he was solemnly installed at Windsor, Knight of the Garter. His reserved and haughty air was most uncongenial to the feelings and habits of the English, and had it not been for his immense wealth, he would have been utterly despised, and openly insulted. gold seduced the people into an acquiescence with the pride and austerity of his manner. Nay, with his seducing treasures, he bought the senators and Commons of the Land, and for all-corrupting gold, they were willing to barter both their Country and their Religion. Perfidious Idolatry! which worships the golden mammon, because it has the power to bestow temporal good, and for this precarious and transient possession, barters virtue, religion and immortality. It is said, that when Philip entered Winchester to his marriage, there followed in his train, twenty carts laden

with bullion; and ninety two horses and two carts SECTION laden with coined gold and silver.

III.

But the most remarkable thing which attended CHAP. IV. his arrival, was, that the life of the Princes Elizabeth the future Queen was saved by his interposition. On his arrival at London, to grace his entry, he obtained the pardon of Holgate Archbishop of York, and by his earnest entreaties the release of the Princess Elizabeth, who had been secured as a necessary victim. Nor was this the only time as we shall see, that he was made the instrument of saving her from destruction!

The third Parliament of Queen Mary was now Parliament assembled, and still more obsequious than the queen. preceding, was prepared to go every length to execute the will of their Mistress. This Parliament was intended to strike a decisive blow; and every thing which force and persuasion and money could effect, was done to secure the proper materials in Parliament. Whilst Cardinal Pole, who, in the beginning of the Reign, had been appointed Legate by the Pope, and was waiting in Flanders the auspicious moment, now hastened to England, to complete the long wished for re-union with the Church of Rome. Never was a person better suited for the task which he had undertaken. He was mild, persuasive and sincere; and in the name of the Universal Pastor, he addressed the King and the Queen, and afterwards the Parliament, inviting and exhorting them in the most

III. Снар. IV. fact.

SECTION eloquent manner, to return to the sheepfold of the Church. It was a moment of high exultation to the Queen who had been labouring for this Remarkable consummation, and to the whole Romish party, to behold their wishes accomplished; and it is remarkable, that at the moment, the Cardinal was making his plausible speech before the King and Queen, and exhorting them to return to their allegiance to the supreme Bishop, the Queen felt peculiar internal sensations, which were, indeed, the first advances of disease and death; but which, at such a moment of joy, were mistaken for the natural symptoms of child-bearing, and in consequence of that persuasion, a solemn "Te Deum" was sung at Saint Paul's, for the joyful prospect of a successor! But it was far otherwise: her days and her actions were numbered; and it was remarkably, the hand of God that was smiting her with a fatal disease, at the moment of her greatest triumph.

Address of the Commons.

The obsequious Parliament, returned a most favorable answer to the exhortations of the Cardinal, in an address to the King and Queen; "that they would intercede with the Legate, to reconcile them with the See of Rome; offering to repeal all the laws they had made against the Pope's authority, in token of their repentance."-This was enough. The Legate attended Parliament, and after an elaborate speech, in which he shewed the advantages and necessity of union, he reconciled them to the body of the Church, granting them SECTION and the nation a plenary absolution, which all present received upon their knees! The rest of CHAP. 1V. the day was spent in singing "Te Deum;" and at night the general satisfaction was signified by lighting of bonfires!

Soon after this solemn reconciliation, the Parliament fulfilled its pledge, and passed that famous of the Papal authority in Act, by which the Pope's authority was recognized England. and restored; and all Acts which had passed since the twentieth year of Henry VIII, were repealed. It was on this occasion, when a clause had been inserted in the Bill by the Lords, for the purpose of exempting certain lands which had been granted to Lord Wentworth, out of the See of London, and which was much opposed by the Commons, Gardiner, when the Bill was presented for the Royal assent, boldly cut it out of the parchment, exclaiming, Now, I truly do the office of a Chancellor, alluding to the word cancelling, from which the name is derived. He was now in the height of his prosperity, and obtained great reputation for bringing about so great a change in so short a time, and with so little opposition. Ambassadors were sent to Rome, to convey the joyful tidings of the restoration of England to the Apostolic See. As a public acknowledgment for the accomplishment of this great event, a solemn procession was appointed in England, in which Bishop Bonner had the honor of carrying the Host. This pro-

Restoration

A. D. 1554.

III. CHAP. IV.

SECTION cession happened on Saint Andrew's day, which was thence called the 'Feast of the Reconciliation.'

> Could the curtain now drop, and the future be hidden from our view; the system of Popery, bad as it may, even now, have appeared to the Reader, might yet be saved from the utter execration and detestation of all intelligent beings .- But alas! what we have already narrated, has been but the prelude to its character; and we are compelled by the evidence of the most appalling facts to conclude, that the solemn farce which had just been transacted, has no more connexion with Christianity, than the sacrifices of Moloch, or the rites of Druidism. But not to enlarge. Every thing was now in readiness for that dreadful persecution, which would have disgraced the. Heathenism and barbarity of a NERO; but which displays in its true colours, the character of that apostate Church, which is "drunk with the blood of the Saints;" the manifestation of which we cannot but acknowledge, as one design of the Supreme Being, in pemitting such scenes to be enacted, in order that as a Nation, we might never again be induced to trust its smiles or believe its promises.

Fury of the Queen and Chancellor.

This persecution began in the month of January, contrary to the advice of Cardinal Pole, who was a man of a mild temper, and entertained more exalted views of the Christian character than the Church to which he belonged. He exhorted the Queen to proceed by persuasion and tenderness;

but Gardiner, whose religion was entirely politi- SECTION cal, and whose mind was embued with the severe and bloody principles of the Romish System, advised the Queen to enforce the Statutes against heretics. Nor long. Rogers, Prebendary of St. Paul's, a learned and excellent Clergyman had of Rogers. the honor to stand foremost, in this "noble army of Martyrs" His trial was brief and summary, as such exhibitions usually are, where the sentence is determined beforehand. After his condemnation, he was treated with unnecessary cruelty; and was not permitted to take a last farewell of his wife and children. On the fourth of February. he was brought to the stake, and when a pardon was offered to him if he would recant, he steadily rejected it, on such conditions, and said-He would not exchange a short fire for everlasting burnings; declaring, that he gave up his life with joy, as a Testimony of the Doctrine he had preached. excellent Bishop Hooper, who was condemned at the same time, was sent to Gloucester the seat of his own Diocese, at which he greatly rejoiced; and on the ninth of February, was committed to the flames, in which he endured exquisite torment, calling upon God! and after a long and fearful trial he expired, saying "Lord Jesus, receive my spirit!" At the same time, Saunders, was burnt at Coventry; and Rowland Taylor, Rector of Hadleigh in Suffolk, was condemned, and dispatched to his own parish, to be made a

CHAP. III.

Martyrdom

Of Hooper.

Of Saunders. Of Taylor.

III. CHAP. IV. Of Glover.

SECTION spectacle by fire, and a terror to his people. A few months after Lawrence Saunders, his friend Robert Glover,* a gentleman of Mancetter was burnt on the very same spot.

Christian Martyrdom its peculiarity.

By this terrific blow, struck at one time, and in distant parts of the kingdom, the Queen and her accomplices—there is no want of candour in using such a term—thought to have created such a panic throughout the ranks of the Reformers, that the heresy of Protestantism would have been for ever silenced and subdued. But alas! they knew not what they did. They reckoned not upon the invincible power of Truth! when through the understanding, it seizes the throne of judgement. Least of all, did they understand the power of Divine Truth, when it has found its way through the medium of the Scriptures and by the teaching of the Eternal Spirit; unto the understanding and the heart. Their minds were not sufficiently free to discern, that this was exactly the spirit which animated the Protomartyr Stephen and the whole band of primitive martyrs, + and that the only effect of persecution, was to strengthen its vigour, and extend its influence. This is religious Protestantism in its vital principle.—It examines the doctrines of the Church by Scripture, and believes them, because assuredly derived from that source. Its faith, then, rests on the "Record of God." cannot renounce truths derived from such a source,

^{*} Narrative by the Rev. B. Richings, Seeley. † Acts, vii.

nor, believe those which are opposed to a Divine SECTION testimony. If a man clearly perceives this, and the truth has gained not only his understanding, but his affections, no power, short of Omnipotence can destroy its dominion over his soul. endure the torture of the rack, the agony of the cross, the horrors of the fire, not with stupid indifference, but with submission and patience, united with compassion for his persecutors; and as long as he retains the faculty to know that his faith rests on the Record of God! his soul will pass through the fiery abyss, purified it may be, but undismayed and unconquered. It is true that individuals have died, with great heroism, for their religion who were not Christians, nor acquainted with the knowledge and principles of Christianity. But on a careful enquiry, it will be found, that wherever anything may be discovered superior to a slavish superstition, or blind adherence, the same principle, in some measure, has animated the martyrs of all religions. The Jew for instance, in all his persecutions for religion, has endured "as seeing Him that is invisible," relying upon what he knew to be a divine Revelation. In the martyrdoms of the Jews, you behold that stern unrelenting fortitude, which could not have been crushed by any power save that which inspired it. But the inflexible sternness of the Jew is quite distinct from that kindlier emotion which characterized the Christian sufferer. The latter had a

CHAP. IV.

SECTION double support; he had the Revelation of the Jew, III. Снар. 1V.

ant Martyr alone manifested "Love."

which inspires him with similar fortitude, and he has the Revelation of Christianity, which endues him with the spirit of his Divine Master-Love-The Mahommedan and the Hindoo have shewn, The Protest- that they can meet suffering and death for their religion. The devotion of the one is founded on the Koran being a divine book, the other, on the Shastar. The fortitude of the one is characterized by feroeity; the other, by stupid indifference; neither of which, entered into the composition of the Christian Protestant Martyr. But the distinction is as marked, as is the difference between light and darkness; as great, as between truth and falsehood. It is not to be doubted also, but that the Papist would be willing to suffer, perhaps, to die for his Indeed, both Queen Mary and her religion. Chancellor Gardiner, had endured considerable hardships for adherence to their religion. But it is remarkable, that there have been very few examples of martyrdom in that church since A. D. 300. And it must be recorded as a singular fact, that, throughout the long and arduous period of the Reformation, not one Papist suffered eapital punishment for adherence to his religious tenets. Sir Thomas More and Bishop Fisher were politieal Martyrs; and suffered for adhering to the temporal supremacy of the Pope.—But it is not necessary to pursue this discussion further.

When the Lord Chancellor Gardiner perceived SECTION that these dreadful severities, so far from accomplishing his wishes, only seemed to awaken the spirit of Martyrdom; and, that seven persons were Bonner takes immediately apprehended, who discovered the up the Persesame steady resolution to suffer, he could not calmly contemplate the awful results of continuing such tremendous executions. This is, certainly, another relieving trait in his character: and in justice it ought to be mentioned, that he refused personally to interfere in the trials and condemnation of the heretical Protestants. He therefore, abandoned their further persecution to Bonner, who rejoiced at the opportunity; and whose cruel and brutal temper, enabled him to perpetrate the most inhuman cruelties, without pity or remorse, but I must not dwell upon these infernal tragedies. The details connected with them, are incredible; and it is almost impossible to believe, that they were ever transacted upon earth.

In the midst of these cruel persecutions, the Queen, whose zeal for the extermination of heresy King and Queen blasted. increased every day, was considered to be drawing near to her confinement. In the month of May, the Envoys were appointed who were to carry the tidings to foreign Courts. In the beginning of June, the Queen was seized with sudden pains, and it was reported in the City, that she had borne a son. The Papists were inspired with new hopes, and "Te Deum" was sung, in all parts of the City

III. CHAP. IV.

> Hopes of the A. D. 1555.

III. CHAP. IV.

SECTION by the zealous Ecclesiastics! But, vain delusion! it was the crisis of a disease, which convinced her husband King Philip, that all his hopes of children from this alliance, were at an end; and as he could never hope to gain any authority in England without issue, he resolved to abandon his English enterprise for the present. Indeed the highest honors awaited him; for his father Charles V. after a long career of unexampled glory and prosperity, with a greatness of mind, superior to all his conquests, resolved to give up his dominions to his son; and to relinquish the state and splendour of the most extensive empire, for the simplicity and frugality which could be maintained, on a pension of a hundred thousand crowns a year.— This extraordinary person, as we have seen, for more than thirty years, had exercised a very considerable influence over the Councils of our Country up to this very period; and he had seen as it were a favourable termination to his vast designs in the marriage of his son with the Queen of England. But in this respect, though a man of the greatest penetration and sagacity, his designs were frustrated.—England never fell under the power of his son: but on the contrary, its independence was secured; its prosperity consolidated; and it was destined to become a greater Empire, than that which he was about to abdicate.

Philip succeeds to the Empire.

After the departure of Philip to take possession of his new dignity, the nation was not backward

CHAP. IV.

to evince their horror and disgust at the proceed- SECTION ings of the Government. Indeed this feeling was so strongly marked, that the inhuman Bonner, slackened his hand; and the flames of the living funereal pile ceased, for a period of six weeks. this was a state of apathy, which did not comport with the fiery zeal of the religious Queen. wrote to her ecclesiastical Butcher, and exhorted him, to perform the office of a good Pastor; and either to reclaim the heretics, or to proceed against them according to Law. This was a joyful admonition. With renewed vigour, after this short pause, he renewed his employment. New fires were immediately kindled. His fury raged everywhere, and the "good Pastor" made dreadful havor of the defenceless sheep. Cardmaker, formerly a Prebendary of Bath; and Warne a tradesman, were burnt in Smithfield. Seven were condemned, and sent into Essex, where they were burnt at the several places of their abode. eminent Clergyman, Bradford, was burnt in the same fire with a young apprentice, who was much encouraged by his exhortations in the fire. Many other fearful examples followed about the same time, and the persecution raged in all parts of the kingdom.

But the greatest spectacle was reserved for the end of the year, when a commission was sent of Ridley and to Oxford to proceed against two famous Christian Bishops, Ridley and Latimer. They were condem-

III. CHAP. IV.

SECTION ned as obstinate heretics, and the writs were immediately sent down for their burning. Perhaps the annals of Martyrdom, from the death of Stephen, do not produce two more illustrious examples of the power of true religion upon the heart of man. They were not only endued with fortitude to meet the "ficry trial" which awaited them, but filled with joy and cheerfulness in the anticipation of it. The night preceding, Bishop Ridley trimmed his beard and washed his feet, and invited his friends to be present at his marriage on the succeeding day. When the Martyrs arrived at the stake, they embraced each other with great affection; and Ridley, with his wonted cheerfulness, said—"Be of good courage, Brother, for God will either assuage the flame, or enable us to bear it." Nor was the holy veteran Latimer, behind him; for as [they were preparing for the stake, he cried out to Ridley-"Be of good courage, Brother, for we shall this day light such a candle in England, as by God's grace, shall never be extinguished." Thus perished in the flames, two of the most able and excellent men, that God ever raised up to adorn his Church. Ridley holds an exalted place amongst the leaders of the Reformation. He was a man of great learning and deep piety, and was highly esteemed for the solidity of his judgment. Latimer, who was more than cighty years of age, was a man of primitive and Apostolie simplicity of manners; and whose

sermons were not more dreaded by the Papists, SECTION than by the time-serving and licentious Courtiers. But whilst the severity of his rebukes was dreaded, by many, he was reverenced by all, for the honesty and integrity of his character; and admired and loved by the truly upright.

III. Снар. IV.

The Lord Chancellor Gardiner, who now for his active zeal and successful policy, was expecting tation on the a Cardinal's hat, and the dignity of Archbishop, tor. although he would not personally assist at the bloody tribunal, yet was principal in these arbitrary measures, and was particularly alive to the importance of the proceedings against these excellent Bishops. But his persecuting career was drawing to a close, and all his ambitious views, were about to perish, in a moment. The Almighty Judge, was about to vindicate the outraged laws of humanity and Christianity, and make him an example to all future generations!

During that day on which Ridley and Latimer were committed to the flames, he was all impatience, and would not sit down to dinner, till he was assured that the fire was kindled. When the messenger arrived at four in the afternoon, he sat down, cheerfully, to dinner: but, whilst he sat at table, he was suddenly seized with a complaint which proved fatal; and he only survived to the following November. During his distressing affliction, he was deeply affected with his situation, and expressed deep remorse for the actions of his

SECTION past life, frequently saying. "I have erred like III. Saint Peter, but I have not repented as he did!"

Thus died Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester and Lord High Chancellor; a man of consummate ability in all transactions, where intrigue and cunning, and treachery were available—a true Papist—without conscience, without religion; temporizing, artful, and ambitious. In the month of November, and within a short time of his death, three persons were burnt in one fire at Canterbury, as it were, a sacrifice to his inhuman Manes; and in the month of December, the celebrated Philpot was added to the holy-martyred-band. His death concluded the year, in which sixty-seven persons perished at the stake!

State and feeling of the Nation.

The designs of God were now fast accomplishing. The whole nation had been severely punished for their violent and rapacious conduct, during the progress of the Reformation under King Edward; and for preferring their own interest to the cause of true religion. Popery also, in some measure, had been allowed to develop its true character; and the Reformers had had an opportunity of shewing by their constancy, fortitude and meekness, not only the sincerity of their profession, but the truth and power of that holy Religion, for which they contended to the death.

The people, generally, began to discover a just abhorrence of the conduct of the Queen and her advisers: and under such a dreadful discipline, their minds were preparing to throw off the detes- SECTION table and oppressive yoke, with more heartfelt abhorrence. Even the House of Commons partook of the general feeling; having forgot the influence of Spanish money, they began to repent of many of the Laws which they had enacted against the Reformers. They refused to grant the Queen an aid of two fifteenths—they refused to pass several oppressive Acts, and becoming violent, they were summarily dissolved.

But the maddened Papists advanced to the perpetration of further cruelties. It was even contemplated to establish the Inquisition in England; and in the beginning of the year, to satiate their "drunken" rage, the great victim of all, who had been reserved through the policy of Gardiner, to the beginning of this year, was brought forth to be made a spectacle to the terrified people. was Archbishop Cranmer.

Indeed, in the month of September in the preceding year, and previous to the death of the late to try Cran-Lord Chancellor, a Commission had been sent down to Oxford, to proceed against him. He had appeared before this tribunal, in Saint Mary's Church, and answered their objections with great learning and modesty. The mock sentence of this Court was, that he should appear before the Pope within eighty days: but in the space of twenty days, letters arrived from the Papal seat, commanding that he should receive condemnation,

III. Снар. 1V.

Commission A. D. 1556.

III. CHAP. IV.

SECTION and be delivered to the secular arm; preparatory to which he was to be degraded from all his Ecclesiastical functions; and for this purpose Bishop Bonner and Thirleby, were invested with new powers. In the month of February, these Popedelegates arrived at Oxford, to go through the ceremony of degrading the venerable Archbishop. The Primate of all England, who had been the adviser and friend of Kings, the Godfather and instructor of Princes, was in derision, dressed in Episcopal robes made of canvass, which were then taken from him, one by one, attended with formal curses and imprecations. In the performance of these ceremonies, Bonner proceeded with all that insolence and malignity, which could be dictated by the most inveterate hatred; but it is said, that Thirleby did his part with evident grief, and even with tears. Compassion! how exalted are thy claims! Thy presence is lovely, even in an adversary!

His Recantation.

Nothing now remained, but the infliction of his final sentence; but this would not satisfy them. They had another object in view of much more consequence to their cause, if they could accomplish it. It was, if possible, to obtain a Recantation. Every engine was set at work for this pur-The most eminent English and Spanish divines engaged him in continual conferences. They removed him from prison, to the Dean's lodgings. They afforded prospects of life-of

preferments—of the highest favor, if he would sign the document of Recantation, which they had prepared. This great man had withstood their intrigues, their solicitations, and their threatenings for three years. He had gone through the ceremony of degradation, with meekness; and would from thence, have gone boldly to the stake; but the sudden change from degradation to honor,from death to life, seemed to shake his fortitude and resolution; and yielding to his infirmity, and urged by their importunity, in an unhappy moment he subscribed the fatal document, in which he was made to renounce all his former opinions, as heretical and damnable. It was a denial of Christ and his doctrine. But the goodness of that God whose Truth he denied, did not forsake him, although he permitted his crime to be visited upon him, with accumulated punishment. Like Peter he fell; like Peter he repented.

His Recantation was immediately printed and His re-estacirculated through the country, to the utter grief ment in the Truth. and confusion of his friends, and the triumph of his enemies. But this did not satisfy the furious Queen, embodying in herself, all the cruelty and perfidy of her religion, she said: That his repentance was good for his soul; but since he had been the great diffuser of Heresy over the nation, it was necessary to make him a public example. A writ was accordingly sent down to burn him, with orders that it should be done suddenly, that no

SECTION III. Снар. IV.

SECTION
JII.
CHAP. IV.

time might be allowed, for him to make known his real sentiments to the people; and that he might die under the full power of his Recantation. But Cranmer suspected their designs; and drew up a long confession of his faith, in full accordance with all that he had ever professed and taught.

Martyrdom of Cranmer.

On the twenty-first of March, the day secretly fixed for his execution, he was brought to Saint Mary's Church, on which occasion, Doctor Cole, Provost of Eton, preached the sermon, in which he exhorted Cranmer, to persist in the faith into which he had professed his return, even to the death; which it was the will of the civil Governors to inflict upon him that day; and since his conversion was from the immediate hand of Heaven, nothing could be more acceptable to God, and to all good men, than a public declaration of the reality of it.

This unexpected declaration of his approaching fate, with the exhortation which accompanied it, filled the Archbishop with perplexity and dismay. But summoning his recollection, and rousing his former courage, he boldly stood forward, and commenced an eloquent and masterly address to the people—recounting the principal heads of his Truth and doctrine—affirming that the kingdom of Anti-Christ was contained and established in the power of the Pope; and in conclusion, representing how greviously he had offended God, by renouncing the Truth, he declared before all

men, the surprising resolution he had taken—that SECTION the right hand which had so impiously offended by subscribing the Recantation, should be the first sufferer in the flames! On this emphatic announcement, the whole assembly was thrown into confusion; and some mocking and calling upon him not to dissemble any more, he cried out, that he had ever loved simplicity; and that, except in that one instance, he had never dissembled in his life. They were now filled with indignation and wrath; and with bitter revilings and clamour, they rushed upon him, and dragged him to the place of execution—the same place from whence his two friends and fellow labourers, Ridley and Latimer, had a short time before ascended in their chariots of fire. Ready for the same convoy and on the same plot of ground, stood Thomas Cranmer, one of the most excellent of men, degraded, indeed, from all his honors, and still more by the denial of the truth; but now, fully restored and established, he appeared more glorious in his recovery, than he had been abased in his fall; and from the temporary obscurity, his faith, and hope and constancy, shone forth with increasing splen-His meekness and patience, amidst the lowbred railing, the scurrilous abuse, the most opprobrious jests, were truly astonishing. The serenity of his mind was not once disturbed .- The purpose of his mind was firm and unshaken; and when the flames were kindled, his Christian for-

CHAP. 1V

III. CHAP. IV.

SECTION titude, influenced by the sincerity of his repentance and supported by the power of God, appeared conspicuous. He stretched out his right hand, into the midst of the flames, and with unwavering firmness held it, till it was consumed, sometimes saying, "That unworthy hand!" and at last, crying out "Lord Jesus, receive my spirit!" he expired in the inhuman torment.

Remarkable Providence.

Thus perished the great Reformer of the Angliinterposition of can branch of the Catholic Church—the sincerity of whose Protest against Popery, was more solemn and convincing at his death, than it had been in his life. And, as if to afford a demonstration to the senses, that his repentance was accepted in heaven; and to avouch as it were, for the integrity of his servant, it was permitted by God, that when his "unworthy right hand" and his whole body were consumed to ashes, that his HEART should be found entire,—unscathed and uninjured by the fiery element. I ask not whether it was a miraculous interference, or, whether some unknown natural cause operated to secure that part of his frame from destruction—the fact is universally asserted, and discovers the Finger of God.

> This eminent man was in the sixty-seventh year of his age, and had been endued with singular qualifications for the great work, he was destined to accomplish. His character is pourtrayed in his actions, over which, Christianity exercised almost a sovereign influence. It is much easier to disco-

ver his virtues than his blemishes. One might SECTION have suspected from his conduct at last, that his meekness bordered upon timidity, or meanness of CHAP. IV. spirit; but we are checked in this suspicion, by the peril to which he exposed himself on more occasions than one, in opposing the will of Henry VIII; especially, in the noble letter which he wrote to him, in vindication of the character of Anne Boleyn, and of Cromwell, Earl of Essex, after their condemnation. Perhaps his chief failing was a too great compliance with the wishes of others, and a readiness to be overcome by kindness and importunity. The temptation which caused his fall, was founded on this infirmity, strengthened by the horrors of being consumed by fire: but if this were the case, the heroic manner in which he met those horrors, will discover how much his natural disposition was overcome, and how much he was supported by "the inspiration of the Spirit of God," in his last conflict. Perhaps some striking failure, like that of his recantation was necessary, in order to moderate the veneration which his uncommon worth might have produced in our minds; for such was his primitive humility, his indefatigable industry and unfeigned simplicity, that he will bear comparison with any of the Fathers of the Christian Church, who lived nearest to the Apostles. His fall discovered that he was surrounded by the frailties and infirmities

SECTION of mortality; his recovery, that he was supported III. by the Power and Grace of God. CHAP. IV.

Charters.

It is difficult to leave the contemplation of the The two great character of a man, to whom we are as a nation, so deeply indebted. Amongst the national Reformers of his time, he stood pre-eminent in wisdom, in temper, and in prudence; and it is not a little remarkable, that, we are indebted to an Archbishop of Canterbury, both for our Political and Religious freedom. Archbishop Langton was the means of restoring the "Magna Charta"—the foundation of our political Rights-Archbishop Cranmer the MAXIMA CHARTA, the bulwark of our Religious privileges!

But why should I indulge in these pleasing speculations?—a bloody page is open before me, unequalled in barbarity in the annals of any nation. The fires of martyrdom blazed on every side, and multitudes followed their leaders into eternity.-Into the detail of these harrowing executions I cannot enter, but must refer the render to the Martyrologists of that day.*

A year of burnings. A. D. 1556.

The cruelty of the infuriated Bonner, increased with the number of his victims. The martyrdom of Cranmer took place in March. In the January

^{*} A new edition of Foxe, has been published by Seeley.— The Reformation Society, has published an excellent abridgment, by Mr Seymour. An affecting Narrative of the Martyrdom of Robert Glover and Mrs. Lewis of Mancetter, by the Rev. Mr. RICHINGS, the present Vicar.

preceding, five men and two women were burnt SECTION in Smithfield; and one man and four women at Canterbury. In March, two women were burnt at Ipswich; and three men at Salisbury. April, six Essex men were burnt in Smithfield; a man and a woman in Rochester; and another woman in Canterbury. Six men were condemned by Bonner, who became weary of delay and persuasion; and after the respite of one day, they were sent to Colchester to be burnt; and to complete the catalogue of one month, a blind man and a cripple were burnt in the same fire at Stratford. In May, three women in Smithfield. But why should I enlarge? these were minor exhibitions of that spirit which then had the ascendant. the month of June, ELEVEN MEN, and TWO Wo-MEN, were burnt in ONE FIRE at Stratford! Nor did the merciless Man confine his executions within the realm of England; in Guernsey, a Mother and her two daughters were burnt in the same fire! Other horrors were perpetrated actually too revolting to be narrated. Suffice it to say that, within this year, Eighty-five persons were martyred!

But still the fury of the persecutors raged.—The Burnings and bodies of the dead were dragged from their graves, judgments. treated with ignominy, and publicly burnt. Commissions were issued for searching out and bringing the heretics to judgment: tyranny and cruelty triumphed; and without entering into particulars, it will be sufficient to observe, that during this

III. CHAP, 1V.

A. D. 1557.

SECTION year Seventy-nine persons were condemned and III. burnt.

CHAP. IV.

In the midst of these fatal exhibitions, which filled the nation with apprehension and dread—a sudden blow was preparing, which was to inflict a deep wound on the unhappy Queen, and increase the discontent of the people, to the utmost. was brought on by the intolerable pride of the Pope, who used to say that all Kingdoms were subject to him—and that he would suffer no Prince to be too familiar with him, and that he would set the world on fire, rather than submit to act beneath the dignity of his station. This lofty minded Monk to forward his intrigues against the House of Austria, induced the King of France to break the truce into which he had entered with Philip King of Spain. With great reluctance the Queen of England was induced to send assistance to her The French were defeated, and the husband. Pope was left at the mercy of the Spaniards. He raged—he threatened—and by his arts and policy he soon restored his affairs to their former position.

The French War. But not so, England. It was for her punishment that all this machinery of war was set in motion. The French turned all their force against the possessions of England in France. They were entirely successful. In one week, Calais, which was thought impregnable, and which had been in the possession of England, since the reign of Edward III, was taken by assault. The surrender of Ca-

lais was speedily followed by that of Guisnes and SECTION the Castle of Hainnes; so that in the most unexpected manner, and in a few days, the English were expelled for ever, from every foot of ground which they possessed in France.

III. Снар. 1V.

This event was a severe blow to the nation and tended, greatly, to increase the vexation and discon-Elizabeth in tent of the people. The Queen, herself, was danger. deeply affected by the loss, which she felt could never be retrieved; and it is said, that this affliction hastened her death. Be this as it may: her misery and wretchedness, were, at this moment, complete; and her remaining days were now numbered. But her cruelty was yet unmitigated, and her savage ministers, were anxious to secure the stability of the conquests they had made with so much trouble and bloodshed. Their chief counsel was against the Princess Elizabeth, whom they intended to supplant by Mary Queen of Scots.-But she was endued with such wisdom and prudence, that without any dereliction of principle, she finally escaped their hands. But other victims were found; and more than eighty were this year consigned to the flames; making a total of Two Hundred and Eighty-four, besides hundreds who perished by hardship, imprisonment, and exile. But the bloody scene was now drawing to its close, and the Divine intentions, both as it respected the punishment, and the full portraiture

Princess A. D. 1558. SECTION of the Papal System were advancing to their completion. III. CHAP. IV.

struck with fear.

A formidable fleet, with a considerable land The Army force was sent into France-but it seemed as if the soldiers had lost their wonted courage. lsaiah xiii. 7. were repelled, with great loss, from the French coasts; and, under the impression that Heaven fought against them, ingloriously returned to their own country. Indeed, the hearts of the people, were filled with forebodings of the Divine Judgments, which they attributed to the bloody deeds of their Governors. Nor were their fears vain.-The heavens grew black with storms—tempests of wind and rain, of hail and thunder: and floods in various parts, to an unprecedented degree, devastated and inundated the kingdom; and to mark with greater distinctness the DIVINE HAND, three fourths of the people were smitten with a contagious disease, resembling the plague; and so fatally did it rage, that in many Counties, there were not men sufficient to reap the harvest!

Whilst the judgments of the Almighty Governor thus terrified the people, every thing tended to shew that the anger of offended Deity was directed against the Rulers of the land. The Parliament was called, but refused to grant supplies: Every thing seemed to come to a sudden stop: the country spoiled of its strength, was sunk in disgrace, and reduced to despair—the Queen's malady rapidly increased—Cardinal Pole who had been raised to the Primacy, and was her SECTION confidential adviser and support, was struck with death—and the Queen herself, exhausted by disease, yielded up her unhappy and ignominious spirit; and the dark curtain of unalterable futurity fell on the direful transactions of her reign!

CHAP. IV.

WE have little patriotism, if we do not weep Mary's reliover this calamitous page of our history—and over gious characthe blasted reputation of a Queen, who was formed by nature with abilities, to adorn and benefit her country, but who was seduced from the paths of humanity, by the enchantments of Antichrist. Her soul was entirely despoiled by its influence of every amiable trait, and of every vestige of Christian virtue. And what renders this the more deplorable, is the fact—that she wished to be and was, a most religious woman. She was austere and self denying in her manner of life. She was strict and severe in her religious duties; and a stern and gloomy piety, was observable in all her deportment. In short, she was a good and consistent Papist. Had she been a Christian, how meek, and holy, and merciful would she have been! and with her abundant zeal, how "full of good fruits! without partiality, and without hypocrisy," but destitute of the spirit of Christianity, and with a mind formed on the principles of the Romish superstition, her reign

SECTION III. CHAP. IV. afforded free scope for the full development of its character. Nourished and fed by the Queen's authority, it expanded and grew out in all its hideous deformity, before the astonished eyes of the people; and stalked through the land like some inhuman monster, ready to devour without pity, the innocent and the helpless. Perfidious when it promised; oath breaking, when it swore. Proud in its oppression, tyrannical in its injustice, and vindictive in its cruelty.

Such, indeed, was the horror, inspired by its deeds during these five years, that the hearts of the people sickened, and their faces grew pale at the mention of its name for many generations—nay, through all generations to our own.—We have given liberty to the Tyrant-oppressor. We had forgot that its nature is "UNCHANGED AND UNCHANGEABLE! and that it will act consistently with its character, just to the extent of its ability.

CHAPTER V.

ELIZABETH .- FINAL TRIUMPH AND · OF PROTESTANTISM.

THE clouds and thick darkness which attended the SECTION conclusion of the last reign, and seemed to threaten the extinction of the British name, were suddenly dispersed; and a brighter sun arose than Elizabeth England had ever seen; designed, not only to en-succeeds. lighten her own happy isle, but to extend its cheering rays to the utmost extremities of the earth. At its first dawn, as if by a miraculous agency, the gloom which overspread the minds of the people disappeared—the pestilence and famine which wasted them, fled-and the hearts of all men instantly revived. Hope looked down from heaven with a benign and cheering aspect. arrayed in light, descended, once more to bless and instruct mankind. Christianity was ordained to prevail against the machinations of Popery and

III. CHAP. V.

III. CHAP. V.

SECTION to lend its powerful name and heavenly principles, to establish the prosperity of the nation, on a solid and imperishable basis.

Joy of the nation.

Elizabeth, on the death of Queen Mary, was at Hatfield, where she had lived for some time in great seclusion, devoted to the pursuit of learning and the demands of Religion. The violent advisers of the late Queen, were filled with apprehensions for their safety; but opposition was in vain. The tide had set in with irresistible impetuosity; and in right of her birth, and by the Act of Succession. Elizabeth ascended the throne. She was immediately proclaimed at Westminster, amidst the most unbounded demonstrations of joy. past sufferings seemed to be forgotten amidst the transports of the moment. "God, save Queen Elizabeth! Long and happily may she reign!" resounded from all sides. Even the adherents of Popery were obliged to disguise their feelings, and put on the semblance of joy. A sorrowful countenance, on that day, was considered criminal by the delighted people. In short, it was a day of national jubilee, and the Popish Priests, who could not join in this festival of mind, when a whole nation delivered from the shackles of an ignominious bondage, delight in the exercise of their recovered liberty, were obliged to retire from the animated scene, to hide themselves in corners and to vent their griefs in the inmost recesses.

III. CHAP. V.

Elizabeth, herself, who during the last reign, SECTION had lived in daily alarm, and whose life was, as we have seen, preserved almost by a constant miraele, when she heard that she was proelaimed Fitness of Queen, fell down upon her knees, and after a short beth for her pause, broke forth in the words of the Royal Psal-high station. mist: "It is the Lord's doing; and is marvellous in our eyes." Like all truly great minds, she was endued with a reverence for Religion; trust in divine Providence and a high regard for the Supreme Being. Indeed, her whole character, marked her out as an extraordinary personage, designed to accomplish the high and benevolent purposes of the Most High. She was at this period, twenty-five years of age. Her person was graceful, and as historians assert, her mien noble, her stature commanding, and her walk majestie. Her face was not adorned with all the properties of finished beauty; but her countenance beamed with an intelligence, which made all smaller defeets vanish. Her manner inspired awe, rather than affection: but when oceasion required, she could assume the most powerful charms, and adopt such a mixture of graee and majesty, as few were able to resist. Her spirit was great and magnanimous, her mind enlarged, and her understanding adorned with all the advantages of education and study. Besides the Greek and Latin, she was aequainted with all the European languages. Indeed, during the last reign she had been a most

III. CHAP. V.

SECTION indefatigable student, and had made considerable advances in the knowledge of History, Philosophy, Divinity, and Rhetoric. Her apprehension was quick, and her memory strong; and she delighted to dwell on the actions of the wise and great who had adorned her Country, and to set before herself the illustrious monuments of her predecessors. She would often speak of the mighty triumphs of the English, at Cressy, Poictiers, and Agincourt; and was accustomed to say, "These victories were more owing to the assistance of Heaven, than the arms of men"-a sentiment which it has been the design of this work to illustrate.

> Such was the gifted individual now called by Providence, to sway the English sceptre at a time of great difficulty and danger. The nation was involved in war. Its valuable possessions in France had just been lost. Pestilence and famine were wasting the land. The treasury was utterly exhausted, and all the evils of religious difference prevailed. But she was admirably fitted for the Her powerful mind soon began to act upon the disordered elements around her, and the glory and prosperity of the country were rapidly advanced, and permanently established.

Bonner abhorred.

On her arrival at London, she was met by the Nobility and Bishops, whom she received with great cordiality, except Bonner, whose atrocious cruelty, although under the sanction of law, made it impossible to notice him, without becoming

partaker of his crimes. When she arrived at the SECTION Tower, and entered those gates as Queen, through which she had, lately, been conducted as a prisoner, she remembered her low estate, and kneeling down, she returned hearty thanks to God, who had so bounteously changed her Prison to a Palace. And to shew the fine moral tone which then possessed her mind, one of her first acts was, to send a particular acknowledgment of gratitude to King Philip, for the important services which he had rendered her, during the life time of her sister; and to which, indeed, she owed her safety and life.

The Pope's

When the notification of her accession reached the Court of Rome, through her Ambassador, the false claims. Roman Prelate, Paul III, in his usual style, sent her a proud and insulting message—"That England was a Fee of the Papacy, and that it was a high presumption in her to assume the Crown without his consent, especially, since she was illegitimate: But if she would renounce her pretensions and refer herself wholly to him, she might expect all the favor that could consist with the dignity of the Apostolic See." On the receipt of this message Elizabeth was filled with high resentment, and recalled her Ambassador, which amounted as it were, at the very onset of her reign, to a declaration of war.

King Philip sent her a different message, and Philip's mes earnestly solicited her hand in marriage-a cir-sage.

SECTION cumstance which discovers the secret motives by which he was urged, when he protected Elizabeth in the last reign, from the resentment of her Sister. At present, the Queen did not absolutely reject his advances, but thought it prudent, in the infancy of her affairs, to allow the matter to rest in abevance.

> The state of her council next engaged her attention; and she resolved to retain such of the Ministers of the late Queen, as she had reason to conclude, were moderate and well disposed men; but at this early period, she discovered that discriminating judgment, for which she was ever remarkable, in advancing to her councils those distinguished men, Sir William Cecil and Sir Nicholas Bacon, whose names are famous in the annals of the world.

Cecil, Lord Burleigh.

The former of these individuals who is better known under the title of Lord Burleigh, was one of the most able and upright statesmen, which this country has ever produced. He was descended from a good family, and was educated at Grantham Grammar School, from whence he was removed to Saint John's College, Cambridge. soon became remarkable for his assiduity and attention to study; and in those literary studies he was fully prepared for that high station in the councils of his country, which it was his destination to fill.

He had married the daughter of Sir John Cheke, by whom he was recommended to the Protector Somerset, and was employed in important offices of the state, during the reign of Edward VI. He was preserved through the dangers of the succeeding reign for great purposes; and a few days after the accession of Elizabeth, he was raised to the rank of a Privy Councillor, and created first Secretary of State; and to him, must be allotted a great share of the prudence and wisdom and integrity, which adorned the transactions of this reign.

SECTION III. Снар. V.

Nor was Sir Nicholas Bacon inferior to his sir Nicholas colleague in office. He was also educated at Bacon Cambridge. He studied law at Grays Inn, and became so distinguished, that he was appointed by Henry VIII, as attorney of the Wards, a office in which he was continued during the Reign of Edward VI, and, happily, his great moderation and consummate prudence preserved him during the dangerous reign of Queen Mary. To this eminent person, Elizabeth committed the great seal, but his modesty, for which he was as eminent, as for his great qualifications, would not permit him to assume the name of Lord High Chancellor; and he adopted the humble name of Lord Keeper.

These arrangements having been made, the wheels of Government were immediately set in motion, and the action of the reign, rapidly advanced to fulfil its destined course. The corona-

Coronation, A. D 1559.

SECTION tion which took place in the month of January, was solemnized with great splendour and magnificence; and with such universal joy and satisfaction, that the anniversary of it was observed throughout the whole reign, as a Religious Festival.

Obstinacy of

Such was the early manifestation of the Queen's the Roman Ca-tholic Bishops. mind with respect to Religion, that the persecuting Bishops, who had so lately embrued their hands in blood, were exceedingly discouraged. They felt themselves so deeply committed to the cause, for which they had proceeded to such extremities, that they could not comply as they had done before, with the changes which they saw to be inevitable. This feeling prevailed so far, that none of them would assist Oglethorpe, Bishop of Carlisle, by whom the ceremony of the Coronation was performed.

Peace with France.

It will be remembered, that at the death of Queen Mary, the nation was involved in war with France and Scotland. Her council strongly recommended a peace, which she determined, if possible, to achieve. But the restitution of Calais opposed great difficulties in the way of the negotiation. At length it was agreed, that Calais should remain in the hands of the French for eight years; and at the end of that period, it should either be restored, or, they should pay a sum of Five hundred thousand pounds; upon which a general peace was concluded, much to the satisfaction of the people.

The Parliament now met, in which it was SECTION noticed that the Queen, had, in her Writs of Summons, assumed the title of Supreme Head of the Church of England, and a bill was enacted for restoring to the Crown the first fruits and tenths, which had been alienated during the last reign. Their next act was for the re-establishment of Po-LITICAL PROTESTANTISM, by which all the acts made against the Pope's power in the Reign of Henry VIII, were revived. They also enacted an oath, in which the Queen was acknowledged, "Supreme Governor in all causes, and over all persons" —a title which may be considered the true, as it is the last established, title of the Kings and Queens of England. The Queen was also empowered to grant commissions, for judging and reforming ecclesiastical matters. In this enactment was laid the foundation of the High commission Court, which was nothing more than distributing that power, which in the reign of Henry, was confined to one person.

> Conference A. D. 1559.

These innovations on the authority of the Pope awakened all the zeal of the Popish party, and the appointed. most flagrant and seditious language against the Government, was used in their public discourses: upon which, recourse was had to the arbitrary precedent which had been adopted by the late Queen; and a general prohibition not to preach, without license was issued. At the same time, an unexpected novelty was exhibited to the nation, unSECTION
III.
CHAP. V

der the sanction of Government. A public and solemn Conference was appointed to take place, between the Romish Bishops and the Protestant Divines. Nine persons were appointed on each side, to dispute on these three points—"Worship in an unknown tongue"—"The authority of every particular Church to alter rites and ceremonies"—and "The propitiatory sacrifice of the Mass."

Romish Bishops are obstinate.

The Conference was held on the last day of March in Westminster Abbey, in the presence of the Privy Council—both Houses of Parliament and an immense concourse of Spectators. was mighty and prevailed; and the applauses of the assembly were so much in favor of the speakers on the Protestant side, that the Romish Bishops became obstinately dumb, and refused to proceed according to the rules which had been prescribed. Nor was this all; the Bishops of Winchester and Lincoln, proceeded to inveigh against the proceeding: "That the faith of the Church ought not to be examined, but in a synod of Divines; that it gave too great encouragement to Heretics to dispute with them; and that the Queen and Council ought to be excommunicated, for suffering them to argue against the Catholic Faith, before a new tribunal." For this uncalled for rebuke, the two Prelates were sent to the The Lord Keeper dismissed the assembly with a terse, but significant announcement to all the Bishops !- "Since you are not willing that we

should hear you, you shall, very shortly, hear from SECTION us. " III.

Immediately after the breaking up of this Conference, the Parliament proceeded to the Re-es- Formularies tablishment of RELIGIOUS PROTESTANT- of Edward VI. ISM. The "Book of Common Prayer" with the Ordination Service, as appointed in the fifth year of Edward VI. was confirmed and established; and before the Parliament was dissolved, all the Religious Houses founded by Queen Mary, were suppressed.

CHAP. V.

A general Visitation was appointed, the Liturgy Integrity of in English, was introduced into all the Churches, the Church and images were removed without any tumult.-The Oath of Supremacy was offered to all persons holding ecclesiastical promotions—and it is a remarkable circumstance, affording demonstrative evidence, that neither the Revenues of the Church nor the Churches themselves, changed hands at the Reformation! for out of the nine thousand four hundred Ecclesiastical preferments, only fourteen Bishops, six Abbots, twelve Deans, twelve Archdeacons, fifteen heads of Colleges, fifty Prebendaries, and eighty Rectors, were dispossessed!-Hence it is evident, that the change which took place at the Reformation, did not affect the character of the Church as a Corporate body. It continued in the same line of propriety in which it had been from the beginning: the alteration was in its Doctrine and manners; and in this respect,

SECTION so far from being a schism, it was restored to the sacred unity of the Church, by establishing its III. CHAP. V. doctrines on the primitive and Apostolic model.

Vacant Sce filled up.

The next important step which occupied the atof Canterbury tention of the Queen and her ministers, was the selection of a suitable person to fill the See of Canterbury, which had become vacant on the death of Cardinal Pole, who only survived Queen Mary, the space of four hours. Both Cecil and Sir Nicholas Bacon recommended Doctor Matthew Parker to the appointment; and the Queen who was prepossessed in his favour, determined to raise him to that high dignity. He was a person of distinguished learning and piety. He had commenced his studies at Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, and afterwards became Tutor and Master of that College. In the reign of Henry VIII, he became chaplain to Queen Anne Boleyn; and in the reign of Edward VI, he was appointed Dean of Lincoln; but in the persecution of Mary, he was deprived of all his preferments, and retired into great seclusion: where he devoted his time to the noblest purposes, living amongst his books, in meditation and prayer. When he first received the news of his appointment, like his predecessor Cranmer, and with the same primitive spirit, he resolutely opposed it; and, it was some months before he could be prevailed upon to accept the dignity with which the Queen delighted to honour him.

The Queen's "Conge d'elire" was issued to the SECTION Dean and Chapter of Canterbury, July twentyeighth, 1559, and on the first day of August they, certified to the Queen, the election of Matthew Parker as their Archbishop, in order that it might be confirmed by her Letters Patent. Shortly after, a commission was issued for his consecration; and after that, a second, directed to Anthony, Bishop of Landaff, William Barlow, formerly Bishop of Bath, and Bishop elect of Chichester, John Scory, formerly Bishop of Chichester, and Bishop elect of Hereford, Miles Coverdale formerly Bishop of Exeter, John de Bedford and John de Thetford, suffragan Bishops, and John Bale, Bishop of Ossory, in order that all, or at least four of them, should proceed to the consecration of Parker.

The Election of Doctor Parker was confirmed on the eighth of December, by four of the Episcopal Commissioners; and on the seventeenth of December, they proceeded to his Consecration. The Act of Confirmation is to be met with, in Archbishop Bramhall's works—large fragments of it are quoted by the Author of the life of Archbishop Parker. The following passage is from Camden, a contemporary author, and one of the most exact and judicious writers which England has produced—"Matthew Parker, a man pious, learned, and of discreet behaviour, who from being Chaplain, in ordinary, to Henry VIII, had been appointed Dean of the Collegiate Church of Stoke

III. CHAP. V.

SECTION Clare, was duly elected Archbishop of Canterbury and consecrated at Lambeth, after the preaching of a sermon, the invocation of the Holy Ghost, and the celebration of the Eucharist, by the imposition of the hands of three who had been formerly Bishops—of William Barlow formerly Bishop of Bath, John Scory formerly Bishop of Chichester, Miles Coverdale formerly Bishop of Exeter, and John, Suffragan of Bedford.*"

Successional Church preserved.

I have been more particular in the account of ministry of the this transaction, because the Romanists have endeavoured to throw discredit upon the Anglican Ordination, as if by some informality, the succession of the Christian Ministry had been interrupted. But happily, for the peace and unity of the English Church, the public Records have been strictly preserved, and their testimony became too powerful to be successfully contradicted. The fact of Archbishop Parker's consecration, has been placed beyond all suspicion of doubt; and the Apostolic Ministerial succession of the Church of England, can no longer afford the shadow of a dispute. The commission which Christ gave to his Apostles, for perpetuating the Christian Ministry, has descended to us, and in its authority,

^{*} Camden, Eliz. p. 38. The original of this Consecration is yet preserved in the Registers of Canterbury, and in the Library of Corpus Christi College Cambridge, and may be seen in the Appendix to Courayer's Vindication; and the whole account perfectly agrees with the public Records which are in Rymer's Collection; but the Romanists allege without any foundation, that there is a doubt of Barlow's Consecration.

the several orders of the English branch of the SECTION Catholic Church, exercise their spiritual functions with one additional circumstance of immense importance and value. And it is an important consideration, which gives to the commission of the Church of England an authority, incomparably superior to that of the Church of Rome, that the former holds its commission with the true declaration of Christ's Doctrine, whereas the latter has adulterated the very purport of the commission, with the Inventions of Man; and indeed, to such a fearful extent, that it may be justly regarded as having abrogated the authority of its commission. -" Whosoever" says the Divine Oracle, "transgresseth and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ; HATH NOT Gop. He that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son."*

III. CHAP. V.

After the establishment of Archbishop Parker in the See of Canterbury, the other vacant Bish-19 appointed. opricks were filled up with the most learned Divines in the kingdom.—Their learning and piety shed a lustre on the reign which they adorned.— And no wonder: for it was a custom with Elizabeth, when an individual was recommended to her, to ask, "If there were not others to be found of greater learning and piety, to whom she might recommend the care of the Church."

Bishops wise-

An opportunity now occurred, which enabled the English Government to exhibit before the eyes

* 2. Epist. John, i. 9

SECTION of Europe, the vigour and capacity which animated its Councils.

English nation insulted by the King of

It will be remembered, that Mary the young Queen of Scotland, very much against the wish of England, had been married to the Dauphin of France. He had now become King, under the name of Francis II. and, in right of his Queen, who was nearly allied to the English throne, assumed the arms and title of King of England. This was intended, not only as an insult to Elizabeth, but as a pretext for invading the kingdom, and was eagerly hailed as a favourable opening, by the Romish party The Queen and her Ministers saw the formidable evils to which they might be exposed from this quarter, and resolved to seize the first opportunity to ward off the threatened danger.

In Scotland, the Mother of Mary was Regent during the minority of her daughter. She was violently opposed to the Reformation, which in that Country was carried on with great heat and imprudence. The people broke out into open insurrection; but she was so effectually supported in her arbitrary measures by the French, that they were driven to despair. In this extremity, they applied to Elizabeth. A treaty was concluded with the States of Scotland, the English flag was soon floating in the Frith of Forth, and a fine army penetrated Scotland by land. The French, though strongly fortified in Leith, were obliged to capitulate, and immediately to agree to

the terms of Peace dictated by Elizabeth—that SECTION the French should instantly evacuate Scotland, that the King and Queen of France and Scotland, should no longer bear the arms of England—that none but natives should enjoy office in Scotland Edinburgh —that during the Queen's absence, the Kingdom should be governed by twelve persons, seven of whom, should be chosen by the Queen of Scots, and five by the States; and that she should neither make Peace nor War without the consent of the States; and to complete the triumph, ships were dispatched from England, to convey the French troops into their own country.

By the vigorous and successful termination of this enterprize, and by her moderation towards the Scots themselves, at a season of great extremity, she gained so much their regard and confidence, that she converted the power, which her enemies had hoped to wield against her, into her strongest support and security; and obtained in that kingdom a permanent and powerful influence.

Indeed, from this moment we may perceive the unfolding of the Divine purposes, with respect to her Policy was the British Empire. James I. the son of Mary to accomplish. Queen of Scots, who was to succeed to the throne of England, on the death of Elizabeth, was not yet born, but the way for that great event in our history, was preparing. In the circumstances which we have just narrated, its foundation was laid, and in the wise and prudent policy which

III. CHAP. V. Treaty of A. D. 1560.

SECTION Elizabeth subsequently pursued in the affairs of that kingdom, the minds of the people were gradually prepared to follow the destinies of England, and eventually, to unite themselves with the English Nation. It is this grand object, which divine Providence was intending to accomplish, that can alone unravel many of the mysterious transactions of this reign.

The Pope virtually confirms the Reformation.

Whilst the noblest Princes of Europe were soliciting the hand of Elizabeth in marriage, the Pope, Pius II. with that artifice, which can suit itself to all occasions, wrote to her in the most affectionate terms, exhorting her to return to the unity of the Church. It is said that he promised to recal the sentence, which had been pronounced against her mother's marriage—confirm the Book of Common Prayer in English, and permit the people to use the Sacrament in both kinds. the Queen resisted his insinuations, whilst the Pope justified this change of policy in the Popedom, by affirming that he would humble himself even to heresy itself, inasmuch as whatever was done to gain souls to Christ, was becoming that See. The Pope though rejected in his first addresses still persevered; and when, in the following year, he sent the Abbot Nortiniago as far as Flanders, the Queen sent him a positive message, not to land upon her shores. And though the Emperor and the King of Spain earnestly entreated that he might be heard, she replied to them with some

of Rome, whose authority in England was totally abolished by Act of Parliament: but to the Pope's Nuncio she gave an absolute denial, which at once concluded the negotiation.

In the mean time, the King of France, Francis Mary Queen II died, and his widow the Queen of Scotland, of Scots returns home. made preparations for returning to her own country. She applied to Elizabeth for a safe passage, which Elizabeth promised on condition, that she would ratify the treaty of Edinburgh. This was reasonable; but the high spirit of Mary, yet untutored by the sad lessons of experience, which she had afterwards to learn, refused the condition, and embarked for Scotland, where she safely arrived.

Soon after her arrival, she sent her Secretary, Her Lydington, a man of great ability and discretion, dence with a message to Elizabeth, in which she departed from the prudence she had hitherto exercised in her native government; and which, under the circumstances, was not only impertinent but preposterous. Instead of ratifying the articles of the Treaty of Edinburgh, she offered to enter into a solemn league with Elizabeth, provided she should be declared by proclamation, or Act of Parliament, heir apparent to the Crown of England. Of course such proposals could not be entertained for a moment—Elizabeth and her advisers saw that such an acknowledgment would have divided the Na-

Her impru-

III.
CHAP. V.
Extensive
warlike preparations.

tion into two great parties, and essentially weakened the Government, by destroying its unity.

Whilst, however, they rejected the alliance of the Queen of Scots, on such grounds; with a cautious and prophetic policy, during the time of peace they made the most extensive preparations for war. Arms were purchased in Germany to a great amount: iron and brass cannon were cast; gunpowder prepared, which was now first made in England. The garrison of Berwick was strengthened. The castles within twenty miles of Scotland were rebuilt. Another was erected on the Medway, for the use of the shipping: the naval force was increased to a great extent, and furnished with twenty thousand able seamen. Commerce and trade were encouraged and extended; and Elizabeth acquired the title of "Restorer of the naval glory of England, and Queen of the North Sea!"

Their ultimate destination.

A. D 1562.

These preparations were made on the prospect of war with France, which was at that time in a fearful state of confusion and anarchy, on account of the Reformation, which was opposed with fatal violence by Charles IX, and his mother the Queen Regent. The parties were strong and powerful; the contest long and dubious; till at length, the Popish party fatally triumphed in the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, which I shall advert to in its proper place. At present, Queen Elizabeth, shewed her favour and concern for the

Protestants in Normandy; and sent them supplies SECTION both of men and money. But her great preparations, though not immediately necessary, were designed by Divine Providence, to be her protection and defence on a future day of peril, of which she was then altogether unconscious!

CHAP. V.

and entered into a league with the Kings of Spain designs frusand France; and a plan was formed for deposing Elizabeth, a design in which many noble persons in England were implicated. The parties were immediately arrested; and Arthur Pole and his brother, Great-grand Nephews of Edward IV, Anthony Fortescue, who had married their sister, and others, were arraigned for a conspiracy to with-

draw themselves into France; and from thence, to return with an army into Wales, and to proclaim the Queen of Scots, Sovereign of England. They confessed their guilt and were condemned; but their lives were spared because they were of

the blood royal of England.

The Pope had now returned to other counsels

The Pope's

In the midst of these plots, a Parliament was called, and it was thought necessary to pass some strong measures, for supporting the Queen's supremacy against the machinations and assumed authority of the Roman Pontiff. An act was passed for publishing the Bible in Welsh; and the Bible in Welsh. A. D. 1563. Convocation which sat at the same time, put a finishing hand to the Reformation, which had been in progress for thirty years, by a revision and

Parliament.

publication of the thirty ninth articles, in English SECTION and Latin, as in force at this day. III. CHAP. V.

Leicester proband.

Whilst these peaceful and important matters The Earl of were transacting in England, the French Papists posed as a hus- under the Duke of Guise, ever plotting against the peace of England, projected a marriage between the Queen of Scots and Charles of Austria; a match which it was the interest and policy of Elizabeth, if possible, to prevent, inasmuch as such an alliance would have brought the kingdom of Scotland under a foreign influence. The Queen therefore earnestly entreated her to take a husband out of England, and recommended to her, Lord Robert Dudley, whom she had raised to great honors. The sincerity of Elizabeth cannot be doubted. In expectation that her recommendation would be accepted, she created her favorite, Earl of Leicester, and promised Mary that if she would be obedient in this matter, she should, by Act of Parliament, be declared her sister, daughter and successor to the English crown.

> Commissioners were afterwards appointed by England and Scotland, to settle the preliminaries of this marriage; but it was frustrated by the secret influence of the parties. Leicester, himself, was averse to it, because his vain, ambitious mind aspired to the hand of Elizabeth herself.— The Queen of Scots was averse to it, because she contemplated a better match with the House of Lennox, nearly related to the crown of England,

by which she intended to strengthen her own title SECTION III. to that crown.

CHAP, V. In the mean time, the Queen of Scotland had, sent for the Duke of Lennox, under pretence of Lord Darnrestoring him to his forfeited inheritance in that ley preferred. A. D. 1565. country: and shortly after, she persuaded Elizabeth to allow his son, the Earl Darnley to follow his father, for the purpose of sharing with him in the joy of his restoration. But when she saw Darnley, possessing every grace and accomplishment of external form, and the next in the hereditary line of succession to herself, she deliberated no longer, but determined to make him King of Scotland.

They were married with great pomp and magnificence, and in all probability, although the ray the ruin of endowments of Lord Darnley's mind were not equal to those of his person, they would have been happy, had it not been for the cruel genius of her illegitimate brother, which presided over the destinies of the unfortunate Queen. as I can disentangle this most intricate portion of history, which prejudiced and contending historians have perplexed beyond measure, this person was the foundation of all her personal evils. vigilance was unwearied. He watched her every moment, and never rested in his opposition to her, till he had forced her into exile, and pursued her to the scaffold. Whether this man was in his conduct actuated by ambitious or patriotic views, is a difficult question for us positively to decide.

Evils of Scotland.

SECTION

Probably there was a mixture of both. But we must not enlarge, nor allow too much space to Scottish History, in this review of our own.

The Leader of the Protestant party, highly resented the marriage of the Queen with a Papist, the evils of which were greatly magnified by the violent harangues of John Knox and his adherents. The discontented party took up arms with the Earl of Murray at their head, but were routed by the Queen's army, and obliged to take flight into England.

The condition of Scotland was, at this time, so disordered, and the spirit of the contending parties so desperate, that their leaders considered themselves justified in adopting any measures, which should strengthen their interests. Acting on this infamous principle, the Earl of Murray, whilst in exile, did not scruple to sow the seeds of discord between the Queen and her husband, especially through the Earl of Morton who was officially attached to the person of the latter. Morton soon found a fit occasion for the accomplishment of his scheme, in the advancement of David Rizzio, whom Mary had taken into her confidence, and consulted on all occasions.

This man was an Italian, who first came to the Court of Scotland, in the train of some foreign Nobleman, and, on the departure of his master, remained behind as Mary's musician; but who, shortly after, by his address and ability, raised

III. Снар. V.

himself to a supremacy in her favour. The ban- SECTION ished Lords by every method in their power, inflamed the jealousy of the King, and Rizzio was cruelly murdered by several of the nobles, headed by the King himself. Murray and the other Protestant leaders were recalled; but Mary determined upon a deep and fatal revenge. She prevailed upon the King by her blandishments, to withdraw his personal authority, and to give up the other assassins to her vengeance! She then cast him from her, with disdain, and followed him with daily proofs of her displeasure and even hatred.— Nor was she long without supplying herself with another favorite, in the person of the Earl of Bothwell, to whose counsels she entirely resigned herself; and through his influence, even the assassins of Rizzio were recalled.

The unhappy King alone, was left as a fated victim to his own absurd and impetuous jcalousy, to which he had been excited by the artful insinuations of others, who sccretly laughed at the credulity which they had inspired; but this afforded no excuse for his crime, and upon his head the blood of Rizzio was to be expiated. Queen, who was to be the instrument of his punishment, and, of whose breast the demon of revenge had taken full possession, was preparing for herself a long train of retributory judgments.

Whilst the Earl of Bothwell advanced every Murder of Darnley. day, in favour and dignity, the King was treated A.D. 1567. SECTION III. Chap. V.

with contumely and neglect. He was so much wounded by the Queen's conduct, that he determined to retire from the kingdom, and, had actually made preparations for his embarkation, when he was suddenly seized, with an alarming sickness which was imputed to poison. A remarkable change was observable in the Queen's conduct. She visited the King at Glasgow, soothed him in his sickness, and caused him to return with her to Edinburgh; where he was lodged in a house, a short distance from the Palace, as a place of greater tranquillity. But the diabolical plot for his destruction was hastening to its accomplishment.-The Queen visited him, and shewed him every mark of attention and kindness; and generally reposed at night, in a room under his apartment: but one evening, she excused herself on account of the marriage of one of her attendants, at the solemnization of which, she wished to be present. And on that fatal night, it was determined he should perish. He was murdered in some inhuman manner; and to disguise if possible the deed, the house in which he slept was blown up with gunpowder.

Divine Justice pursues them. Volumes have been written to clear this guilty woman, from the crime of being the murderer of her husband. Her station and dignity preserved her, and her accomplices, from the awards of outraged law and justice: but the offended Majesty of Heaven, pursued the culprits,—hurled one from

her throne, to undergo every indignity, to spend SECTION her days in a prison, and end her life on the scaffold; whilst the other was ejected from his country as a fugitive and a vagabond, to drag out a forlorn and miserable existence in a foreign land; and at length, deprived of his senses, to end his days in a dungeon!

III. CHAP. V.

For the moment, however, their guilty purposes succeeded. Bothwell, who was effectually marries the Queen of Scotshielded from punishment by the supreme autho-land. rity, was, soon after, divorced from his wife, and with the most indecent precipitation, married to the Queen. The country was filled with dumb astonishment at the enormity of these proceedings, and the whole nation was involved in disgraee and infamy.

But a signal and sudden vengcance from an unseen and unerring hand, was even now preparing. throned. The indignant spirit of the nation, slumbered in sullen silence, ready in a moment, to be roused into fearful action. That moment was precipitated by an overt act of the parties themselves. This was an attempt by the Earl of Bothwell to gain possession of the young Prince—an attempt which no doubt, was sanctioned by the Queen. whatever purpose, this movement on the part of Bothwell and the Queen, was made, the whole nation were alarmed, and took up arms against the Sovereign. The contention was brief: Mary was taken prisoner, and obliged to resign her

Queen de-A. D. 1568. SECTION
III.
CHAP. V.

throne in favour of her son. Having effected her escape, she fled into England. On her arrival in that country, Elizabeth was inclined to receive her with sympathy and kindness; but her wary Counsellors, retarded the benevolent feelings of the Queen, and insisted that the mode of her reception required the most mature deliberation.—They advised that the Queen of Scots should be retained, till she gave satisfaction to the English Government, for having assumed the Arms of England, and for the murder of the late King of Scotland, who was an English subject.

Detained in Prison.

Commissioners were appointed to decide upon the conditions of her liberty, and her restoration to the throne of Scotland. It would be tedious to enter into a detail of their transactions. Suffice it to say, that every arrangement was frustrated, entirely by the Earl of Murray, who was at the head of the Scotch Protestant party, and Mary was detained a prisoner.

Whoever considers these circumstances with attention, and their important bearing on the future prosperity, tranquillity, and unity of the two kingdoms, must perceive, how these events, unknown to the parties themselves, were tending to secure these great purposes. What would have been the effect in Scotland, had Mary married the Earl of Leicester? Certainly, Elizabeth would have protected the marriage which she had solicited, and Mary must have been fixed on the throne of Scot-

land. What would have been the effect on Eng- SECTION land, whose future Monarch was to be received from Scotland, and whose education must have been under the direction of his mother? In all probability, the grand object of this reign, the establishment of Protestantism, would have been frustrated. It does appear that Queen Mary was made a victim for the welfare of the two kingdoms, and her own enormous wickedness prepared the way for that sacrifice; so that, whilst she was "justly punished for her offences," her personal restraint was for the national advantage.

III. CHAP. V.

In the mean time, the fame of the Queen of England, reached the utmost boundaries of the of Elizabeth. earth, and many foreigners of distinction were invited by it, to visit her Court. Amongst these, Cicely, sister to the King of Denmark, was attracted to see the splendour of her court, and to observe the wisdom of her Government. Whilst she tarried in England, she gave birth to a son, to whom the indulgent Queen stood Godmother; and gave him the name of Edward Fortunatus, and allowed him an annual pension.

An embassy also arrived from Muscovy, bringing with them, presents of the richest sables; and what was of more consequence to the national prosperity, they made the most advantageous offers of trade and commerce, which gave rise to the Russian Company: and it should not be omitted, in a patriotic history like this, that with these Am-

SECTION bassadors, returned Anthony Jenkinson, the first Englishman who sailed through the Caspian. afterwards published his Travels, which tended to enlarge the boundaries of geographical knowledge.

Rise of a cution.

Notwithstanding the prosperity of the Country, dreadful Perse- and the apparent solidity of the government, nothing could damp the fiery zeal of the Romanists for the recovery of their lost power. Emissaries from Rome, were sent to corrupt the Queen's subjects from their allegiance; and at the same time, a great and powerful confederacy of the Roman Catholic Princes was entered into, for the utter extirpation of heresy. At the head of this confedcracy was Philip, King of Spain, who had been singularly led to devote himself to the furtherance of this meritorious work. On his return from the Netherlands to Spain, the fleet in which he was conveyed, fell in with a dreadful tempest: fortunately, the ship in which he sailed, weathered the storm; but with such difficulty, and as it were, against all hope, that his safety was considered little short of a miracle. On reaching the shore, overcome with the sense of a presiding Deity, and affording another striking instance of the intolcrable spirit of the religion which he professed, hc fell upon his knees, and uttered a solemn vow, that the remainder of a life which had been so Providentially saved, should be devoted to the extirpation of heresy! To this vow, which

in the mind of Philip was the most meritorious he SECTION could make, and most becoming, in his estimation, to the perfection of the Christian character, must be traced the origin of the Spanish Armada! It would be unreasonable to impute it as a crime to Philip, that he made not a better vow. Evidently it was the best he knew how to make. It was the fault of that system, under the influence of which he had been brought up, and by the authority of which, he was blindly led. His vow was as religiously kept, as it had been sincerely made. His efforts were unremitting—his cruelties were intolerable—and it was in consequence of this inhuman vow, that he placed himself as we have just said, at the head of the confederacy, to carry his vow of extirpation, throughout the world. In furtherance of this object he entered into a secret compact with Catharine of Medicis, for the total destruction of the Protestants by fire and sword. In this bloody scheme, more destructive to the happiness and well-being of mankind, than had ever been enterprised in any age or nation, were associated two of the fiercest and most intolerant of men, the Duke of Alva, Philip's vicegerent in the Netherlands, and the Cardinal of Lorrain, uncle to the Queen of Scots.

The legitimate effects of this alliance soon fol- Elizabeth lowed. A persecution of the most fearful kind assists the Protestants. raged in France, under the Duke of Guise, in A. D. 1569. which, King Charles IX and his mother the

Снар. V.

SECTION
III.
CHAP. V.

Queen Regent, were obliged to join by the overwhelming power of the Romish faction. In the Netherlands, under the Duke of Alva, the most bloody cruelties were perpetrated. Many escaped to England, and were received with great kindness by Elizabeth! and the country which gave them shelter was rewarded; for to them, we are indebted for the introduction of the manufacture of serges; and the extension of our trade. The Queen also, as far as she was able, protected the Protestants of France from the powerful influence directed against them.

Rise of religious sects.

Whilst the excellent Queen and her wise Ministers, were thus engaged in succouring the distressed, in upholding the principles of Protestantism, and defending its professors in all parts of the world,—fanatical zeal began to harrass the Church, and to disturb the quiet of the Ecclesiastical order in England. It is the more necessary to notice the origin of this spirit, because it afterwards increased to such an enormous evil; dethroned the Monarch, and deluged the nation with blood and slaughter. These "unruly and vain talkers," deeply impressed with an idea of the superior excellence of the Geneva method of Church government, broke out into violent invectives against the order and discipline of the Church of England. Many of them, indeed, simple and well-meaning men, were made the instruments of the more designing; and it is well known, that their

opposition was excited by the emissaries of Rome. It will be necessary to observe, that the novelties which were introduced at this period, respecting the Ecclesiastical order and discipline, were imported from Geneva, by the English fugitives who had taken refuge there, during the persecution of Mary. Calvin was the reformer of the Genevan Church—a man of great genius and learning; but of a vehement disposition. He revolted entirely from the ancient regimen of the Church, and established an ecclesiastical discipline of his own, and a consistorial jurisdiction, with the power of inflicting canonical punishment. From hence the Puritans of Queen Elizabeth's day, drew their opposition to the Church of England. It was in that scheme that John Knox, the reformer of Scotland was educated. Many of their propositions were valuable, and might have been acted upon, with great advantage to the nascent interests of Protestantism.—But the Queen was peremptory, and the Puritans, rigid. The first presbyterian Church in England was founded at Wandsworth, in the year 1572. But I must not dwell upon these details further than to observe, that together with this departure from the Apostolic order, many fanatical opinions made their appearance. Indeed, such was the delusion inspired into vain and unstable minds, that it was considered lawful by them, to put to death any who opposed the truth of the Gospel. Of course they were to be the

SECTION
III.
CHAP. V.
Calvin,
Knox, &c.

SECTION judges of the Truth, and of the extent of the opposition which ought to be fatal. Such is the danger of vaunting and innovation in religion .-Nor was this a mere idle dream. It became a dogma to be acted upon; and one Peter Bourchet was tried at common law, and executed, for carrying this principle into practice.

Fanatics.

To this period must be traced the enthusiastic sect of the "family of Lere," entertaining the most wild and whimsical opinions; unsound in doctrine and corrupt in morals. This sect was of Dutch Whilst the Anabaptists, whose tenets were of German origin, created great mischief and disorder. There were two sects of these people, greatly differing in their opinions. One generally orthodox, but dissentient on the subject and mode of Baptism, whilst the other, was a set of wild, disordered fanatics, "proud, fierce, incontinent, abominable, and to every good work reprobate." And to these must be added, as disturbers of the Church, at this time, the Brownists, or followers of a refractory Clergyman. Their principles narrow and bigotted, were utterly at variance with every thing that had ever been conjectured in Church government. They asserted, that every Church ought to be confined within the limits of a single congregation! and that the government should be democratical. But their arrogance was unbounded; for they unchurched the whole christian world, and refused communion in hearing the word, in

public prayer and administration of the Saerament, SECTION not only with the Church of England, but all other Foreign Reformed Churches.* It will only be necessary to observe, in briefly referring the subject to our own days, that with the Puritans, symbolize the Presbyterians; the Baptists of the present day, with the former class of the Anabaptists; and the Independents, with the Brownists.

III. CHAP. V.

Whilst these disorders were prevailing in Eng- storm of Perland, which however, were curbed with a very es England. firm and powerful hand, by the Queen and her A.D. 1570. Ministers—the storm of persecution from abroad, was extending its influence to our shores. Eleven years had passed over the head of Elizabeth, since she had assumed the government, and with the assistance of her Council, she had conducted the nation amidst the greatest difficulties, in a steady eourse of improvement and prosperity. But every attempt which had been secretly made by the agents of the Church of Rome, were now more openly urged to perplex the government; and by more vigorous measures, prevent if possible, the permanent establishment of Protestant principles. By the efforts, chiefly of one individual, Nieholas Morton, a Romish priest, who had been dispatched by the Pope to denounce Queen Elizabeth as a heretie, great numbers were drawn from their allegiance, and formed into a powerful confederacy;

^{*} Neal's Hist. Purit. p. 208, vol. 1.

SECTION at the head of which, were the Earls of Northumberland and Westmoreland. The confederates having united their forces, with a body of ten thousand men, marched to the rescue of the Queen of Scotland. They were pursued by the Queen's army, under the Duke of Sussex. But the armies never met, and the rebellion was dispersed without a blow. Scarcely had this insurrection been quelled, when Murray the Regent of Scotland was assassinated; and the Romish Lords in that country, were induced to unite in the Foreign Popish alliance to which we have alluded. Immediately, Philip the King of Spain, the Duke of Alva, and the King of France, made the most earnest demands to the English government, for the release of the Queen of Scots. But in vain. Elizabeth sent them a most cautious answer. That however anxious she might be, to reconcile the Queen of Scotland and her subjects, yet in nature, reason, and honor, she was bound, first, to provide for the safety of her own kingdom.

Plenary bull

This was answered by loud fulminations from the Papal Throne. All his power was concentrated and directed against the Queen of England, in a plenary bull, which was affixed by some bold adherent of the Papacy, to the gates of the Palace of the Bishop of London. This extraordinary document was inscribed with the following title. declaratory sentence of our holy Lord, Pope Pius V. against Elizabeth the pretended Queen of England,

and the hereties, her adherents. In which also SECTION her subjects are declared absolved from their oath of allegiance, and any other duty they owe her; and whoever shall henceforward obey her are ineluded in the same anathema. In the body of the writing all the arrogance of that usurping power is manifest. The Pope declares himself to have "a power over all nations and kingdoms to pluek up, destroy, seatter, eonsume, plant, and build"—pronounces Elizabeth an heretie—deprives her of all her titles and dignities, and declares her accursed and excommunicated with all her adherents!

Rebellions in

The blind and infatuated Romanists responded to this authoritative declaration of their head; and consequence. their zeal was, every where, roused to second his authority. Insurrections followed, and eonspiracies of every form were entered into, against the Queen and her Government. But, happily, in vain. Every attempt was frustrated, and the genius of the Queen and her Ministers triumphed over all opposition.

After the tranquillity of the country was again Plot in favor restored, in order that a principal cause of these of Queen of disquietudes might be removed, Commissioners were dispatched to Queen Mary, who were empowered to make her the most reasonable offers. But, however reasonable, Mary had not sufficient eonfidence in herself to ratify them, but referred them to the Bishop of Ross; who, had before, been

III. Снар. V.

SECTION her ambassador, and who, after the death of Murray, was doomed to blast all the hopes of his unfortunate mistress. By his imprudence, in conjunction with the other Scotch Commissioners, the just and simple demands of the English Government were rejected; and to complete either his infatuation or his perfidy, together with Ridolpho, a Florentine and emissary of the Pope, he inveigled the Duke of Norfolk into a deep-laid plot, to attempt the life of Elizabeth. The bare mention of the atrocious deed filled the noble minded Duke with horror: but drawn on by a sceret attachment to Mary, he was ensnared by their devices, and involved by them in inextricable ruin. The Bishop of Ross who was really guilty, escaped the punishment he deserved, on the punctilio that he was an Ambassador: but the unfortunate Duke was left as a victim to justice; and paid the forfeit of his life, in the place, and on the same scaffold, where his father, one of the persecutors and murderers of Queen Anne Boleyn, met his fate twentyfive years before!

Massacre of St. Bartholomew.

A. D. 1572,

But the anti-Protestant alliance was still at work, and the infernal plot of Saint Bartholomew's day, in France, was now advancing to its perpetration; and, as a preparatory step, in order, if possible, to shew that it was founded on the most inhuman treachery, a splendid embassy was sent to England, to make proposals of peace. Peace was made; and the Queen Regent of France proposed and urged a marriage between her son, the SECTION Duke of Alençon and Queen Elizabeth. But. whilst these things were projecting, the direful scheme for the extirpation of Protestantism, was advancing in France. Preparations on a magnificent scale were made for the celebration of a marriage between the King of Navarre and the Lady Margaret, sister to the King of France.— To this solemnity, the heads of all the Protestants were invited. The most profound dissimulation prevailed. Promises were made of the most alluring description. It was affirmed that there should be a cordial renewal of love and friendship; and that a firm and lasting peace should be established amongst all parties! As a mark of esteem and honor, the Earl of Leicester and Lord Burleigh, were invited from England, and the sons of the Elector Palatine from Germany. Such was the detestable perfidy which preceded the massacre of Saint Bartholomew's day! To commence the revolting enterprises, the Queen Dowager of Navarre who was a zealous Protestant, was poisoned by a pair of gloves, before the celebration of the nuptials. But on the twenty-fourth day of August, 1572, at day-break, the bloody tragedy began.— The Admiral Coligni, the noble leader of the Protestants, was murdered in his own house, and his body thrown out of the window: his head was struck off and sent to the King and Queen-mother, whilst the mangled body was exposed on a gibbet

Снар. V.

HI. CHAP. V.

SECTION with the feet upwards. For three days the murderers ravaged the whole city; and more than ten v., thousand Lords, Gentlemen, Presidents, and People of all ranks, perished by their hands. horrible scene of things," says Thuanus, "when the very streets and passages resounded with the noise of those that met together for murder and plunder: the groans of those who were dying, and the shrieks of such as were just going to be butchered, were everywhere heard; the bodies of the slain thrown out of the windows; the courts and chambers of the houses filled with them; the dead bodies of others dragged through the streets, their blood running down the channels in such plenty, that torrents seemed to empty themselves in the neighbouring river; and in a word, an innumerable multitude of men, women with child, maidens and children, were all involved in one common destruction; and the gates and entrances of the King's palace all besmeared with their blood."

> From the city of Paris the massacre spread almost throughout the whole kingdom. It would be endless to mention the butcheries committed at Valence, Romayn, Rouen, &c. We shall therefore only add, that, according to Thuanus, above thirty thousand Protestants were destroyed in this massacre; or, as others with greater probability affirm, above one hundred thousand. But how was the news of this butchery received at Rome, that "faithful city, that holy mother of Churches!"-

How did the "Vicar of Christ, the successor of SECTION Saint Peter, and the father of the Christian world relish it?" Let Thuanus tell the horrid truth.— "When the news," says he, "came to Rome, it was wonderful to see how they exulted for joy .-On the sixth of September, when the letters of the Pope's legate were read in the assembly of the Cardinals, at the Church of Saint Mark, in the most solemn manner they gave thanks to God, for so great a blessing conferred on the see of Rome and the Christian world; and decreed that on the Monday after, solemn mass should be celebrated in the church of Minerva, at which, Pope Gregory XIII, and Cardinals were present; and, that a jubilee should be published throughout the whole Christian world; and the cause of it declared to be, to return thanks to God for the extirpation of the enemies of the truth and church, in France. the evening the cannon of Saint Angelo were fired to testify the public joy; the whole city illuminated with bonfires, and no one sign of rejoicing omitted, that was usually made for the greatest victories obtained in favour of the Roman church."

This inhuman massacre, unprecedented in the annals of cruelty and blood, is, of itself, sufficient eral disgust. to condemn the system of Popery, for ever, in the estimation of every son of humanity. It spread a general horror through all Europe; and filled the minds of the people of England with such indignation, that it was with great difficulty, the

Creates gen-

III. Снар. V.

SECTION Queen prevented the nobility from fitting out a great armament, at their own expense, against France. Fenelon, was at that time, the French ambassador to this country, and he was so shocked at the transaction, that he declared that for the first time, in his life, he was ashamed of being a But it had one good effect as it res-Frenchman. pected England. It shewed the Queen, the character of her enemies and the danger to which she was exposed, from the powerful alliance which had been formed against the Protestant Religion; and prcparations were made against any exigency that might arise. Portsmouth was strongly fortified. The navy was strengthened. Musters of the train bands were made, in every county; and the youth were, everywhere, exercised in arms. Precautions which were, afterwards, of great importance.

The Duke of Alva and Don John.

The Netherlands still continued in great confusion. The ferocious Duke of Alva, who boasted that in the space of two years, he had dispatched by the hand of the common executioner, thirty-six thousand souls, was succeeded by Don John, a man of great vigour of mind and perseverance.— His boundless designs could not be confined within the narrow limits confided to his trust; his ambitious mind aspired to greater things, and he formed a design of rescuing the Queen of Scots; and, having formed a matrimonial alliance with her, to lay claim in her right, to the Crown of England. With a depth of dissimulation, worthy of

CHAP. V.

the school in which he was educated, he professed SECTION the greatest good-will towards Elizabeth, whilst at the very time, he had obtained the sanction of the Pope to carry into execution the project which he had designed. The English Government were fully acquainted with his real designs: and this discovery laid the foundation for the alliance of Elizabeth with the revolted Princes of the Netherlands, which ultimately secured the liberty and independence of that illustrious Republic; whilst Don John himself was carried off, by poison, through the treachery of his inhuman kinsman, Philip, who feared him for his ambition!

Death of the

But during these transactions, an irreparable loss was awaiting the English councils, in the Lord Keeper. death of the Lord Keeper, Sir Nicholas Bacon; a man of singular wisdom, learning and eloquence. He possessed a comprehensive knowledge of English law and equity; and by the prudence and solidity of his judgment, was a principal instrument in settling the foundations of the ecclesiastical and civil government of the country. His modesty and humility were as remarkable as his endowments. On one occasion, when Queen Elizabeth remarked to him that his house at Redgrave was too small for a person of his rank and station.-"Not so Madam," he replied, "but your Majesty has made me too great for my house." This able Statesman and faithful Counsellor, served his country as Lord Chancellor, for more than twenty

Boundaries of Commerce and Navigation extended. A. D. 1580.

SECTION years, through a period of great difficulty and danger, and deserves to be had in honor in the grateful recollections of his Countrymen.

> But previous to the death of Sir Nicholas Bacon, the boundaries of commerce had been extended by a treaty with the Emperor of Turkey; and a Company was established to trade in all parts of his dominions. A voyage of discovery had been fitted out, under Martin Frobisher, who was the first Englishman that ever attempted the North-West passage: and this year, Sir Francis Drake, returned home from a successful circumnavigation of the Globe. His ship in which this great enterprize was achived, was drawn up into a creek near Deptford, as a monument of his skill and bravery.* The Queen honored him with her presence at dinner, and conferred on him the Order of Knighthood.

Duke of Anjou and Queen Elizabeth.

If there ever was a person with whom Queen Elizabeth entertained serious thoughts of marriage, it was the Duke of Anjou, brother to the King of France. His addresses were most devoted and persevering; and, undoubtedly, had he been a Protestant, he would have succeeded in obtaining her hand: but such was the dread of the nation to a Popish alliance, and such the fear of her Council, on weighing the consequences of such a

^{*} I am told that the furniture of the drawing room in the family mansion at Buckland Abbey, the seat of Sir Frayton Fuller Drake, is entirely made of the wood of this celebrated Ship.—June 30, 1839.

union, that it was abandoned. Indeed, to as- SECTION suage the fears of the people, and to convince them that there was no intention of restoring Popery, it was found necessary to make a public example; and two Priests who had been confined for treasonable practices, were brought to trial version of Religion. and executed. The spirit of their enterprize was remarkable:—After their condemnation, one of them, named Campeio, being asked, "Whether Queen Elizabeth was a lawful Queen," refused to answer: but when he was asked. "Whether he would join with the Queen or the Pope, if he should levy forces against her," he openly avowed and testified, under his hand, that he would join with the Pope. Magnanimity worthy of a better cause! but which displays the power of that Imposture, which under the assumption of a divine warrant, deludes the unhappy race of men with its sorceries; and urges them to sacrifice body and soul in support of its abominations!

About this time, died Buchanan, the celebrated tutor of James VI, son of Mary Queen of dies. Scots, who was now eighteen years of age. was to the instructions of this accomplished scholar, that James was indebted for those enlightened principles, which enabled him, on his accession to the throne of England, to steer so wisely in the midst of the conflicting opinions of that period. On the death of his tutor, Elizabeth who watched over the youthful Monarch, with the care and

III. CHAP. V.

Strange per-

Buchanan A. D. 1582. SECTION
III.
CHAP. V.

Walsingham to obtain an audience with the King, for the purpose of giving him advice and counsel in the management of his kingdom. The particulars of this conference are well worthy the attention of the lover of history. I mention the subject as a link in the series of events connected with our History; and to shew, how Elizabeth and her Council watched over the future Sovereign of England.

Death of the Archbishop. A. D. 1583.

The Church of England, also, suffered a great loss in the death of Grindal, who had sueeeeded Parker in the See of Canterbury. He was a man of great gravity, piety, and moderation; and in the midst of the violent dissensions which prevailed in the Church, respecting the Romish vestments and other matters which were retained, he pursued a eoneiliatory eourse, for which he was much eensured by Queen Elizabeth, who peremptorily refused to give way to the innovating spirit of the Puritans. He was sueeeeded by Whitgift, well suited by his piety and learning, to fill that high station: but he was of a different temper to his predecessor; and saw the reasonableness and necessity of reducing the Clergy to a uniformity in the celebration of Public Worship. This was, no doubt, the only rational mode to be pursued; and if with this, a just spirit of eompromise had been united, the greatest good must have resulted. it was, the Archbishop by his persevering ability,

in a great measure accomplished his purpose, and SECTION restored the body of the Church to peace and uniformity. But in the struggle, the Church lost CHAP. V. many of her most pious and zealous defenders; a circumstance, which in succeeding times, crippled her efforts against the furious assaults of the Presbyterians and Independents.

The immortal Bacon was now no more; but walsingham another Instrument was raised up, who has alrea-Secretary of dy been introduced to the reader, in the person of Sir Francis Walsingham, if possible, still more eminently fitted to detach and unravel the incessant plots and stratagems of the Romish party. He was descended of an ancient family at Chisselhurst, and was, undoubtedly, one of the most penetrating Statesmen and refined Politicians that any age ever produced. He possessed an admirable talent in discovering the recesses of the heart, and the secret motives of men. At the time of his advancement to be Secretary of State, the country was filled with designing men, and the Government in hourly peril: but nothing could elude his vigilance. He sat, like a magician, amidst the plots and stratagems of his foes, and by the spell of his penetrating genius, dissolved every attempt against the safety of the State. It would be tedious to follow in all their details, the various Plots which obtained at this period; but we must not overlook the fact of their existence, for the grand design of the Reign was to frustrate the schemes of Popery

SECTION and

and faction; and to establish Protestantism on a solid basis.

Violence of the Popish party.

A. D. 1581.

Even at this time. Ireland was made the seat of constant Rebellion, which brought great misery and wretchedness upon the unhappy and deluded people, and must have been attended with immense private, as well as public, suffering. Nor did the emissaries of Rome, whilst there was any hope of restoring their lost power, cease their efforts in England. As long as Mary, Queen of Scots lived, she afforded a kind of centre, round which, their plots and designs revolved: and, their restless and mischievous interference, at length, brought that unhappy and guilty Princess to the Scaffold. At this juncture, they conducted themselves with peculiar violence, attacked the Queen through the medium of the press; and excited the people "to do for her what Judith did for Holofernes." It was found necessary to put the laws. into active operation; and, at one time, more than seventy Priests were taken into custody: but instead of inflicting upon them the extreme penalty of the law, a much wiser plan was adopted, and they were ordered to be shipped out of England.

Conspiracy of Throgmorton.

This state of excitement ended, for that time, in the conspiracy of Throgmorton, a gentleman of Cheshire, the existence of which, was discovered by intercepting a correspondence between him and the Queen of Scots. Many noble persons were implicated in this conspiracy, especially Mendoza the Spanish Ambassador, who was sent back with SECTION great disgrace, to his own country. It appeared from the confession of Throgmorton, who alone, suffered on this occasion, that the whole affair originated, in the general movement of the Catholic Princes of Europe, under the Duke of Guise, and was intended to prepare the way for the invasion of England.

CHAP. V.

No sooner was this conspiracy defeated, than Release of Queen Mary herself, wearied with such repeated Mary prevent. failures, made overtures to Elizabeth, in which she appeared willing to submit to the reasonable terms, which had been proposed to her. whilst this negociation was pending with every prospect of success, it was marvellously frustrated by the following incident.—It happened that, Creighton, a Scotch Jesuit, as he was sailing from the Netherlands, was encountered and taken by some Dutch Pirates. He carried with him certain papers, which he was observed to tear and throw But in vain—the wind counteracted overboard. his purpose, for the shreds being blown back into the vessel, were conveyed to Sir William Wade, the Queen's Ambassador, who patching them together, discovered a new design of the Pope, the King of Spain and the Duke of Guise, for invading England, and establishing Mary upon the Throne!

Upon this discovery, the most strenuous determination was manifested by the nation at large, to

SECTION resist all aggression of the Popish confederates against the Throne of Elizabeth, and the libertics of the country; and, a union of all the nobility and strength of the realm, was formed under the name of "The Association." The ardour and spirit manifested by the Members of the Association, convinced Queen Mary, how fruitless any attempts would be, to shake the stability of the Protestant Monarchy; and she sent in, a full and entire compliance with the terms of agreement; and proposed to enter into a strict league and amity with the Qucen of England, and even desired that she herself might be comprehended in the Association!

Voice of two Kingdoms raised against her.

Elizabeth was entircly satisfied, and the hour of Queen Mary's liberty was at hand. But alas! it was now too late; another enemy, more powerful than Kings or Qucens, was awakened against the unfortunate Princess, and the hour of her final destiny approached. She had not yet paid the penalty of her extraordinary crimes; and her retributory punishment, was now hastened by the irresistible power of public opinion. When the favourable negotiation with Mary Qucen of Scots became generally known, the voice of the People of England was strenuously raised up against her But that of the People of Scotland deliverance. was still more vehcment. They insisted, that both Kingdoms would be entirely ruined, if shc were allowed any share in the administration of

Government; and that the Reformed Religion SECTION would be persecuted and rooted out, if the Papists should again be restored to power. This demonstration of the national will was most decisive, and Mary was still detained a prisoner.

CHAP. V

But the rejection of her suit, when she was, she dispairs. most probably, sincere in her professions, seems to have thrown her into despair. She delivered herself into the hands of the enemies of her Country, and wrote letters to the Pope and the confederate Princes, no longer to delay their designs; and urged them, whatever might befal her, to hasten their plans for the invasion of England.

A. D. 1585.

In the meantime, Parliament met and confirmed the Association, giving it the sanction of Law; confirms the and passed many severe Statutes against the sociation. Jesuits and all others, who should form any designs against the State, on the authority of the Bull of Pope Pius V. Whilst the Queen, perceiving that the storm was gathering from without, and that the Roman Catholic Princes were aiming a deadly blow at her, and the Protestant Religion, endeavoured to strengthen herself by foreign alliances. She sent Sir Thomas Bodley to the King of Denmark, and to the Protestant Electors of Germany, whilst she did not forget King James of Scotland, but sent Sir Edward Wotton to assure him, how sincerely she stood affected towards him, and to remind him how necessary it was, for their mutual security, to preserve a strict and inviolable friend-

III. Снар. V.

SECTION ship between the two kingdoms. Elizabeth also entered into a league with the confederate States of Holland, openly espoused their cause, and took them under her protection. The eyes of all Europe were now turned towards her; and all Protestant Christendom admired the heroic courage with which she conducted the affairs of her Kingdom. Nor was this all. In order to avert the attention of the King of Spain, from his design of invading England, the Queen and her Council determined to carry the war into his own territories; and, an expedition of twenty-one sail of the line was fitted out under Sir Francis Drake, against his possessions in the West Indies. The enterprize was attended with great success, and the fleet returned, laden with much booty. Nor must it be omitted, that on their return, the ships touched at Virginia, where Sir Walter Raleigh had planted a colony, and brought from thence Ralph Lane, the first man, who imported tobacco into England.

The glory

A. D. 1586.

Whilst this and other naval enterprizes were and folly of the carrying on, the Earl of Leicester, advanced, suddenly, to the height of his glory. He was appointed General of the Queen's auxiliary Forces, dispatched to Holland, where he was received with the greatest honors, gifted with absolute authority, and entitled Governor and Captain General of Holland, Zealand and the confederate Provinces. He had now every opportunity of signalizing himself and benefiting his country; but he had neither capacity nor conduct to serve the cause, for which he was exalted to honor. His ambitious vanity, and cupidity were gratified. He possessed ample means of gratifying his base and inordinate desires: and, like every other thing which he undertook, it ended in his disgrace. In this campaign, the brightest ornament of the English Nation was rable Sidney. extinguished, in the death of Sir Philip Sidney. He was the admiration of all men, and possessed every accomplishment of body and mind. was admirable as a soldier, a gentleman, a scholar, and a christian. His last words to his attendants were; "Govern your will and affections by the word of your Creator. In me, behold the end of this world, and all its vanities!" His obsequies were solemnized with great magnificence in Saint Paul's, and King James of Scotland wrote his Epitaph, an honor justly due to so excellent a person.

The opening of this year was signalized by the discovery and defeat, of a formidable conspiracy vage. against the Queen and Nation, which commenced with a person of the name of John Savage, who had been sedulously trained, principally by a Romish Doctor of the name of Gifford, to entertain a belief that it was highly meritorious, in the sight of God, to assassinate Princes who had been excommunicated by the Pope. His attention was directed to the Queen of England; and he con-

SECTION III. CHAP. V.

SECTION sented to undertake the dangerous and difficult task, and, indeed, entered into a vow for its accomplishment. The Conspiracy daily strengthened, but to throw the Queen and her Council into a state of security, a book was diligently circulated, in which, the Papists are exhorted to attempt nothing against their Prince; but with meekness to submit, and to use no other weapons than Prayers and tears!

Babington is drawn into it.

In the mean time, Ballard a seminary Priest of Rheims, was chosen, as a suitable instrument, to assist Savage in the accomplishment of his vow. He had an interview in France with Mendoza and Charles Paget, on the subject of the meditated invasion; and, then, hastened to England in the habit of a soldier, under the name of Captain Foscu. By the advice of Mary Queen of Scots, he discovered the whole design to Babington, a young gentleman of Derbyshire, who had been recommended to her attention by the Bishop of Glasgow. He was well suited for their purpose. He was of an ancient and respectable family; and his fortune, generosity, and frankness of character had gained him great influence, and the strong attachment of many kindred minds. Amongst these was Chydiock Fishbourne, a gentleman of Devonshire, of whose romantic friendship many interesting particulars are preserved in the "Curiosities of Literature." The whole band of Conspirators were men of ardent and confiding minds;

and were inviolably united in their purpose, by SECTION mutual confidence and esteem.—Another proof of the wickedness of that system, which gives to crime, the sanction of Religion, and throws a sacred lustre upon the deeds of blackest night!

Снар. V.

Discovery.

By such delusive principles of action were these noble minded young men ensnared to their destruction! Had they been determined villains, urged on, by malignant feelings, against the life of the Queen, they would have hastened, at once, to their bloody purpose; but they were not: and they appear, on the page of history, rather as actors in a tragedy, than as perpetrators of murder; still, they were determined in their purpose, secure in their mutual fidelity, and confident in the accomplishment of their fatal design. But God had raised up an instrument in the Secretary Walsingham, who unravelled all their plans. By means of his agents, he was present in all their deliberations—he watched and perplexed all their movements. Babington carried on a correspondence with Mary Queen of Scots.—Every letter was conveyed to Walsingham, and copied by him, before it reached the parties for whom it was designed; and, to shew how completely he was master of their proceedings, a painting, which had been made of the Conspirators standing in a group, with Babington in the midst, and intended as a present for Mary, before it reached its destination, was actually copied, and presented to Elizabeth! One of

SECTION the conspirators named Barnwell, a peron of noble family in Ireland, was known to the Queen, and a few days, afterwards, as she was walking abroad with a slender retinue, she observed Barnwell walking at a short distance, and turning to the Captain of her guard, she said in a voice loud enough to be heard, "Am not I well guarded who have not a man in my company, who wears a sword!"

The Conspiand tried.

How far Walsingham, whose object was to asrators arrested certain all the parties connected with the conspiracy, would have carried his policy, it is impossible to say.—His plans were hastened by the Queen, who said, "that by not avoiding danger when she might, she should seem rather to tempt, than to trust Providence." Accordingly, by giving them a slight intimation that he was acquainted with their designs, Walsingham contrived to scatter the band of Conspirators, and, thus, prevented all attempts at resistance. They were afterwards, individually, apprehended and secured, except Lord Windsor's brother, who was never found. His next care was to secure the papers of the Queen of Scots. Thomas George was dispatched to acquaint her with the affair, but not till she was mounted for riding; she was, then, not permitted to return, but conducted, under a shew of honor, to the seats of the neighbouring Gentry. At the same instant, other Gentlemen of high consideration, were appointed to seize her Secretaries,

and to forward all her papers to the Council.— SECTION They were opened in the presence of the Queen; a great number of letters from foreign parts were found, and copies of answers which had been sent by her, with, at least, sixty alphabets of private characters. Nothing could now be concealed -all the artifices and intentions of the anti-Protestant party, were before the Queen and her Council. The conspirators were brought to trial, and all of them, fourteen in number, executed.

III. CHAP. V.

The guilt of the Queen of Scots was fully confirmed by the testimony of her own Secretaries, who confessed, that every thing was dictated by the Queen herself, and copied in secret characters. Sir Edward Wotton was immediately dispatched to the King of France, to lay before him the whole subject of the conspiracy, with the letters and correspondence of the Queen of Scots, in order to justify themselves in whatever steps it might be thought necessary for them to take.

Long and serious debates ensued, as to the manner in which they should deal with Mary. length, it was agreed, that she should be brought A.D. 1586. to trial, under the authority of a law which had been passed in this reign, "against such as raised rebellion, invaded the kingdom, or attempted any violence against the Queen." The most noble and learned persons, in the kingdom, were empowered to act as Commissioners on this solemn occa-

At of Scots senten-

sion, and, before their tribunal she was found SECTION guilty and sentenced to death. III. CHAP. V.

But the Queen hesitated to give effect to the

of Execution.

The Warrant law by delaying the Warrant for her execution .-Her Council strongly advised, and her Parliament demanded the sacrifice, as the only method of securing the peace and happiness of the kingdom: but the Queen still hesitated, and her anxiety was increased by frequent embassies which arrived from foreign powers, especially from the King of Scotland, to intercede for Mary's life. But whilst the mind of the Queen was thus irresolute and wavering, the discovery of another plot for her assassination, which originated with the French Ambassador, gave additional force to the demands of the nation; and she was induced to empower her Secretary, Davison, to draw out the warrant for execution, under the great Seal. But next day, changing her purpose, she sent him a message, by Sir William Kellegrew, that the warrant should not be drawn. Davison, immediatly apprised the Council with the alteration in the Queen's mind, but the warrant was now in their possession, and they determined that the opportunity should not be Accordingly, they assured Davison of their protection, and the warrant was dispatched on its fatal errand.

Motives of Elizabeth.

When Elizabeth received intelligence of the death of Mary, she was filled with grief and indignation, and abandoned herself, for a time, to lamentation and tears. She severely rebuked her SECTION Council for not waiting her pleasure; and commanded Davison to be tried by the Star Chamber, where he was condemned, in a penalty of ten thousand pounds: nor was she ever afterwards reconciled to him. Hume, in his perplexing account of this transaction, considered this conduct, the result of artifice and duplicity. But impossible. There was no reason for dissimulation. Her own subjects demanded the death of the Queen of Scots, as an act of justice to the nation. She resisted all foreign interference on the subject, as an insult to the independence of the nation; She abruptly told the Scotch Ambassador, when he was pleading for a respite for eight days, that she would not grant an hour. Undoubtedly also, she had a strong and secret aversion to execute the supreme penalty of law upon Mary. She reflected that she was a Sovereign Princess; and a high sense of the royal prerogative, was in her mind, an insuperable obstacle. Indeed, the following letter which she wrote with her own hand, to King James of Scotland, will place this subject Letter to the beyond dispute. "My dearest Brother, would to heaven, you knew, but not felt, the inexpressible grief that overwhelms my mind, upon this deplorable accident, which has happened, contrary to my meaning and intention; which, since my pen trembles to mention, you will fully understand. I request you, that as God and many others can

III. CHAP. V.

King of Scotland.

SECTION witness my innocency in this matter, so you will also believe, that if I had commanded it, I would never deny it—that as I know this has happened deservedly on her part; so if I had intended it, I would not have charged it upon others. There is not any that loveth you more dearly and taketh more care for the good of you and your affairs. God preserve you long in health and safety!"

Policy of Walsingham

The great crisis of the reign was now approaching; and the expedition, which had been for three years, under preparation by the King of Spain, at that time, the most powerful monarch of Europe, was now ready to venture upon its design. the most profound secresy was observed; and whilst many conjectured, none but the Pope of Rome, was fully acquainted with its destination. Philip had conveyed this inteligence to him, by a letter; in which he earnestly sought his benediction and prayers, for the success of his enterprize. But the inventive and penetrating genius of Walsingham, who had been raised up, by an overruling Providence to conduct the counsels of England through the intricacies and surprising dangers of that day, determined, if possible, to gain possession of this secret. Nor was his determination in vain. Walsingham had ascertained, that the secret was lodged with the Pope, from some person who had access to the council chamber of Philip; and by means of a Venetian Priest, whom he retained in his interest, at Rome, he obtained a copy of the

letter which was in the hand-writing of Philip, SECTION and the contents of which, he had not yet divulged to his Privy Council. The original was taken out of the Pope's cabinet by a Gentleman of his bedchamber, who stole the key out of the Pope's pocket whilst he slept! By this timely discovery, Walsingham was enabled to counteract the designs of the Spanish king, and, actually, by his dextrous management, retarded the expedition a whole year. For, he caused the Spanish bills at Genoa, which were to supply the expedition with money, to be protested; and, thus, by cutting off the very sinews of war, he prevented them from putting to sea; whilst to give the finishing stroke to his policy, Captain Drake was dispatched, with a fleet, to the coast of Spain, where he entered their harbours, destroyed their shipping, and performed prodigies of valour; whilst Cavendish, in the East, was carrying havock and desolation into all parts of the Spanish dominions.

In England, all was bustle and activity: The Earl of Essex. Earl of Leicester was recalled from the Netherlands, in disgrace. Indeed, he was a bad man, and ambitious, for wicked ends—he brought no honor to his Country, and his actions form no necessary link, in the events of its history. Elizabeth treated him as he deserved, but overcome by his artful entreaties, she averted from him the vengeance, prepared for him, by her Council. sooner had the storm blown over his head, than

· III. Спар. V.

Ш. CHAP. V.

SECTION he devised new schemes of ambition; but being thwarted by Lord Burleigh and Hutton, who had succeeded Bramley, as Lord Chancellor, he retired from court with disgust, and, shortly after, ended his inglorious career, in death.

Spanish Armada. A. D. 1588.

Rumours of the intended expedition against England, had now spread over all parts of the world; and the minds of men were held in painful suspense, as to the result of the enterprise. Immense sums of money had been lavished upon it, and the preparations, which had extended over a space of four years, were now completed. The Spaniards confident of success, called it "The invincible Armada," a word which in their language means "a fleet of men of war." It consisted of two hundred and fifty ships, most of which, were greatly superior in strength and size, to any that had been seen before. It had, on board, near twenty thousand soldiers, and eight thousand sailors, besides two thousand volunteers of the most distinguished families in Spain. It carried two thousand six hundred and fifty great guns, was victualled for half a year, and contained such a large quantity of military stores—as only the Spanish Monarch, enriched by the treasures of the Indies, could supply. The troops on board, were to be joined by thirty-four thousand more, which the Duke of Parma had assembled, in the neighbourhood of Nieuport and Dunkirk. transporting these, he had, with incredible labour,

provided a great number of flat bottomed vessels, SECTION and had brought sailors from the towns of the Baltic to navigate them. Most of these vessels had been built at Antwerp; and, as he durst not venture to bring them from thence, by sea, to Nieuport, lest they should have been intercepted by the Dutch, he was obliged to send them along the Scheldt, to Ghent, from Ghent to Bruges, by a canal which joins these towns, and from Bruges to Nieuport, by a new canal which he dug for the This laborious undertaking, in which several thousand workmen had been employed, was already finished, and the Duke now waited for the arrival of the Spanish fleet! hoping that, as soon as it should approach, the Dutch and English ships, which cruised upon the coast, would retire into their harbours.

On the other hand, the Queen with incredible industry, made suitable preparations for opposing such a formidable Invasion. Lord Howard of Effingham was appointed Admiral; and under him, served Drake, Hawkins, Frobisher; all of them renowned, as seamen of courage and capacity.-The principal fleet was stationed at Plymouth. smaller squadron, consisting of forty vessels English and Flemish, was commanded by Lord Seymour, second son of Protector Somerset, and lay off Dunkirk in order to intercept the Duke of Par-The land forces of England were more numerous than those of the enemy, but inferior in

III. CHAP. V.

III. Снар. V.

SECTION point of discipline and experience. An army of twenty thousand men was disposed, in different bodies, along the South coast, with orders to retire backwards and waste the country, if they could not prevent the Spaniards from landing; twentytwo thousand foot and one thousand horse, commanded by Lord Hunsdon, were reserved for guarding the Queen's person, and appointed to march whichever way the enemy should appear. In the midst of the general consternation, the Queen alone was undaunted. She issued all her orders with tranquillity; animated her people to a steady resistance; and employed every resource, which either her domestic situation or her foreign alliances could afford her. She even appeared on horseback in the camp at Tilbury; and riding through the lines, discovered a cheerful and animated countenance, exhorted the soldiers to remember their duty to their country and religion, and professed her intention, though a woman, to lead them into the field against the enemy, and rather perish in battle, than survive the ruin and slavery of her people. "I know," said she with intrepidity, "I have but the weak and feeble arm of a woman; but I have the heart of a King, and of a King of England too!" The heroic spirit of Elizabeth communicated itself to the army, and every man resolved to die, rather than desert his station.

> The Spanish Armada was ready in the beginning of May; and it is sufficiently remarkable, to

be noticed as an intervention of Providence, that SECTION its sailing was retarded by the death of the Marquis of Santa Croce, the Admiral, one of the most, experienced Captains of the age, and by that of the vice-Admiral, the Duke of Paliano. mand of the expedition was, therefore, given to the Duke of Medina Sidonia, a man entirely inexperienced, in sea affairs.—A circumstance, which in some measure, served to frustrate the whole design; which was also rendered less efficient, by some other accidents. Nor was this all.—Upon leaving the port of Lisbon, the Armada, next day, met with a violent tempest, which sunk some of the smallest of their shipping, and obliged the fleet to put back into the harbour. After some time spent in re-fitting, they put again to sea: but Providence still watched its movements. descried by Fleming, a Scotch pirate, who was roving in those seas, he immediately sailed towards the English fleet, and informed the Admiral of their approach.-Effingham had just time to get out of port, when he saw the Spanish Armada, coming full sail towards him, disposed in the form of a crescent, and stretching the distance of seven miles, from the extremity of one division to that of the other. The English Admiral considering, that the Spaniards would probably be much superior to him, in close fight, by reason of the size of their ships and the number of their troops, wisely resolved, to content himself with harassing them

CHAP. V.

SECTION in their voyage, and with watching attentively, all the advantages which might be derived from "storms, cross winds, and such like fortuitous accidents." It was not long, before he discerned a favourable opportunity for attacking the vice-Admiral, Recaldo.—This he did in person; and on that occasion, displayed so much dexterity in working the ship, and in loading and firing his guns, as greatly alarmed the Spaniards for the fate of their vice-Admiral. Several other rencounters occurred, and in all of them, the English proved victorious, through the great advantage which they derived from the lightness of their ships, and the dexterity of their sailors. The Spaniards, however, still continued to advance, till they came opposite to Calais; there, the Duke de Medina having ordered them to cast anchor, he sent information to the Duke of Parma of his arrival, and entreated him to hasten the embarkation of his Tarnese accordingly began to put his troops on board. But, at the same time, he informed Medina, that agreeably to the King's instructions, the vessels which he had prepared were proper only for transporting the troops, but utterly unfit for fighting; and for this reason, till the Armada was brought nearer, and the coast cleared of the Dutch ships which had blocked up the harbours of Nieuport and Dunkirk, he could not stir from his present station, without exposing his army to certain ruin, the consequence

of which, would probably be the entire loss of the Netherlands. In compliance with this request, the Armada was ordered to advance; and it had arrived within sight of Dunkirk, between the English fleet on the one hand, and the Dutch on the other, when a sudden calm put a stop to all its motions. In this situation, the three fleets remained for one whole day. About the middle of the night a breeze sprung up; and Lord Howard had recourse to an expedient which had been happily devised on the preceding day. Having filled eight ships with pitch, sulphur, and other combustible materials, he set them on fire, and sent them before the wind, against the different divisions of the Spanish fleet. When the Spaniards beheld these ships, in flames, approaching towards them, it brought to their remembrance the havock which had been made by the fire ships, which had been employed against the Duke of Parma's bridge, at the siege of Antwerp. The darkness of the night increased the terror with which their imaginations were overwhelmed, and the panic flew, from one end of the fleet to the other. Each crew, anxious only for their own preservation, thought of nothing but how to escape from the present danger. Some of them, took time to weigh their anchors, but others cut their cables, and suffered their ships to drive with blind precipitation, without considering, whether they did not thereby expose themselves to a greater danger than that, which

SECTION
III.
CHAP. V.

III. Силр. V.

SECTION they were so solicitous to avoid. In this confusion, the ships ran foul of one another; the shock was dreadful and several of them received so much damage as to be rendered unfit for future use.

> When day-light returned, Lord Howard had the satisfaction to perceive, that his stratagem had fully produced the desired effect. The enemy were still in extreme disorder, and their ships widely separated and dispersed. His fleet had lately received a great augmentation, by those under Lord Seymour, and Sir William Winter, who had left sufficient force to guard the coast of Flanders. Being bravely seconded by Sir Francis Drake, and all the other officers, he made haste to improve the advantage which was now presented to him, and attacked the enemy in different quarters, at the same time, with the utmost impetuosity and ardour. The engagement began at four in the morning and lasted till six at night.

> The Spaniards displayed in every rencounter the most intrepid bravery; but, from the causes already mentioned, they did very little execution against the English; while many of their own ships were greatly damaged, and twelve of the largest were either run aground or sunk, or compelled to surrender. It was now evident that the purpose of the Armada, was utterly frustrated. The Spanish Admiral, after many unsuccessful rencounters, prepared therefore to make his way home; but as the winds were contrary to his

return through the channel, he resolved to take SECTION the circuit of the Island. The English fleet followed him for some time; and, had not their ammunition fallen short, through the negligence of the public officers in supplying them, they had obliged the Armada to surrender at discretion.

CHAP. V.

Such a conclusion of that vain glorious enterprise, was sufficiently illustrious to the English, entirely lost.

but the event of their escape was fatal to the Spaniards. The Armada was attacked by a violent storm in passing the Orkneys; and the ships having already lost their anchors, were obliged to keep at sea, while the mariners, unaccustomed to hardships, and unable to manage such unwieldy vessels, allowed them to drive on the Western Isles of Scotland, or on the coast of Ireland, where they were miscrably wrecked. Not one half of the fleet returned to Spain, and a still smaller proportion of the soldiers and seamen; yet Philip, whose command of temper, was equal to his ambition, received with an air of tranquillity the news of so humbling a disaster. "I sent my fleet (said he) to combat the English, not the elements. God be praised, that the calamity is not greater." This calamity, however, was sensibly felt all over Spain, and there was scarcely a single family of rank in the kingdom, that did not go into mourning for the death of some near relation; insomuch, that Philip, dreading the effect which the universal face of sorrow might produce upon

SECTION the minds of the people, imitated the conduct of the Roman senate after the battle of Cannœ, and published an edict to abridge the time of public mourning.

Elizabeth's care for her successor. A. D. 1589.

The reign, which had now accomplished its grand object, rapidly advanced to its conclusion. Elizabeth had reached the summit of her greatness and prosperity. In the benevolent purposes of the Supreme Governor, she had been made the instrument of humbling the Popish power, which had, for ages, triumphed over the liberties of mankind; and to complete her satisfaction, Sir Philip Sidney returned from Scotland, bringing the most satisfactory account of the state of the King's mind, whom she had long designed as her successor .-He charged Sir Philip to declare his perfect reconciliation to the Queen, and his entire devotion to the Protestant Religion, and his firm purpose to preserve an inviolable friendship between the two kingdoms. The Queen continued to watch over him with the most careful solicitude; and by her advice, attended with the most costly presents, he shortly after contracted marriage with Ann the daughter of Frederick, King of Denmark.

Death of Walsingham. A. D. 1590.

These mighty events, of such consequence to the future prosperity of the country, were followed by the death of that exemplary man and eminent statesman, Sir Francis Walsingham. He was one of the greatest Patriots which adorn the annals of our history. He devoted his whole time,

CHAP. V.

and all the resources of his capacious mind, to the SECTION service of his country; and at his death, afforded a singular proof of his integrity and singleness of mind; and, it ought to be gratefully remembered by his countrymen, that the man, who for so many years, had had the control of the public purse, died so poor, that his friends were obliged to bury him privately, by night, lest his body should have been arrested for debt.

France, throughout all this period, was plunged State of France in the evils of civil war. It would be endless to enter into a detail of all the treachery and cruelty exercised by the Popish party in that country; and which was, at last, permitted to prevail. The humanity of the English Government, and its sincere desire for the prevalence of Protestant principles, frequently urged them to interfere; and at this time, the French King, Henry IV, who was a Protestant, solicited the aid of Queen Elizabeth, against the formidable Popish factions which prevailed, and resisted his authority; and the Earl of Essex, who now appeared on the stage of public life, was dispatched to his assistance at the head of a chosen body of men: but to little purpose.—The strife was desperate, and the King to end the contest, embraced the Roman Catholic religion!-Fatal resolve! to which I apprehend, in a great measure, may be traced the disastrous Revolution of 1792. But to return. Still new

SECTION plots of the most vicious character, were invented by the Romanists. A person, of the name of Husket, was sent on a mission from the English exiles abroad, supported by the counsel and money of Spain, to induce Ferdinand, Earl of Derby, to assume his title to the English throne, derived from his great grandmother Mary, who was daughter to Henry VII. Boundless promises of support were made to him, if he would advance his claim; and, on the other hand, he was threatened with the most direful vengeance if he should dare to refuse. The Earl, however, justly fearing lest some snare was laid for him, impeached Husket; who on his own confession, was condemned; imprecating curses upon the heads of those, by whose counsel he had been induced to act. But Husket's execution did not save the unfortunate Earl, who died, in the most deplorable manner by poison!

Wicked designs of the Papists.

But no sooner were the unwearied Papists disappointed in one project, than another was attempted. Their grand design was now to make the Infanta of Spain, a centre for all their machinations; and a book was written, the joint labour of three noted persons—the Jesuit Parsons, Cardinal Allen, and Francis Eaglefield. 'The scope of this work, was to prove the descent of the Infanta from Constance, daughter of William the Conqueror, in which they entered into such minute genealogical computations, as confounded all the disquisitions of Heraldry.—But it suited their purpose.

III.

CHAP. V.

Frederick

Would, that they had allowed such means to SECTION But this slow and uncertain method of effecting their purpose, was far from satisfactory. Assassins were hired abroad to attempt the life of the Queen. But not finding an immediate occasion, her life was attempted by poison, and one of her Physicians, Frederick Lopez, a Jew, was bribed for that purpose. This wretched man. made a full confession of his crime; and the day after, Francis Cullen, an Irish fencing master, was executed for engaging to assassinate her.

During this time, incessant expeditions were fitted out against the power of Spain, both at private and public expence, in which the most heroic deeds were achieved and immense treasures pillaged from the Spaniards. It would require a volume to speak of these enterprizes, conducted by men, whose names deserve to stand high in the naval annals of their country, Sir John Norris, Sir Walter Raleigh, Sir Martin Frobisher, Richard Hawkins, son of the celebrated Sir John Hawkins, and James Lancaster. But the chief utility of these expeditions, was the nautical skill and enterprize acquired by our countrymen, which laid the foundation for their superiority over all other nations.

But the Queen's Council having found a leader on whose judgment and courage they could de-Earl of Essex. pend, determined upon a more decisive step, and sent out a splendid expedition under the Earl of

Rise of the A. D. 1591.

SECTION Essex who had been advanced to great power.— All the eminent men of that day were engaged in this enterprise. The fleet sct sail with secret orders, which were not to be opened till they had passed Cape Saint Vincent;—the first time I find this custom on record. The damage occasioned to the Spaniards by this expedition, in all parts, was beyond precedent, and surpassed the bounds of calculation. On their return they were received with eminent marks of the Queen's favour, especially the Earl of Essex.—But, unfortunately, this nobleman's aspiring temper, too much emboldened by success, made him presume upon the favour of his Royal Mistress; and he shewed his displeasure at certain appointments which had been made, during his absence. This extravagant pride, which he had not judgment to control, as it was injurious to his country, so it laid the foundation of his own ruin.

> In the following year, the King of Spain, whose resources were boundless, in the hope of retrieving his past defeats, made great preparations against England, and the Earl of Essex was again dispatched to meet him, with a fleet of one hundred and twenty sail. In this expedition the spirit of pride which haunted him, was manifest, in a serious quarrel which he entertained against Sir Walter Raleigh, who had landed, without his permission, and made a successful attack upon the Spanish town of Fayall. On the return also of

SECTION

III. CHAP. V.

the fleet, he was again displeased at several promotions which had taken place. Sir Robert Cecil, son of Lord Burleigh, had been appointed , Chancellor of the Duchy, which he had intended for one of his friends, But, what more particularly offended him, was the honor which the Queen had conferred on the Lord Admiral Howard, who had been created Earl of Nottingham. This promotion, to which that nobleman was entitled, for his high services, gave him precedence over the Earl of Essex, inasmuch as he was, from his station, a chief officer of the kingdom. However, on this occasion, the vain glory of Essex was fully gratified; for he was created Earl Marshal of England.

> Parliament. A. D. 1593.

The ninth Parliament of this reign had now been In this Parliament, the executive assembled. government brought in many solid and useful laws, which were enacted; and the House voted an address of congratulation to the Queen. From this address, which is an authoritative record. will best be seen what was the grand object designed by Providence, in this reign. After remarking favorably on the laws which had been passed, they congratulate the Queen on the restoration OF THE TRUE RELIGION; THE HAPPY GOVERN-MENT OF THE KINGDOM: AND ITS DELIVERANCE FROM FOREIGN ENEMIES.

It had hitherto been the policy of the Queen and her Advisers, to prevent the French nation France. from uniting with their inveterate enemy, the

SECTION King of Spain. But, at length, in spite of all their efforts, by the interest of the Pope, France was prevailed upon, to enter into a Treaty of alliance with Spain. Upon this, it was strongly debated at the Council Table, whether it would not be more advantageous for England, to endeavour to make peace with Spain. At this debate a remarkable circumstance occurred. The wise and sagacious Burleigh inclined for peace; but the Earl of Essex, with all the warmth and inexperience of his youth, strongly urged the continuance of the War, and affirmed, that no peace could be made with Spain, which would not be dishonorable to England. The Lord Treasurer remarked to him, that he breathed nothing, but blood and slaughter. The debate continued for some time, with much warmth on the part of Essex, when Lord Burleigh drew from his pocket, the Book of Psalms; and, as if prophetic of the future, without speaking another word, pointed to the verse. "The bloody minded man shall not live out half his days. "* This debate occasioned the Earl of Essex to publish an apology, and reasons in justification of his opinion.

Pride of Essex.

But another incident occurred, in which this gifted, but undisciplined nobleman was concerned, which strongly marked the predominant evil of his disposition, and set on fire the whole train of his passions, so as never to be extinguished.

^{*} Psalm lv. 23.

happened at a debate respecting Ireland, in which SECTION the Queen was present, with the Lord Cecil, the High Admiral, and Wendebank, clerk of the closet, that the Queen proposed Sir William Knolles, as the fittest man for the difficult task of subjugating Ireland. Essex obstinately asserted, that Sir George Carew was greatly to be preferred to him. But the Queen was inflexible; and Essex forgetting himself, turned his back upon his Sovereign, as if in contempt of her opinion. The spirit of her fathers was roused, she gave the insolent Earl a box on the ear, and commanded him to leave the Council chamber. This was too humiliating for the high and chivalrous spirit of Essex to bear. He was stung with resentment, and laying his hand upon his sword, declared that he would not have submitted to such an indignity, even from her Father. The Lord Burleigh endeavoured to soften his resentment, which he, in some measure, effected, and a reconciliation ensued. But the wound was never healed in the breast of Essex. This was the last business, in which that great and distinguished statesman, Bur- 1.ord Burleigh. leigh engaged. He had pursued a long, and arduous, and patriotic course; and never did mortal man, run a more glorious race. He was endowed by God, with singular abilities for his high station. His learning and attainments were profound. His wisdom, oracular. His integrity, unimpeachable. His piety sincere, and his industry unpar-

CHAP. V.

SECTION alleled. He was not only the ornament, but the grand support of the Councils of his country. His services were so valued by the Queen, that sho entertained for him the most profound respect and esteem. She would never permit him to continue standing in her presence, but desiring him to sit, would remark: "My Lord, we make use of you, not for your legs, but for your head." Her estimation of his worth was still further exemplified in his last illness. On one occasion, when she was visiting the couch of her dying Minister, on entering the door of the appartment, his attendants desired her Majesty to stoop her head, she generously answered. "For your Master's sake I will stoop, but not for the King of Spain." Nor was the struggle long; his strength had been already consumed in the service of his country; and after a few days, he peacefully resigned his soul in the 78th year of his age. England, these were thy worthies, raised up by an Almighty power, to conduct thee in that auspicious course in which He had determined thee to move, and to build thee up, as an Exemplar State, amongst the nations of the Earth! Let the name of Burleigh be honored by posterity to our latest descendants, as the great adviser of Queen Elizabeth in all her contests, for the Establishment of our Protestant Constitution and the Restoration of the Catholic Church in these Realms.

His Death, A. D. 1598.

Nor is it a little remarkable, that Philip the SECTION King of Spain and the great antagonist of England, ended his fatal career at the same juncture; a person of great sagacity, perseverance and foresight; and who had scarcely lost a day since his Philip. memorable vow, in his endcavours to extirpate heresy by fire and sword. In the execution of that vow he had waded through rivers of blood. his treaties, alliances, artifices and wars were to carry it into effect. In the furtherance of his schemes what tongue can tell the cruelties he perpetrated, the agonies he inflicted, and the lives he destroyed!

Hc was unsuccessful in all his Foreign wars; but fastened the fatal bondage of Popery on his own unhappy country; which it is now, after a lapse of three centuries, shaking off, amidst all the horrors of civil war and intestine convulsion. his hour of retribution had arrived; and I have it in my power, to draw aside the curtain of his deathbed, and, to lay open to the reader, the secret spring of all his actions. A short time before his death, he sent for his confessor, who immediately waited upon the anxious and dying Prince. Confessor! said he, as you occupy THE PLACE OF GOD, I protest to you, that I will do every thing you shall say to be necessary, FOR MY BEING SAVED; so, that what I omit doing will be placed to your account, as I am ready to acquit myself of all that shall be ordered to me." This extraordinary record is preserved in the "Curiosities of

SECTION Literature,"* and is more important, when placed in its proper connection, than thousands of controversial volumes on the system of Popery. was not vindictive. He was not of a malignant disposition. He was not cruel. He did not persecute Protestants to the death, because he was insensible to the claims of Christianity.—All his most cruel, bloody acts, were dictated by a high sense of religious obligation! In this brief discription the whole genius of Popery is exhibited. It has usurped the authority of God, and by its power, depraved and prejudiced man, is enabled to wield the sword of the Most High. 'Philip believed his Confessor to be "in the place of God" to him. His desire was to be "SAVED," and he appealed to him for his sincerity, and enquired, whether he had done every thing to secure it.— His crimes, therefore, must not be imputed to him, but to his religion. How awful is the delusion! How supernatural and mighty its influence! and how strikingly is the situation of its unfortunate victim pourtrayed, in Holy Writ-" He feedeth on ashes: a deceived heart hath turned him aside. that he cannot deliver his soul, nor say: Is there not a LIE in my right hand?" +

Advance of the Country.

The grand integral portions of the British Empire were now fast advancing to an Incorporation, which was to consolidate its strength, and to extend its power and influence to the remotest boun-

Page, 295, Vol. 1.

+ Isaiah, xliv. 20.

daries of the earth. The accession of Scotland was to take place, by the descent of the English crown to the Sovereign of that kingdom; and Ireland, which had been a kind of dependency upon England, since the time of Henry II, was now under the vigorous counsels of Elizabeth, to be brought Ireland. under the full authority of the English sceptre. Through the whole of this reign, Ireland had been the scene of endless insurrections, and the cause of infinite troubles to England. The insubordination of the Irish people, had offered a favorable opportunity to Philip, the King of Spain, for promoting his hostile designs against Elizabeth. Partial invasions of Ireland had been attempted by the Spanish Government, many years before the fitting out of the "Invincible Armada," -and now an army of several thousand Spaniards, attended by a Pope's Nuncio, had landed on the Irish shore, intending to form a junction with the Earl of Tyrone, who was at the head of a most formidable rebellion. The power of the rebels increased daily, and they committed the most frightful ravages in all parts of the country. To quell such a formidable rebellion, was a difficult enterprise; and it was the subject of deep debate, who should be sent on such an important work. The Queen and her Council considered the Earl of Essex too rash and inexperienced, for such an undertaking: but he aspired to it; and his secret enemies urged him to undertake it, in the hope that, it would prove

SECTION cIII. CHAP. V.

Invasion of A. D. 1599.

SECTION his overthrow. Preparations were made, and in the end, the Earl of Essex was appointed Deputy of Ireland, and General of the English forces.

> But "his heart was lifted with pride," and his counsels were rash and imprudent. He allowed opportunities to pass, which might have been followed up with advantage, and lost time in pursuing trifling successes, which could lead to no important result. The Queen was highly incensed at his movements, blamed his whole conduct, and freely told him, that, she believed that he had other thoughts in his head, than doing service to his Prince and his country. Essex was exasperated by these reflections; and at the first rise of his resentment, resolved to hasten into England with a select body of men, to chastise his enemies, and overpower them by force. By the entreaties of the Earl of Southampton, he was deterred from putting this design into execution: but instead of attending to his duty, and rectifying his past misconduct, with an infatuation which discovered the evil influence under which he laboured, he left his command, and without permission, returned into England; where he was, by the Queen's order, committed to the custody of the Lord Keeper. He was succeeded as Deputy in Ireland, by Mountjoy; who may be termed the Agricola of Ireland. cellent commander entered upon his task with great zeal and energy; fortified all the principal towns of the kingdom, afforded no rest to the rebel

forces—soon drove them into the fastnesses of the SECTION country, and entirely subdued the rebels in Ulster and Leinster, and indeed, in all places was victorious. Sir George Carew was not less successful in Munster, where he prevailed against the forces of the titular Earl of Desmond: and thus for the present, the war was triumphantly concluded, and the final subjugation of Ireland greatly advanced.

The ACTION of the Reign now rapidly advanced to its consummation. Essex, after a confinement of six months, was arraigned with great formality before the Queen's Council, for his misconduct in Ireland; and by the sentence of the Court he was degraded from all his offices and civil employ-By this blow he appeared to be awakened. He became so submissive and sensible of his faults, that the Queen granted him his liberty; advising him for the future, to make discretion his Keeper—to retire into the country, and by no means to visit the Court. He was still more affected by the Queen's clemency, and sent her a most humble and submissive message, with which the Queen was so much gratified, that she said, "would to heaven his actions were answerable to his words! he has long tried my patience, I must now try his humility." Essex grew confident of her returning favour, and his humility vanished, with the prospect of returning prosperity; and he ventured to ask the Queen for the monopoly of

CHAP. V.

SECTION
III.
CHAP. V.

sweet wines. True to her purpose of trying his temper, she answered, That she must first understand the value of it: that benefits were not to be bestowed blindfold; that a spirited horse must be kept short of provender, in order to bring him under due management. This unexpected answer was more than he could bear. He was fired with indignation, and urged on by his secret enemies, he blindly rushed into the most desperate counsels, which hastened his destruction.

Death of the Earl of Essex.
A. D. 1601.

He secretly raised soldiers, fortified his house, where he had assembled more than three hundred Gentlemen of rank and fortune:—but the Queen. having dispatched a messenger to the Lord Mayor to preserve tranquillity in the City, sent the members of her Privy Council to the Earl's house, who, immediately made many of them prisoners, whilst he, rushing out with his principal followers, endeavoured to raise the citizens in his cause: but no one answered his appeal; and returning to his house, after a fruitless resistance, was taken, and shortly after, suffered on the scaffold the just reward of his deeds. Thus fell the Earl of Essex, the victim of pride and vain glory; by which the influence of his noble rank, his undoubted abilities, and his personal courage were lost to his country: nay, by its fatal indulgence, he became a public burden and disgrace, and his name has descended, covered with dishonour.

III.

The Queen had now assembled her last Parlia- SECTION ment, in which there prevailed the most perfect unanimity and good feeling.—For, in an address, Chap. v. to the Queen, in which the Commons condemned The Queen's the practice of monopolies, the Queen addressed address to her Parliament. them in a speech that deserves to be written in letters of gold, and inscribed on the walls of all our palaces. After observing, that she would not allow any privileges which might be injurious to her subjects; she added, "The splendor of Royal Majesty hath not so blinded my eyes, that I should suffer licentious power to prevail over Justice. am not one of those Princes, who can be deceived by the glory of a name. I know the Commonwealth is to be governed for the good of those committed to me, not of myself to whom it has been entrusted: and I am sensible that an account must one day be given before a Superior Judge. I think myself most happy that, by God's assistance, I have so prosperously governed the Commonwealth; and that I have had such loving subjects, that for their good I would most willingly part not only with my kingdom, but with my life."

Philip, indeed, the general persecutor of Protestant Christendom, was no more; but the exterminating war which he had commenced, was carried on, in Flanders, with increasing fury. confederate States, however, were invincible; and with the help of the English Queen, defended themselves with great fortitude and success. Nor

SECTION was this all. The unwearied Spaniards dispatched a formidable armament to assist the disaffected in Ireland, who had not yet relinquished their hopes This expedition was under Don of final triumph. John D'Aquila, who, to shew his sacred errand, published a flaming manifesto, in which he assumed the title of "General of the Catholic King, in God's war, for maintaining the truth in Ireland."

Tyrone's rebellion. A. D. 1602.

He was immediately joined by Tyrone and the principal rebels, which swelled his army to more than six thousand men, with a considerable body of horse: but the Lord Deputy with his wonted vigour, without waiting for a reinforcement, with nothing but the remnants of an army, attacked them with his usual bravery. They were routed with great slaughter, and the whole expedition, which at one time, had the most formidable prospects of success, disappeared at one blow, and melted away like snow in summer. Don Alfonzo O'Campo was taken prisoner, with three other Spanish leaders and six ensigns; one thousand two hundred men were slain.—And whilst this expedition was so suddenly dispersed, the greatest permanent good to England was achieved. Spaniards were finally expelled from the country —the Rebels entirely subdued—the Queen's authority fully established—the hearts of the Protestants revived—and Ireland, for the first time, conquered!

The Pope's

Every thing was now tending to its close. The SECTION Pope, who perceived that the illustrious Queen in the course of nature, must soon follow her distinguished Statesmen, and be removed from the seat of power, which she had so long upheld and adorn- attempts. ed, boldly sent two 'Breves' into England; one addressed to the Clergy and the other to the laity, in which, he assumed the authority to exclude any person from the English Crown, however nearly allied by blood, who would not swear to use his utmost endeavours to restore the Roman Catholic This Breve was aimed at the King of Scotland, and laid the foundation, as the celebrated Camden affirms, for the Gun-powder Plot, which will be developed in its proper place.

The principles of Protestantism were now fully contest established in the Realm.—That the Pope of among the Papists. Rome can have no civil or Ecclesiastical authority in England—That the Bible alone is the "Infallible standard of faith and morals; and that the visible Catholic Church can have no other temporal head than the Sovercign power of the realm. Of the triumph of these principles which are simple and reasonable, the Romanists themselves, became important witnesses, in the famous contest which arose at this period, between the order of the Jesuits and the Romish Priests. The secular Priests in their books, highly extolled the Queen, and made it appear—"That during the first eleven years of the reign, not a single Papist had his life

SECTION III. CHAP. V.

called in question, on account of his Religionthat even in the ten years which followed the publication of the Bull of Pope Pius V, and the rebellion of the Papists, not more than twelve Priests had been put to death for treason, till the year 1780, when the Jesuits crept into England—they asserted, that the wicked designs of the Jesuits threw every thing into confusion; and enforced the making of severe laws against them—that by the procurement of Parsons, not less than fifty Jesuits had been yearly sent, to disturb the peace of England.—That Parsons, the arch-Jesuit, incited the Spaniards to invade England; and set up the title of the Infanta of Spain to the English crown.—That Holt, a Jesuit, persuaded Husket to raise a rebellion, and hired Cullen, York, and Williams to assassinate the Queen—that Watson a Jesuit, persuaded Squire to poison her. Insomuch, as they aver, that the Queen, whose judgement was, that conscience ought never to be forced, was under the necessity of using severity, or of betraying the safety of her Country." These and other reproaches, the English Romish Priests cast upon the Jesuits, and which are extant in their own writings.

Banished from the King dom. Nor were the Jesuits behind in their recriminations. But the Queen and her Council would believe neither the pretensions of the one, nor the excuses of the other. In spite of their animosities, they believed, they were both ready to pervert the minds of the Queen's subjects; and both were SECTION banished by Proclamation.-Which under Providence, was a most seasonable decree; for at that, very moment, a powerful effort was making, and Winter and Tesmond. Jesuits, were sent over into Spain, where they were forming a dangerous conspiracy to cut off Queen Elizabeth, and to exclude James the King of Scotland from the succession.

III. Снар. V.

The work of this illustrious Queen had now been accomplished. Her latest effort was to treat character and with the French King, for the life of a Protestant Queen. nobleman the Duke of Bouillon: and her last succours were sent to assist the Protestants of Geneva against the designs of the Duke of Savoy. Whilst she was thus acting for the lasting benefit of mankind, her sun, which had shone so long and so brightly, rapidly declined. The infirmities of age hastened by the consuming anxieties of a long and arduous reign, suddenly undermined her con-She retired to the palace of Richmond, stitution. which she called her "warm box," and which, she said, had now become necessary for her distempered body; and in the retirement of which, she could better attend to the duties of Religion, and the salvation of her soul. It was at this time, that she permitted her coronation ring, which had grown into the flesh and become painful, to be filed from her finger; a circumstance which did not fail to be considered as an inauspicious omen,

A. D. 1603.

SECTION signifying the dissolution of her marriage with her people. She was afflicted with a swelling in the throat, which induced a loss of appetite and extreme weakness. In this state, she was troubled with anxieties respecting those transactions which had lately taken place.—She feared lest her severity, had urged the Earl of Essex into treasonable courses, and thought she had been too hasty in his execution. On the other hand, she thought she had been too lenient in the pardon of the Earl of Tyrone, as if she had encouraged rebellion by her clemency. But she soon rallied from these desponding thoughts, and bore her exhausting sickness with great patience and resignation; offering to those around her, the lessons of wisdom which she had gleaned from a long and painful experience. "She was filled," she said, "with this life, and desired to be translated to a state of immortality." She observed, "Death, which was abhorred of so many, was but a just debt, which all must pay to nature: and "that our spirits, of right, must be restored to God, from whom they came."

> Her strength gradually wasting, she was waited upon by the Lord Keeper and the Secretary of State, to enquire into her mind with respect to her successor. Her answer was—"I have said, my throne is the throne of Kings; and that no mean person shall succeed me."—and when they pressed her for a further declaration, she answered,

"I have said that a King is to succeed me; and SECTION who should that be, but my nearest kinsman, the King of Scotland."

CHAP. V.

She had now done with the world, and all its busy and tumultuous affairs; and gave herself. entirely to the duties of religion, and to solemn reflections on the tribunal before which, she was about to appear. The Archbishop of Canterbury, was constantly at her side, and with him, she united in humble and fervent prayer.

On one occasion, when the excellent Bishop was exhorting her to put her trust solely, in the merits of Christ, and to stay herself upon him, she answered; "I do,"-and added "that she was weary of this miserable life, subject to so many calamities and dangers; that she earnestly desired to pass to that eternal light, which flowed with the most perfect felicity, and that she was hastening to her heavenly kingdom, to the presence and holy arms of her good Saviour."

Then, somewhat turning herself, with a serene countenance, and tranquil mind, she rested her head upon her right hand, and in this manner, composed herself for her dissolution. The moment was fast approaching, which the Archbishop perceiving, directed her to fix her thoughts on God. to which she replied; "I do; nor do they wander from him." These were her last words; but from the motion of her hands and eyes, it was evident that her whole mind was absorbed in

HI. Снар. V.

SECTION heavenly meditation and mental prayer. Thus gradually and silently she sunk to rest, and on the fourth of March, about midnight, expired in the seventieth year of her age, and the forty-fifth of her Reign.

The tidings of her death filled the whole country with inexpressible grief, which displayed itself in floods of tears. In reality, no Prince since the foundation of the World, engaged the hearts of her subjects, in a degree equal to Queen Elizabeth. The nation deplored her as a family would, which had lost its only parent. Her subjects admired her for her great qualifications: they loved her for her disinterested patriotism and princely virtues. Coxcombs in thinking, have attempted to sully the fairest reputation that was ever acquired, by dragging to the light, and enlarging upon, the frailties of the woman. Even Hume has not been ashamed to retail the idle impertinencies of Melvil the Scotch Ambassador. Frivolties utterly unworthy of the page of history; and by which it is impossible to believe she could have been actuated, in the discharge of her high and responsible duties.

The men of her own day were assuredly, the best judges of her personal worth and excellency. We, may be allowed, with justice, to pass an opinion on the result of her actions. The wisdom and greatness of her reign were celebrated by the ablest pens of that period; and all subsequent

writers have agreed that during her administration, SECTION she conferred the most inestimable benefits upon her Country. She was not perfection. Her management of the Puritan divines was not judicious. They were undoubtedly the ablest preachers and the most exemplary men in the church, and their services ought to have been secured by concession. But they were repelled by an unconciliating and arbitrary policy. Had she conceded to the demands of the more violent, who doggedly adhered to the platform of discipline adopted by the foreign reformed churches, she would have fallen into a still greater error, and swept away all the landmarks of the Catholic and Apostolic Church. These were preserved, unfortunately with many of those secular incumbrances which the more reasonable Puritans would have abolished, whilst the spirit of religion, without which, the sacred edifice, in all its proportions is reared in vain, was in a great measure extinguished. But these things are yet to appear. We are never safe when we depart from well established principles; we are never secure when we listen not to the voice of moderation and reason.

CHAP. V.

SECTION THIS mighty Princess was an eminent instrument in the hand of God, for the furtherance of his benevolent purposes towards England; and in Judgement, Justice, Courage, Clemency, and Patriotism, must remain, to the latest posterity, the admiration of mankind. She succeeded her father in the high office of Arbitress of Europe; and held the dignity with as firm a hand, founded on more just and sacred principles. Spain in its arbitrary and intolerant course was checked and driven back. In France, the Protestant House of Valois was supported by her counsels, and that of Bourbon, by her aids. Scotland was secured by her policy -The Netherlands, by her armies-Ireland by The King of Portugal was relieved her power. by her bounty, and the King of Poland with her Germany, Denmark, and Sweden, sympathy. took up, and laid down their arms at her pleasure. The fame of England extended beyond the limits of Europe, and penetrated the remote parts of Asia, Africa, and America; and the name of ELIZABETH, was honoured amongst the Turks, the Persians; Barbarians and Indians.

> In almost all the kingdoms of the world, she enlarged the boundaries of commerce, and procured extensive privileges for the encouragement of her merchants. Her Navy; enlarged beyond former example, rode triumphantly over her seas, the dread of her enemies and the safeguard of her Islc. And to crown all, in the midst of the most un

heard of difficulties, she established the rational SECTION and eternal Principles of POLITICAL AND RE-LIGIOUS PROTESTANTISM! and bequeathed them in all their excellency to future generations, to be upheld by them, with the same firm and unyielding magnanimity; and to be considered as unchangeable, as they are unimpeachable!

